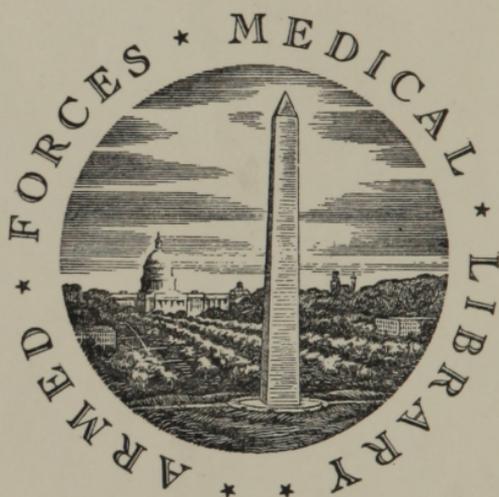


UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.



FOUNDED 1836

WASHINGTON, D.C.

Original

SUMMARY,

~~of the first Planting, progressive Improvements, and present State of the British Settlements in NORTH-AMERICA.~~
HISTORICAL and POLITICAL,

Of the first Planting, progressive Improve-
ments, and present State of the *British*
Settlements in NORTH-AMERICA.

By WILLIAM DOUGLASS, M. D.



V O L. II. P A R T I.

HISTORIANS, like sworn Evidences in Courts of Law, ought to declare
the WHOLE TRUTH (so far as comes to their Knowledge) and nothing
but the TRUTH.

B O S T O N

Printed and Sold by DANIEL FOWLE in Queen-Street ; where may
be had the first VOLUME bound or Stitch'd. Also some odd Num-
bers to compleat imperfect Setts. 1751.

U M A R Y

THE HISTORY OF THE

REIGN OF

CHARLES THE SECOND

BY

J. H. BURTON

ESQ.

IN TWO VOLUMES

THE SECOND

VOLUME

LONDON

Printed by R. DODD, in Pall-mall

1704

Printed by R. DODD, in Pall-mall

1704



CONTENTS

Of Vol. II. PART I.

I Introduction	1	Courts of Judicature	94
Treaty with <i>Abnauque</i> Indians	3	Produce, Trade, & Navigation	98
<i>Nova-Scotia</i> Affairs continued	7	Pretensions to a further extent of Jurisdiction	102
<i>Cape-Breton</i> Affairs continued	9	A Case of Ministerial Lands	104
Paper Currencies, continued	13	Valuations, continued	107
<i>Massachusetts-Bay</i> hurt by } <i>Sh</i> — Administration }	17	Paper Currencies, continued	107
A Plan of this Summary	19	Metallick Ores	108
Province of NEW-HAMPSHIRE	22	Digression concerning Religious Sectaries	112
Claims in Property and Jurisdiction	22	Societies for propagating Religion	119
A Digression concerning Colony Legislatures	33	Miscellanies	157
A Dispute between the Govern ^{or} and Representatives	35	Colony of CONNECTICUT.	158
<i>British</i> and <i>French</i> Claims in <i>America</i>	43	The original voluntary Affociations	158
Legislature & Courts of Judicature	48	Boundaries	160
Produce, Trade, and Navigation	50	Trade and Navigation	162
Miscellanies	51	The Charter	164
A Digression of <i>America</i> Timber and NavalStores	52	Legislature and Courts of Judicature	166
Colony of RHODE-ISLAND.	76	Rates and Taxes	177
The sundry original Settlements	77	Militia & Number of People	178
Government or Jurisdiction	85	Produce, Manufactures and Trade	180
Paper Currencies, continued	87	<i>Connecticut</i> College	183
The Numbers of People and Valuations	89	Mountains and Rivers	190
Boundaries of the Colony	90	Paper Currencies, continued	192
		Abstract of some of their Laws	193
		A Digression of Grain, Grazing, &c.	203
		Concerning the natural History of <i>N. England</i>	209
		Miscellanies	219
		Province	

C O N T E N T S

<p>Province of <i>NEW-YORK</i>. 220</p> <p>The English Conquest of <i>New-Netherlands</i> and confirmed by the <i>Dutch</i> to <i>England</i> } 221</p> <p>Boundaries } 224</p> <p><i>British</i> and <i>French</i> Claims in <i>North-America</i> con- tinued } 226</p> <p>The five great inland Lakes, the <i>New-York</i> six Nations of <i>Indians</i> } 235</p> <p>Its Islands, and Corpora- tion Towns } 236</p> <p>Their <i>French</i> and <i>Indian</i> Wars } 240</p> <p>Succeſſive Governors of the Province } 246</p> <p>Legiſlature and ſome pe- culiar Laws } 250</p> <p>Paper Currencies, continued } 254</p> <p>Courts of Judicature } 256</p> <p>Produce, Manufactures, Trade and Navigation } 257</p>	<p>Mountains and Rivers } 260</p> <p>Miſcellanies } 262</p> <p>Province of <i>NEW-JERSEY</i>. 267</p> <p>Several Transfers of Pro- perty and of Jurisdiction } 267</p> <p>A Digreſſion concerning Indian Grants, and Pro- prietor Quit-Rents in the Colonies } 275</p> <p>Diſputes in this Province concerning Property which have occaſioned much Confuſion } 277</p> <p>Mountains and Rivers } 282</p> <p>Inhabitants and Valuations } 286</p> <p>Succeſſive Governors } 286</p> <p>Legiſlature and ſome } 290</p> <p>Municipal Laws } 290</p> <p>Courts of Judicature } 293</p> <p>Produce, Manufactures, Trade and Navigation } 293</p> <p>Miſcellanies } 294</p>
--	---





A Summary, Historical and Political, of
the first Planting, progressive Improve-
ments, and present State of the *British*
Settlements in NORTH-AMERICA.

VOL. II.

PART I.

A Supplement to the first Volume ;
And Introduction to the second Volume.

THE Writer of this *Historical Summary*, does not affect a studied Elegancy. This is a plain Narrative of incontestible Facts delivered with Freedom, a Collection or Common-Place of many Years Observations, designed at first only for the Writer's private Amusement or Remembrancer ; but at the Desire of some Friends it is published for the Benefit of the Publick, and for the Use of future Historians, *Deus Nobis hæc otia fecit*. As the Writer is *independent*, being in no publick Office, no Ringleader of any Party or Faction ; what he writes, may be deemed impartial : If Facts related in Truth offend any Governor, Commodore, or other great Officer, he will not renounce Impartiality and become Sycophant.

As this Summary has been discontinued many Months, from an * Incident which may in Course be mentioned by Way of a Digressional Amusement ; I find myself inclined to continue the History of sundry Affairs down to this Time *April 1750.*

I. *The Naval Affairs upon the Continent Coast of British North-America.* Here † ends (a Peace being concluded at *Aix la Chapelle*) our Naval Wars with *France* and *Spain* upon the Coast of *North-America* ; the Peace of *Aix la Chapelle* was signed *October 7th. 1748*, and proclaimed in *Boston, May 10. 1749.*

In Autumn 1747. Commodore *Kn—les* arrived in the Harbour of *Boston* with a Squadron of Men of War from *Louisbourg* of *Cape-Breton*, ordered all our † Men of War Stationed for the Protection of the *North-American* Trade, to join him at *Boston* to prosecute some secret Expedition against the *French* and *Spaniards* in the Gulph of *Mexico* ; the Reduction of *St. Jago de Cuba* was the principal Design, and was not effectuated ; but *en passant*, he happened to surprize the *French* Fort of *Port Louis* of the Island of *Hispaniola*, and had the better in a Sea Engagement with a *Spanish* Squadron off the *Havannah* of the Island of *Cuba* ; these Occurrences are not within the Limits of our History, which is confined to the British Continent Settlements in *North-America* ; and the Admiral *Kn—*'s Conduct in these Expeditions, as it is said, is now upon the Carpet at Home. Our Coast being thus left naked in *May 1748*, about fourteen *French* and *Spa—*

* The great Man of the Province for the Time being, finding that the Writer, though of his personal Acquaintance, was not a Syco-phant, but wrote Transactions with a true and impartial Freedom, endeavoured that his own Management might remain obscure, and not stare himself and the Publick in the Face ; this he attempted in many Forms, in diverting, impeding or rather defeating this publick-spirited laborious Undertaking.

† The Sea Bickerings of *Georgia* and *St. Augustine* are left to the Section of *Georgia*.

‡ They were only Frigates, not fit for Line of Battle, or for Battering of Land Forts.

nish Privateers were roaving from *South-Carolina* to *New-York*: They sailed up *Delaware Bay* and River so high as *New-Castle*, and with their armed Boats to within five Miles of *Philadelphia*: *Philadelphia News-Papers* says “ Foreign Trade is now at a Stand, and the Port as much shut up as if the River was frozen.” In *Che-sapeake Bay* of *Virginia* they went so high as *Repabanock River* and carried off several Ships. In *September 1748* two *Spanish* Privateers sailed up *Cape-Fear River* of *North-Carolina*, landed Men, plundered *Brunswick*, took Possession of Six Vessels, but from some casual Disasters, they soon returned down the River. Here was a fine Opportunity given to the *French* and *Spaniards* to plunder our Continent Ports, or put them to high Contributions; but the *French* and *Spanish* Puslanimity favoured us.

II. *A Treaty of Peace with the* || *Abnaquie or Eastern Indians*. Or, rather the formal Submission of these *Indians* by their Delegates to the Governments of *New-England*. Vol. I. P. 564. ended our Account of the late *French* and *Indian* Incurfions in *New-England*; since that Account, there have been only some small Damages done by a few scattered *Indian* Banditti.

As this *Indian* Treaty or Submission to King *GEORGE II.* is very plain, easy and voided of some antiquited wild Fooleries which usually accompany such Affairs, we shall insert it here by Way of a Specimen of *Indian* Treaties.

|| The *St. John's Indians* of *Nova Scotia*, are of the *Abnaquie* Nation, but were not in the Congress, because lately they seem chiefly to associate with the *Mikmake Indians* of *Nova-Scotia*.—The *Pigwaket* Tribe of *Abnaquie*, are almost extinct, they did not engage in this War, but retired and lived amongst the *English*, during the War, in the County of *Plymouth*; Fourteen of them Men, Women and Children, were present at this Congress.—The *Masiffassuck Indians* on the East Side or *Dutch Side* of *Lake Champlain* or *Corlaer*, are in the *Abnaquie* Division, but never do associate with the *Abnaquies*. The small Tribe of *Scatacocks*, on *Houffuck River*, East Side of *Hudson's* great River, and the scatter'd *Mobegins* on *Hudson's* River, though *Abnaquies*, are under the Protection of the *Mohawks* or *Iroquies* great Nations.

There

4 A SUMMARY, HISTORICAL and POLITICAL, &c.

There was first a previous general Meeting of the *Indian* Delegates from all the Tribes in a general Council, to pray the Government of *New-England* for a Treaty of Peace.

Some Time in *June* 1749, nine Delegates from the several Tribes of *Indians* came to *Boston* to make Proposals for a Peace; they proposed the Sage Governor *Dummer's* Treaty to act upon, and that the Congress should be at *Falmouth* in *Casco-Bay*, about 100 Miles Eastward from *Boston*.

The Congress began at *Falmouth*, *September* 27. 1749. between the Commissioners of *Massachusetts-Bay*, viz.

<i>Thomas Hutchinson</i>	<i>Israel Williams</i>
<i>John Choate</i>	<i>John Otis Esqrs.</i>

And of *New-Hampshire*, *Theodore Atkinson*, *John Downing*, Esqrs. on the one Part; and the Delegates of the *Eastern Indians* on the other Part, viz.

Eight from the Tribe of *Norridgewocks*;

<i>Tomus</i>	<i>Soosephnia</i>
<i>Eneas</i>	<i>Naktoonos</i>
<i>Magawombee</i>	<i>Nesaqumbuit</i>
<i>Harrey</i>	<i>Pereez</i>

Five from the Tribe of * *Penobscot*.

<i>Eger Emmet</i>	<i>Esparagoosaret</i>
<i>Maganumba</i>	<i>Neemoon</i>
<i>Nitumbouit</i>	

Six from the Tribes of † *Arresuguntoocooks*, and *Weweenocks*;

<i>Sawwaramet</i>	<i>Sauquish</i>
<i>Aussaado</i>	<i>Wareedeon</i>
<i>Waaununga</i>	<i>Wawawnunka,</i>

* The *Penobscots* jocosely said, That they could answer for their young Men if they were not drunk.

† These by the *French*, are called the Mission of *St. Francois* and of *Besancourt*; both lie upon the South Side of *St. Laurence*, or *Canada* River, one 40 the other 30 Leagues above *Quebec*; their joining with the other Tribes of the *New-England Indians* in this Submission to King *GEORGE II.* of *Great-Britain*, may well be used as an Argument for *New-England's* reaching naturally and in the Opinion of these *Indians*, to the South Side of *Canada* River.

All the *Indian* Delegates were not arrived until *October* 15. The *New-Hampshire* Commissioners returned home before the Treaty was finished, and left a Power with *Roland Cotton*, Esq; to sign in their Name—The Colony of *Connecticut*, tho' desired by the Government of *Massachusetts-Bay*, did not send any Commissioners; perhaps they reckoned themselves out of the Question, being covered by the whole Breadth of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*; *Nova-Scotia* was also invited.

Roland Cotton Esq; was Clerk.

Capt. *Joseph Bean* was Interpreter, both under Oath.

Toxus of *Norridgewocks* was reckoned the chief of these *Indian* Tribes, and their Speaker; he said "ever since Governor *Dummer* † treated with us, all the *Indians* lik'd it well, and have reckoned it well ever since." Mr. *Hutchinson* Chairman of the Commissioners from *Massachusetts-Bay*, in his Speech to the *Indians*, "You have always spoke well of Governor *Dummer's* Treaty, and the *English* have lik'd it well, and it lasted long, this we propose to be a plan for a Treaty.

The Treaty is as follows,

"We the *Indians* inhabiting within his Majesty's Territories of *New-England*, make Submission to King *GEORGE* II. in as full and ample a Manner as any of our Predecessors have heretofore done.

1. We *Indians* in all Times coming, will maintain a firm and constant Amity with all the *English*, and will never confederate or combine with any other Nation to their Prejudice.

2. That the *English* Subjects may peaceably and quietly enjoy their Rights and Settlements; reserving to the *Indians* all Lands not formerly conveyed to the *English*, as also the Privilege of Fishing, Hunting and Fowling as formerly.

† That Treaty was Anno 1725.

‡ The Designation *English* is used, as more familiar to the *Indians* than that of *British*.

3. The Trade to be under the Direction of the *Massachusetts* Government.

4. All Controversies shall be issued in the due Course of Justice of *Massachusetts* Government Courts.

5. If any of our *Indians* commit Hostilities against the *English*, we shall join the *English* to bring them to Reason.

6. If any Tribe of *Indians*, make War upon any of the now contracting Tribes, the *English* shall assist and bring them to Reason.

Moreover, it is agreed that there shall be Truck-houses at *Georges* and at *Richmond*. The *Indians* desire a Truck-house also on *Saco River*."

III. *A short and general Continuation of the * Nova-Scotia Affairs, particularly as to the Chebueta Settlement.*

* See P. 305. 317, 566. Vol. I. There was a Government Scheme of this Nature set on Foot, 1732, it was too much *Utopian*, and therefore impracticable : I mean the Settlement of the Province of *Georgia* in the Southern Parts of *South-Carolina*, a Frontier against the *Spaniards* of *Florida*, in a dry Sandy parched Soil : the Scheme was pompous, viz. to raise great Quantities of *Rice, Wine, Cotton-Wool, Indigo, Cochineal, Silk, Hemp, Flax*. Hitherto they have done nothing, though a great Charge to the Crown, in Civil and Military Establishment ; from 1733, (1733, the Parliament granted £. 10,000 Sterl. 1735, £. 26,000 Sterl. &c.) to 1743 inclusive, the Parliament Grants for the Civil Establishment amounted to £. 120,000 Sterl. from 1743, to 1749. their Civil and Military Grants were blended together. 1749, the Parliament granted for their Civil Establishment, £. 5,304 Sterl. their Military Establishment has been very chargeable, the Pay and Victualling of one Regiment and several Independent Companies of regular Troops, armed Schooners and Rangers.

The Patent for erecting *Georgia* into a Province or Corporation, passed the Seals 1732. In Feb. 1733, 4. the whole Number of Persons that had been shipped to *Georgia* were 320 Men, 113 Women, 102 Boys, 83 Girls, in all 618 Persons, whereof one Quarter were Foreigners ; since that Time many People have been imported, but not long since in that Province were to be found only 602 Persons. July 1748, in Mr. *Whitefield's Bethesda*, (12 Miles from *Savannah*) were only 1 Master, 2 Women, 4 Men-Servants Labourers, and 18 Children, whereof two paid for their Board ; in his Vagrancies this was his great Cant-fund to beg Money and other Effects from weak Christians. Here I inadvertently anticipate what properly belongs to the Section of *Georgia*.

The General of *Canada* since the Conclusion of the late Peace, by Letters to the President of *Nova-Scotia* and to the Governor of *New-England*, claims the greatest Part of *Nova-Scotia* or *L'Accadie*: the *French Coureurs des Bois* and their *Indians*, 1749, have made some small Appearances to intimidate our new Settlers. 1. A Number of *French* and *Indians*, came before our Block-House at *Minas* without effect, they surprize and carry off about 18 Stragglers as Captives. 2. In *September*, Eight *Indians* as Traders came aboard *Donnel* a Trading Sloop in *Chebueta* Bay, by Surprize with their long Knives they kill three of his Men, while several *Indians* on Shore waited the Event; in this Scuffle, the *Indians* lost seven of their Men. 3. Beginning of *October*, a Company of about 40 *Indians*, as was supposed, surprized eight of *Gilman's* Timber-Men near the Saw-Mills, East Side of *Chebueta* Bay; they killed four of *Gilman's* Men, three escaped to the Flanker of the Block-House, one Man is missing, supposed to be captivated to make Discoveries; the *Indians* did not attempt the Block-House:—Afterwards there was a more general Rendezvous of *Indians*, but having no Prospect of any Advantage, and the *St. John's Indians*, differing with the *Mikmaks*, they broke up and went Home.

The chief Settlement will be the Town of || *Hallifax* or *Chebueta*, laid out and settled in a few Months; * for Defence round it at proper Distances are five picquetted Block-Houses containing Barracks for *Warbutton's* Regiment.

In our first Vol. P. 566, we just entred upon the late projected, but now vigorously prosecuted † Re-Settle-

|| So called from Earl of *Hallifax*, the Principal Encourager of this Settlement.

* Idleness and Intemperance, the Bane of all our Plantations, especially considering the Nature of the First Settlers of this Place, are more dangerous than any Parcels of despicable straggling *Indians*.

† I am sorry to write, that from 1710, to 1749, being near the Space of Forty Years, the *French* have been silently allowed to keep Possession in all Respects of the Province of *Nova Scotia*, the Fort of *Annapolis* and its *Banlierw* excepted.

ment of *Nova-Scotia*, by the indefatigable Gov. *Cornwallis*: the first parliamentary Allowance or Encouragement was £. 40,000 Sterl. towards transporting to *Nova Scotia*, and maintaining there, for a certain time after their arrival, such reduced Officers and private Men, lately dismissed from his Majesty's Land and Sea-Service, and † others as shall be willing to settle said Colony. Col. *Cornwallis* with his Fleet of one Frigate of 20 Guns, 1 Man of War Sloop—Transports—with Settlers, Provisions and Stores, arrived in *Chebuëta* Bay end of *June*; soon after arrived the *French* Transports (who had brought from *France* the Troops that took Possession of *Louisbourg*) from *Louisbourg* with the *British* Troops who had evacuated *Louisbourg*, consisting of the two Regiments of *Fuller* and *Warburton*, and a Detachment of the Train; the Regiment of late *Fuller's*, to recruit *Warburton's*, and to leave some Settlers, was reduced to 35 private Men per Company, half their former Compliment, and sent home.

In this Bay of *Chebuëta*, is built a uniform elegant Town called *Hallifax*, after the Earl of *Hallifax*, a great Promoter of this Settlement. This Harbour of *Chebuëta* is a most convenient Place of Arms for our *American* Men of War, and a certain Check upon the *French* of *Louisbourg*: it is well situated for making of dry Cod-Fish, being about the middle of a long Range of *Cape-Sable* Coast Fishing Banks, and may prove the best Cod-Fishery hitherto known. I heartily wish Success to the Settlement, but we cannot expect that it should answer so well for Husbandry, that is for Tillage and Pasture, as our

† A riff raff of dismissed Soldiers and Sailors habituated to Idleness and Vice, by their Labour can never settle a new Country; but two or three young vigorous Regiments (such as *Warburton's*) canton'd all over the Country, paid and victualled from Home for two or three Years (from *New-England* we can supply them with Wives, good Breeders) and when thus habituated to the Country, and to Husbandry, with proper Encouragement of Land, they may be dismissed from their Military Service; and make lasting good Settlements.—No old Men past their Labour, no Women but such as are of the Ages of Breeders, that is, none exceeding 35 Æt. be admitted excepting Parents of numerous Children, to serve as their Guardians.

Colonies further South : I conclude with the Words of Bacon Lord *Verulam*, *Settling Plantations is like planting of Timber, we must wait patiently some Years, before we reap any Benefit.* †

IV. *A short Recapitulation and Conclusion of the Louisbourg Affair; the Cape-Breton Islands, for Reasons of State, are now restored to the French Dominions; and after some political Remarks, we shall take our final Leave of them.* See Vol. I. p. 335, &c. and p. 347, &c. The French of Canada and Cape-Breton had more early Intelligence of the French War than we of New-England, it was proclaimed in Boston June 2, 1744. Louisbourg of Cape-Breton surrendered to us, June 17, 1745. Autumn following to garrison Louisbourg, were ship'd off from Gibraltar, Fuller's and Warburton's Regiments of Foot, and three Companies of Frampton's Regiment, with a large Detachment from the Train; it was too late in the Year before they arrived upon our Winter Coast, and were obliged to winter in Virginia, a few of them put into New-York, they arrived at Louisbourg May 24, 1746, and relieved the New-England Militia consisting of about 1500

† In the late Treaty of *Aix la Chapelle*, October 7, 1748, there were many Things in Relation to Trade, and to the Claims and Bounderies in the respective Plantations to be settled with France and Spain, which required a considerable Time to be adjusted, and therefore could not be inserted in the Body of the Treaty, but referred to a Convention of Commissioners: As the French Court in their various Negotiations are noted for appointing Men of Merit and real Knowledge in the various Affairs with which they are intrusted, doubtless our Ministry, will use Gentlemen of practical Knowledge in Trade, and habituated to Plantation Affairs, Men of a quick clear Thought, and of a distinct clear Elocution.

In the present State of Things the Well-being of the European Mother-Countries, depends much upon their Plantations; Plantations make a Country rich; Holland is rich, not from its Produce or Manufactures, but from its East and West-India Plantations, its Trade and Navigation. France never flourished so much as in the Administration of Cardinal *Fluery*, his principal Attention was to their Plantations and Trade; the Empire of Germany, Sweden, &c. though they abound in labouring Men, for want of Plantations and Trade, are very poor.

Men, who had kept Garrison from the Surrender of the Place ; Commodore *Warren* was at that Time Governor ; after him Commodore *Knowles* was *pro-tempore* Governor ; Admiral *Townshend* from the *West-India* Islands with a small Squadron is ordered for the Protection of *Louisbourg*, and sails for *England* in *November* 1746. Mr. *Knowles* in his Time at a very great Charge, repaired the Town and Fort, as if they were to remain to *Great-Britain* for ever. Commodore *Knowles* in the *Autumn* 1747, with a small Squadron came to *Boston*, and proceeded upon a secret Expedition to the Sugar Islands, and Mr. *Hobson* Lieut. Col. of *Fuller's* Regiment is appointed Governor of *Louisbourg*. Peace drawing near, *Shirley's* and *Pepperell's* Regiments from a Compliment of 100 private Men per Company were reduced to 70 Men ; the private Men of the three Companies of *Frampton's* Regiment, were incorporated by way of Recruits with *Fuller's* and *Frampton's* Regiment, and their Commission Officers, Sergeants, Corporals, and Drums sent home ; *Pepperell's* and *Shirley's* Regiments in *Louisbourg* were entirely || dismissed *June* 24, 1749, their Arms and other Accoutrements were detain'd by the Government. The *British* Troops evacuated *Louisbourg*, *July* 12, 1749, and were carried by the *French* Transports to *Chebuëta*, and the *French* Troops being about 600 Men took Possession of the Place.

It is a spreading pusilanimous Opinion amongst the less thinking People, that the great Advantage of *Louisbourg's* falling into our Hands was its serving as a propitiatory free Offering to *France*, and without restoring it we should have had no Peace : but we ought to observe, 1. That both Parties in the War were low in Cash and Credit. 2. The *French* Navy Trade and Navigation were so reduced, that they could not avoid desiring a Peace ; we had taken as many of their Men of War as might have been sufficient to reduce the remainder ; we had taken great Numbers of their *South-Sea*, *East* and *West-India*,

|| They were put in Pay *Sept.* 1, 1745.

Turkey, and other Ships, and what remain'd were obliged to continue in Port, (in fear of our numerous Privateers) having no Convoys or Men of War to protect them. 3. The Corruption which prevailed in *Holland* was like to be extirpated, and the *Dutch* became active. 4. The Army of our Auxiliary *Russians* were upon the march to join us, for some Reasons of State they seem to have been retarded in their March. If *Louisbourg* had not fallen into our Hands, the reduced Towns and Forts in *Flanders*, must have been returned, that is, evacuated; it seems that in all modern Negotiations for a Peace the Basis is Restitution of all Land Conquests on both Sides, excepting where Equivalents or antiquated Claims fall in the Way.

The Court of *Great-Britain* cannot cordially approve of this infinitely rash *New-England* Corporation Adventure, though beyond all Military or Human Probability successful; it involved the Nation, already deeply in Debt, in an additional Sum of about £. 800,000 Sterl. in the several Articles of Reimbursement-Money, extraordinary, superfluous Repairs, Transport Service, Stores, Garrison Officers, a large Detachment from the Train, and a numerous Garrison of regular Troops; this Place was unavoidably to be evacuated and restored to the *French* upon a Peace, and as it happened, in a better Condition, and without any Reimbursement or Equivalent, *cui bono!* I cannot perceive any real Advantage acquired by the Reduction of *Louisbourg*. The small *British* Squadron stationed at *Boston*, without any additional national Charge, would have been an effectual Check upon the *Louisbourg* Privateers; Commodore *Warren* from the *West India* Islands was sent for the Protection of the Coast of *New-England* and *Nova Scotia* in the Spring 1745, and our Trade in the Northern Parts of *America*, could not have suffer'd above 2 or 3 per Ct difference of Insurance, which is as nothing compared with the great Charge of £. 800,000

Sterl. before the Charge was fully known, I estimated it at £. 500,000 Sterl. or less. *

I sum up the *Louisbourg* Affair. 1. It was infinitely rash, a private Corporation-Adventure, without any Orders or assured Assistance of Men of War from Home; thirty six hundred raw Militia (some without proper Arms) without any Discipline, but at Random, as if in a Frolick, met together, no Provision of Cloathing or Ships: by this and small Care of the Sick, and want of Discipline, we lost about one half of our Men by Scurveys and putried slow Fevers; in a Military Way we lost only about 60 Men killed and drowned, and about 116 Prisoners to the *French* in the rash foolish Attempt upon the Island-Battery: During the Siege, by good Fortune,

* If the *Canada* Expedition which was recommended Home by Governor ——— had proceeded and succeeded, after another great Addition to the National Debt; for Reasons of State, without any Equivalent or Reimbursement, it must have been evacuated and restored to the *French*; *New England* was at considerable Charge towards this intended Expedition in Levey-Money, Victualling, Transport Service, Bedding, &c. for want of proper Application, *Massachusetts* have received no Reimbursement of this: *Rhode-Island*, by Application have received their Reimbursement.

Another extra-provincial Perquisite Expedition was the sending off 1500 Men towards the Reduction of *Crown-Point*, a *French* Fort, near *Lake Champlain* in the Province of *New-York*, this involved our Province in some Charge (never to be recovered) by sending Provisions, Amunition and other Stores by Water to *Albany*; an Epidemical Distemper in the County of *Albany*, luckily prevented us; if it had been reduced, it must either have been kept by us at a very great Charge equal to the Opposition of all the Force of *Canada*; or we must have demolished it, to be re-built by the *French* at one Tenth of our Charge in reducing of it.

Another Projection towards ruining our Province was the Charge of building a Fort at the Carrying-Place in the Government of *New-York*, between the Falls of *Hudson's River* and *Wood-Creek*: this was attended with the same Inconveniencies as the former.

Sending off Troops to assist the *Six Indian Nations* of *New-York* — all these idle Proposals, were not resented by the Government of *New-York*, as, if that rich Government had been incapable or neglectful of Self-protection, but silently admitted of *Sh* — Quixotisms; our House of Representatives in their Journal say, the People of *New-York* were much abler to protect themselves.

We had constant dry favourable Weather : but *June 18*, next Day after we had Possession of the Town, the Rains set in, which certainly from our Men being ill cloathed and ill lodged, must infallibly have broken up the Siege. We had a wretched Train of Artillery, or rather no Artillery (they were voted by the Assembly not worth the Charge of bringing back to *Boston*) in a *Quixote* Manner to demolish a *French American Dunkirk*, in which were 1900 armed Men, whereof 600 were regular Troops, 125 good large Cannon, 19 Mortars, with Stores and Provisions sufficient for six Months. 2. The Military Success was *miraculous*, but the cunning Part of the Project was natural, and could not miss of Success. 1. A necessary enormous multiplied Emission of a depreciating Paper Currency, enabled the fraudulent Debtors to pay their Debts at about 10*s* in the Pound Discount. 2. Vast Perquisites to the Manager. †

CURRENCIES. || The Parliament of *Great-Britain*, before the Commencement of the late *French* War, had under

† As *Writers* and *Preachers* forbear publishing ***** which are singular, rare or new, lest they should prove of bad Example ; I shall only sum up these Perquisites in this Manner ; In the Space of four Years, *viz.* 1741 the introductory Gratuities from the Province, and from ***** of many *thousands of Pounds*, and the unprecedented Perquisites in the three Expedition Years of 1745, 1746 and 1747, from a *negative* Fortune, was amassed a large *positive* Estate, and the loose Corns built a Country-House at the Charge of about *six thousand Pound Sterling*. The Predecessor, an honest Gentleman of a good paternal Estate, after eleven Years Administration, in a Message to the General Assembly, *July 21*, 1741, represents, that he had been obliged to break in upon his own Estate some *Thousands of Pounds*, to support the Character of a King's Governor ; in Faithfulness to his Trust he refused a certain retaining Fee.

|| This accursed Affair of Plantation Paper-Currencies, when in Course it falls in my Way, it proves a Stumbling-block, and occasions a sort of Deviation. In the Appendix, I shall give a short History of all the Plantation Paper-currencies ; it may be a Piece of Curiosity for Times to come. *Massachusetts-Bay* was the Leader, and exceeded all the Colonies in this Fraud ; from their first Emission 1702 (I take no Notice of Sir *William Phips's* Canada Bills, they were soon out of the

under their Consideration some Regulations concerning the Plantation Currencies; and now that War being ended, this third Sessions of the tenth Parliament of *Great-Britain* have resumed the Consideration thereof.

Massachusetts

the Question) to 1749, the last Year of Mr. *Sh*— Administration, our Bills of Publick Credit or State-Notes suffer'd a Discount of 88 per Cent; in *France* in the worst of Times when Mr. *Law* had the Direction of the Finances, the Discount upon their State-Notes was only 65 per Cent: *Massachusetts* publick Bills of Credit 1749, were peiorated to eleven for one Sterling.

In the few Years of Mr. *Sh*— Administration, this fraudulent Currency from £. 127,000 Old Tenor, was multiplied to about two and a half Millions, and by this depreciating Contrivance the fraudulent Debtors paid only 10s in the Pound, and every honest Man not in Debt lost about one half of his personal Estate. The Money making Assemblies could not keep Pace with him in his Paper Emissions; 1747, the Governor insisting upon further Emissions, the Assembly represents "if we emit more Bills, we apprehend it must be followed by a great Impair, if not utter loss of the publick Credit, which has already been greatly wounded;" and in their Journal 1746, P. 240 "we have been the Means of actually bringing Distress, if not utter Ruin upon ourselves—when any Complaints were offer'd to the Assembly concerning Depreciation, by—Contrivance, they were referred to Committees consisting of the most notorious Depreciators. See Journal August 17, 1744.

By Way of Amusement, I shall adduce some different Managements of Administrations with Respect to a fraudulent Paper-Medium—1703 by Contrivance of Mr. *W*— from *New-England, Barbadoes* emitted £. 80,000 at 4 per Cent (common Interest was 10 per Cent) upon Land Security, payable after some Years; those Land bank-bills immediately fell 40 per Cent below Silver; upon Complaint Home the Court of *England* sent an Instruction to Governor *Crow*, to remove from the Council and all Places of Trust, any who had been concerned in the late Paper Credit; this Currency was suppressed, and their Currency became and continues Silver as before.—Governor *Belcher* of *New-England*, 1741, from Integrity and Faithfulness to the Publick, when a wicked Combination called *LAND-BANK*, became Head-strong; he refused their Bribe or retaining Fee, negatived their *Speaker* and 13 of their Councillors, and superseded many of their Officers, Civil and Military.—Soon after this Scheme was dam'd by Act of Parliament, Governor *Sh*— I shall not say in Contempt, but perhaps in Neglect of this Act, promoted their Directors and other chief Managers to the highest Offices, of Councillors, Provincial Agents, Judges, Justices, Sheriffs, and Militia Officers preferable to others.

When

Massachusetts-Bay, as they have at present no Province Bills out upon Loan for Terms of Years, have previously settled their Currency by Act of Assembly, approved of by the KING in Council ; it is intituled, An Act for drawing in the Bills of Credit of the several Denominations, which have at any Time been issued by this Government, and are still outstanding ; and for ascertaining the Rate of coined Silver in this Province for the future. By this Act it is provided that the Treasurer shall be empowered to receive the * Reimbursement Money to be exchanged after the 31st of *March* 1750, at the Rate of 45^s Old Tenor for a Piece of Eight ; and one Year more is allowed for exchanging said Bills—After 31st of *March* 1750, all Debts and Contracts shall be payable in coined Silver only, a Piece of Eight at 6^s, one Ounce of Silver at 6^s 8, † as also all Executions with such Addition accord-

When there was an immediate publick Emergency for raising of Money, borrowing of publick Bills, already emitted, from the Possessors, would not have increased a Paper Currency, but prevented Depreciations ; some Merchants and others offer'd to lend these Bills at a small Interest, some Gentlemen said, that they had better let them without Interest than that their personal Estates from multiplied Emissions, should depreciate at a much greater Rate than after the Value of an accruing Interest : but this would have effectually defeated the Scheme of the Depreciators the fraudulent Debtors, therefore the Proposal or Expedient was rejected by the Advice of——

For Paper Currencies, see Vol. I. P. 310, 314, 308, 493.

* This Reimbursement Money arrived at Boston *Sept.* 18. 1749, in a Man of War Frigate, consisting of 215 Chests, (3000 Pieces of Eight at a Medium per Chest) of Milled Pieces of Eight, and 100 Cask of coined Copper. *Connecticut*, a Government of sagacious Husbandmen, seem to have acted more prudently than *Massachusetts Bay*, by their Assembly Act, *Oct.* 1749, they allow three Years (to prevent a sudden Confusion) to cancel their Bills gradually ; and in their Reimbursement Money to save the Charges of Commissions, Freight, Insurance, and other petty Charges, they are to draw upon their Receiving Agent, and these Bills will readily purchase Silver for a Currency.

† This is not in Proportion, a Mill'd Piece of Eight is 7 eights of an Ounce, and at 6^s per Piece is 6^s 10. one 3d of a Penny better per Ounce.

ing to the Time of contracting, as the Laws of the Province do or shall require ; the several Acts of Assembly whereby some Funds of Taxes, for cancelling Province Bills of Credit, have been postponed gradually to 1760 are repealed, and the Tax of 1749, toward cancelling these Bills shall be *Three Hundred Thousand Pound Old Tenor*. Penalty to those who receive or pay Silver at any higher Rate, *fifty Pound* for every Offence ; and after 31st of *March* 1750, the Penalty for passing any Bills of *Connecticut, New-Hampshire* or *Rhode-Island*, shall be *fifty Pound* for every Offence ; and from thence to *March* 31st 1754, all Persons entring into any Town Affairs, Constables, Representatives, Councillors, all Officers Civil and Military, † Plaintiffs in recovering of Executions, Tavern keepers, and Retailers of strong Drink, shall make Oath that they have not been concerned in relieving or paying away any such Bills.

As the Exportation of Sterling Coin from *Great-Britain* is prohibited by Act of Parliament, *Spanish* Pieces of Eight are reckoned the Plantation Currency, and are esteemed as such in the Proclamation Act so called, for Plantation Currencies ; but although the *British* or Sterling Species could not be a Plantation Currency, the *Spanish* Coin might have been reduced to their Denominations at 4s 6 Sterl. per Piece of Eight, and all the Colonies reduced to the same Sterling Denominations of *Great-Britain*, which would much facilitate the Trade and Business of the Plantations amongst themselves, and with their Mother-Country ; thus we see in *Portugal* a *Mill ree* though no Specie or Coin, but only a Denomination, is the *Basis* of their Currencies ; and in the same Manner with the Plantations a Pound or Crown Sterling, although no Specie or Coin in the Colonies, might have been the general *Basis* of our Denomination or Currencies.

† That is all Delinquents are out-law'd ; a very severe Penalty, this may introduce a Habit of forswearing or Perjury.

I may be allowed to drop a *Tear*, I mean some Expression of Grief, over the languishing State of my *Altera Patria*, the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, formerly the Glory of our Plantations ; but now reduced to extreme Misery and Distress, precipitately brought upon us by the Administration of ***** and a Party of fraudulent Debtors: at his Accession he was lucky to find a standing irresistible Party formed to his Mind, and not empty-handed ; they effectually *depopulated* the Province by the loss of many of our most vigorous labouring young Men, the only Dependance or Life of a young Plantation ; they *pecculated* the Country by ruinous unnecessary Expence of Money— Our present Commander in Chief in his first Speech to the Assembly, *Nov* 23. 1749, modestly expresses the late Pecculation and Depopulation of the Province ; “ deliver this Province from the Evils and Mischiefs (particularly the Injustice and Oppressions) arising from the uncertain and sinking Value of the Paper-Medium — the Cultivation of our Lands and Manufactures are greatly impeded by the Scarcity of Labourers.” Mr. *Sb*——’s own Assemblies sometimes complain. *June* 3. 1748. The Council and Representatives in a joint Message to the Governor, enumerate the “ great Loss of Inhabitants for Husbandry and other Labour, and for the Defence of our Inland Frontiers ; the vast Load of Debt already contracted, and the unparalelled growing Charges, insupportable Difficulties !” The House of Representatives upon a certain Occasion complain, “ with publick Taxes we are burthened almost to Ruin ;” in their Journals 1747, “ Should the whole Sum expended in the late Expedition be reimburs’d us, we have still a greater Debt remaining, than ever lay upon any of his Majesty’s Governments in the Plantations. Mr. —— had no Sympathy with the suffering Province, because * *Depreciations* of Currency, and our unsufferable *Taxes* did not affect him.

Vol. II.

D

By

* *Depreciations*, by his successive Assemblies were made more than good in advancing his Allowances and other Perquisites : he is exempted

By the Province being depopulated, Labour is dear, and all Countries can afford to undersell us in Produce and Manufactures, in consequence our Trade is lost: I shall adduce a few Instances: 1. When Mr. *Belcher* was superseded 1741, in *Boston* at one and the same Time were upon the Stocks 40 Top-sail Vessels of about 7,000 Tun, all upon Contract: at Mr. *Sb*— going Home 1749, only about 2,000 Tun on the Stocks, whereof only four or 5 Ships upon Contract, the others upon the Builders Account to wait for a Market, and to keep their Apprentices to work, and to work up their old Stores of Timber. 2. 1741. In *Marblehead*, our chief fishing Town, were about 160 Fishing Schooners of *circiter* 50 Tun each: 1749 there were only about 60 Fishing Schooners. 3. For many Months lately there were not to be found in *Boston* Goods (nay not the coarsest of Goods, Pitch, Tar, and Turpentine) sufficient to load a middling Ship to *Great-Britain*, but under the present Administration and Management of Affairs our Trade and Navigation seem to revive.

empted from Taxes by Act of Assembly. Whereas all Persons of the Province not in Debt, have lost about one half of their personal Estates by Depreciations in this short Administration; and the Provincial Poll Tax of 2/3d O. T; this Tax is equal to Rich and Poor, and besides Poll Tax, there are Provincial Rates upon Estates and Faculties, Excise, Impost, Tunnage; and besides Provincial Taxes, there are County, and Town Poll Rates, &c. Mr. *Belcher*, by his wife and honest Management, had brought all our publick Debts or Paper Credit and Currency to be cancelled in one Year 1741, being £. 127000 O. T. but Mr. — and his Party being afraid of losing hold of this accursed fraudulent Currency, they resolved (the Province was at that Time in its greatest Prosperity) that £. 127,000 O. T. was an inconvenient Sum to be cancelled in one Year, and therefore divided it among three subsequent Years; by this Nest Egg in a few Years they increased the Brood to two and a half Millions; and the G—— upon his Call home 1749, for certain Reasons which may be mentioned, (by the Advice of his trusty Friends) contrived two Years excessive Taxes of 360,000 and 300,000 O. T. to be collected in not much exceeding one Year, when the Country was depopulated, pecculated, and much reduced in Trade and Business: This sudden and quite reverse Change of Sentiment in this Party is unaccountable; but *quic quid id est timo*, perhaps they expect Confusion; they have practised fishing in troubled Water.

In the several SECTIONS or HISTORIES of the several Colonies, may generally be found, but not in the same strict Order, the following Particulars.

1. When the Colony was first discovered and traded to by any *European* Nation ; when first colonized by the *English* : and what Revolutions have happened there from Time to Time, in Property and Jurisdiction.
2. Its Boundaries, if well ascertained, or if controverted in Property or Jurisdiction.
3. Wars with the *French*, *Spaniards* and *Indians*.
4. The Numbers of *Whites* or *Freemen*, and *Slaves*.
5. The last *Valuation*, that is the Number of Polls and Value of Estates, taken to adjust the Quotas of Taxes for the several *Counties*, *Distriets*, *Towns* and *Parishes*.
6. The *Militia* upon the *Alarm-List*, and how incorporated or regulated.
7. House of *Representatives*, their Nature and Number : the *Qualifications* of the *Electors*, and of the *Elected*.
8. *Courts of Judicature*.
 1. The Nature of their *Juries*, and how returned.
 2. The Jurisdiction of a *Justice*, and of a *Bench of Justices*, and of their general *Quarter Sessions*.
 3. *Inferior* or *County Courts of Common Pleas*.
 4. *Superior*, *Supreme*, or *Provincial Courts for Appeals*.
 5. *Chancery* or *Courts of Equity*, if in Use.
 6. *Justiciary Courts of Oyer and Terminer*.
 7. *Ordinary for Probate of Wills* and granting *Administration*.
 8. *Court of Vice-Admiralty*.
 9. *Justiciary Court of Admiralty* for Crimes committed at Sea.
 9. The present *Taxes*, viz. *Polls*, *Rates*, *Impost*, and *Excise*.
 10. *Produce*, *Manufactures*, *Trade* and *Navigation*.
 11. The Number of *Entries* and *Clearances* of *Extra-Provincial Vessels*, distinguished into *Ships*, *Snows*, *Brigantines*, *Sloops*, and *Scooners*.
 12. The various *Sectaries* in *Religious Worship*.

In most of the Sections there is a Digressional Article, to prevent Repetitions, concerning some Things which are in common to several Colonies, but inserted in that *Section* or *Colony* the most noted for those Things; thus 1. in the *Section* for *Massachusetts* should have been inserted the Affair of *Paper Currencies*, as they did originate and were carried to the greatest Discount or Fraud there: but as by a late Act of Assembly confirmed by the King in Council, *Paper Currencies* are terminated in that Province, we drop it. 2. As *Piscataqua*, alias *New-Hampshire*, has for many Years been noted for *Royal masting* Contracts, we chose to insert in that SECTION, some Things concerning Masting, Lumber, and other Timber for Construction or Building, for Joiners and for Turners Work; and if that Article does not swell too much, we may insert some other Forrest Trees and flowering Shrubs fit for Bocages, Parks and Gardens. 3. As *Rhode-Island* has been noted for *Sectaries*, from *no Religion* to the most *Enthusiastick*, there is designed some account of our Plantations or Colony Sectaries; though at present *Pensylvania* exceed them in that Respect, where besides the *Rhode-Island* Sectaries, are to be found a Sect of *Free-thinkers* who attend no publick Worship, and are called *Keep at-home Protestants*; publick *Popish Mass-houses*; and some Sectaries imported lately from *Germany*, such as *Moravians* called *Unitas fratrum* or united Brethren, who have had some Indulgencies by Act of Parliament 1749. 4. *Connecticut*, a Colony of sagacious laborious Husbandmen, first in course naturally claims the Digression concerning Grain and Grazing; it is true *New-York*, *Jersies*, and *Pensylvania* at present much exceed them in Grain and Manufacturing their Wheat into Flower. 5. *Maryland* and *Virginia* for *Tobacco*, and *Mass* for raising Swine or Pork. 6. The *Carolinas* for *Rice*, *Skins*, and *Hides*. 7. *Georgia* as an Instance of an *Utopian* unprofitable Colony.

To render this History as compleat as may at present be expected, I have annexed some Maps of the several Colonies, not borrowed from borrowing erroneous hackney

Map Publishers, but Originals composed and lately printed in the several Countries : For instance, with the Section of the Colony of *Connecticut*, the last of the four *New-England* Colonies, I annex a * correct Map of the Dominions of *New-England*, extended from 40 d. 30 m. to 44 d. 30 m. N. Lat : and from 68 d. 50 m. to 74 d. 50 m. W. Longitude from *London*. To the Colony of *Pensylvania* is annexed a † Map of *New-York*, the *Ferries* and *Pensylvania*, published 1749, by Mr. *Evans* in *Pensylvania*, much more accurate than any hitherto published. To the Colony of *North Carolina*, is annexed a Map of *North-Carolina*. ‖ and some Part of *South Carolina* principally with regard to the Sea Coast and Lands adjoining; this large inland Country is waste or vacant, and consequently delineated at Random by Col. *Edward Moseley* of *North-Carolina*.

* This Map is founded upon a *chorographical* Plan, composed from actual Surveys of the Lines or Boundaries with the neighbouring Colonies, and from the Plans of the several Townships and Districts copied from the Records lodged in the Secretaries Office and Townships Records, with the Writers Perambulations : when this Plan is printed, the Author as a Benefaction gives gratis to every Township and District, a Copper Plate Copy ; as the Writer of the Summary had impartially narrated the Management of a late G—— which could not bear the Light ; to check the Credit of the Author, the G—— endeavoured (as shall be accounted for) to divert, impede, or defeat this publick generous spirited Amusement, but in vain. The Writer in his Journeys upon account of this Chorography and other Occasions (formerly used to such Amusements in the Gardens of *Paris* and *Leyden*) has *en passant*, but with some Fatigue, made a Collection of above eleven hundred indigenous Plants, classically described and refer'd to Icons in *Batanick* Writers which have the nearest Semblance, as the Specifick Icons could not conveniently be cut here ; this is an Amusement proper for Gentlemen of Estates and Leisure, it is not quite so ridiculous as our modern *Virtuoso* Amusements of Shells, Butterflies, &c. The *Medical* or *Medicinal* part of *Botany* is small and soon becomes familiar to People of the Profession ; the same may be said of the other Branches of the *Materia Medica* from Animals, Minerals, and chymical Preparations of those ; but to proceed further as a Naturalist, is only proper for Gentlemen of Fortune, Leisure, and *Leisbabbers* as the *Dutch* exprefs it ; or *Otiosorum Hominum negotia*.

† From 43 d. 30 m. to 38 d. 30 m. N. Lat. and from 73 d. 30 m. to 78 d. W. Long. from *London*.

‖ From 33 d. to 36 d. 30 m. N. Lat.

SECT.



SECTION IX.

Concerning the Province of
New-Hampshire.

AS the four Colonies of *New-England*, were originally settled by the same Sort of People called * *Puritans* ; their municipal Laws, Customs, and Economy are nearly the same, but more especially in *New-Hampshire*, which was under the assumed Jurisdiction of *Massachusetts-Bay* for many Years ; therefore to save Repetitions, we refer several Things to the Section of *Massachusetts Bay*.

The present Possessors have no other Claim to their Lands but Possession and some uncertain Indian Deeds ; upon Mr. *Allen*'s Petition to *Queen Anne*, desiring to be put in Possession of the waste Lands, the Assembly of *New-Hampshire* passed Acts for Confirmation of their Township Grants and of their Boundaries, without any Saving of the Right of the general Proprietor ; upon Mr. *Allen* the Proprietor's Application, the Queen in Council disallowed and repealed those Acts.

The Crown assuming the vacant Lands, until the Proprietor's claiming in Right of Mr. *Mason*, shall make formal Proof, that Mr. *Mason* ever was in Possession of these Lands ; this appears by an Action of Ejectment brought by the claiming Proprietor Mr. *Allen* against *Waldron* and *Vaughan* ; *Allen*, being cast in Costs, appealed Home, but his Appeal was dismissed because he had not brought

* See Vol. I. p. 367.

over Proof of Mr. *Mason's* having ever been in Possession, and was ordered to begin *de Novo*. The Collective Body of the People by their Representatives in Assembly, have no † Pretension to the vacant or waste Lands, and therefore have no Concern in granting of unoccupied Lands; all Grants or Charters of these Lands, according to the Governor's Commission and Instructions, are vested in the Governor and Council, with this Clause or Reserve, *So far as in us lies*; — this Reservation seems to favour the Claimers under Mr. *Mason*; as is also a Clause in the Royal new Charter of *Massachusetts-Bay* 1691, "Nothing therein contain'd shall prejudice any right of *Samuel Allen* Esq; claiming under *John Mason* Esq; deceased, of any Part of the Premises."

The Jurisdiction of this Province is indisputably in the Crown. In Property there are many and various Claimers, * 1. As it is said that Mr. *Mason* and his Heirs and their Assigns never complied with the Conditions of the Grant, in Consequence it reverts to the Crown; and the Crown at present is in Possession not only of the Jurisdiction but property of Lands hitherto not granted. 2. Capt. *John Tufston Mason*, Heir in Succession, as he says, to the original Grantee Capt. *John Mason*, lately made a Conveyance of his Right for a small Consideration to 14 or 15 Persons of *New-Hampshire*; by their Advertisements in the *Boston* News Papers they seem to make a Bubble of it. *Boston* Post Boy Nov 9, 1749. "the present Claimers under the late *Samuel Allen* of *London*, will find upon Trial, they have no Right to any of these Lands; that the said Claimers under *John Tufston Mason*, will be able to make out the Right to be in them, and are willing to

† The other three Colonies of the Dominions of *New-England*, by their respective Royal Charters, have the Property or Disposal of their vacant Lands lodged in the Representatives of the collective Body of the People.

* Upon any Judgment in the Provincial Courts of *New Hampshire*, by an Appeal Home, all these Claims may be finally settled by the King in Council, and prevent all Bubblings of Property in *New Hampshire*.

dispute the Point in Law, as soon as any Person will give them Opportunity."

John Hobby, Grand Son and Heir of *Sir Charles Hobby*, says, that *Thomas Allen*, Heir to *Col. Allen*, by Deed of Sale, *August 28, 1706*, conveyed one half of these Lands to *Sir Charles Hobby of New-England, Knight*. See Vol. I. p. 505.

3. *Hobby and Adams* claiming under *Mr. Allen* by their bubbling Advertisement *Nov. 9, 1749*, published in the *Boston Post-Boy, November 20, 1749*, in these Words, "Whereas sundry Gentlemen in the Province of New-Hampshire, claim a Right to all those Lands in said Province and elsewhere which were granted to *Capt. John Mason of London*, by Letters Patent from the Council established at *Plymouth* dated *March 9. 1621*, and confirmed to him by Charter from *King Charles the First*, dated *August 19th 1635*; which Lands the said Gentlemen claim under *Capt. John Tufton Mason*, the now pretended Heir to the said original Patentee: This is therefore to inform whom it may concern, That although it should appear that the said *Tufton Mason* is the lawful Heir to the said Original Patentee, (which is yet to be doubted) it evidently appears that *John and Robert Tufton Mason*, undoubted Heirs to the said original Patentee, did by an absolute Deed of Sale, dated *April 27th 1691*, in Consideration of the Sum of *l. 2750 Sterling*, convey all their Right and Title to the said Lands to *Samuel Allen of London*, afterwards Governor of *New-Hampshire* aforesaid, which Conveyance we doubt not will be made to appear legal and valid, the said *Samuel Allen's* Claim having been allow'd and confirm'd by *King WILLIAM and Queen MARY*, as appears by their Charter to the Government of the Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay*; and that *Thomas Allen* only Son and Heir to the said *Samuel Allen*, did by Deed of Sale, dated *August 28th 1706*, convey one half of said Lands to *Sir Charles Hobby of Boston, New-England, Knight*, under whom *John Hobby* late of

Barbadoes,

“ *Barbadoes*, but now residing at *Boston*, Grandson and
 “ Heir at Law to the said Sir *Charles Hobby*, together
 “ with *John Adams*, of *Boston*, have a lawful Claim to
 “ the said half of said Lands ; and the Heirs of the said
 “ *Thomas Allen* or their Assigns, have a Right to the
 “ other half ; all which will soon be made to appear :
 “ And whereas the first-mentioned Claimers are granting
 “ fundry Tracts of Lands to People who apprehend their
 “ Title to be good, it is thought proper to advise such
 “ Persons to be cautious in settling said Lands, till it ap-
 “ pears whose the Property is, which may probably be
 “ very speedily, when the waste Lands may be granted ;
 “ and also those Persons already possess’d of Lands
 “ may be confirm’d in their Possessions on easy Terms.

4. The Claim of Mr. *Allen’s* Heirs, if Mr. *Mason’s* Heirs fulfilled the Conditions of the Grant, seem to be the best. It is true the *Masons* and Assignees in Favour of their Claim, say that these Lands were entailed, and therefore could not be legally conveyed to Mr. *Allen* ; but Mr. *Allen’s* Heirs say, that upon Mr. *Allen’s* purchasing of Mr. *Mason’s* Grant, he obtained a feigned or common Conveyance of these Lands ; the Effect of this Sort of Recovery is to discontinue and destroy Estates Tail, Remainders and Reversions, and to bar and cut off the Entails of them.

5. *Wheelwright* and Associates Claim to Lands in *New-Hampshire* by Indian Deeds ; this was revived by Mr. *Cook* and others about 30 Years since, but without Effect, See Vol. I. p. 410.

6. *Million purchase*, so called, See Vol. I. p. 419. This interferes with the late Conveyance of the present Mr. *Mason* to some *New-Hampshire* Gentlemen ; as these Claims will never be of any Consequence ; it is not worth while to disintangle them : This *million purchase* Claim was revived about 20 years since, and lately by an Advertisement in the *Boston Gazette*, June 21, 1748.

7. Not many Years since, when the Affair of the property of their Lands, was to be referred to the King in
 Vol. II. E Council ;

Council ; the Governor and Council so far as in them lay, granted to themselves and Friends, (in all about 60 Persons of *New Hampshire*) a Tract of Land called *Kingswood*, laying upon and near *Winepisiackee* Lake or Pond, containing almost the whole of the waste Lands in Mr. *Mason's* Grant, and perhaps further than Mr. *Mason's* Grant extended.

In the Reign of *Charles II*, the King in Council at sundry times appointed Trials of the Claims of the Colony of *Massachusetts-Bay*, and of *Mason's* Heirs concerning the disputed Lands between *Neumkeag* and *Merimack* Rivers, but without Result or Issue ; at length by *Charter* of *William and Mary*, *October 7, 1691*, conform to the Old Charter of 1629, that Tract of Land was confirmed to the Province of *Massachusetts Bay* absolutely as to Jurisdiction, but with a Reserve of Col. *Allen's* Claim under Mr. *Mason* as to Property.

The Corporation, or Company called the Council of *Plymouth* or Council of *New-England* (See Vol. 1. p. 366, 386,) made many Grants of Property, but could not deligate Jurisdiction ; therefore to supply this Defect, some of these Grantee's obtained additional Royal Charters with Power of Jurisdiction ; Mr. *Mason* 1635, Sir *Ferdinando Gorge* 1639 obtain'd Royal Patents ; here we may observe, that although the Jurisdiction of the Lands from *Neumkeag* to *Merimack* River are included in Mr. *Mason's* Patent, this Patent was posterior to the *Massachusetts* old Royal Charter, which included that Jurisdiction.

Originally the Extent of this Province from 3 Miles North of *Merimack* River to *Piscataqua* River was 20 Miles Sea Line, and 60 Miles Inland ; by the Determination of the King's Council 1739, the Sea-Line continues the same, and Westward making the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, it extends from *Newichawanack* River about 115 Miles to *New-York* Bounds ; Northward towards *Canada* it is indefinite or rather not determined.

The

The successive Changes in Property and Jurisdiction, are as follows. *Mason's* first Grant, See Vol. I. p. 418.

Towards the End of 1635 dies Capt. *Mason*, and by Will leaves *New-Hampshire* to *John Tufton* (to be called *Mason*) and his Heirs: *John* dying before he was of Age, it came to his Brother *Robert Tufton Mason* an Infant, who was not of Age till 1650: during his Minority the Servants in *New Hampshire* embezzel every Thing, and the Civil Wars preventing any legal Relief, the *Massachusetts* People at the Desire of the Inhabitants of *New-Hampshire*, took all those Lands into their own Disposal and Jurisdiction.

1661. *Robert Tufton Mason* petitioned King *Charles II.* to be relieved as to his Property of these Lands; Sir *Geofrey Palmer*, Attorney General, made Report, that these Lands were the undoubted Right of said *Robert Mason* Grand Son and Heir of said *John Mason*. The Inhabitants of *New-Hampshire*, and Province of *Main* incapable of protecting themselves against the Incurfions of the *Canada French* and their Indians, desired the Protection of the Colony of *Massachusetts-Bay*; the Assembly of *Massachusetts* assumed the Property of the vacant Lands and Jurisdiction of that Country. The Colony of *Massachusetts-Bay* by their Agent, that is Attorney at Home, purchased the Property of the *Province of Main*, July 20, 1677, from the Heirs or Assigns of *Gorge*; the Property and Jurisdiction was confirmed to the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* by their New Charter.

1675, Mr. *Mason* still continuing his Petition, the King refers them to the Attorney and Solicitor General; they report his Title good, and the King sends a mandatory Letter || dated *March 10, 1675, 6* to the *Massachusetts-Bay* Colony: *William Stoughton* and *Peter Bulkely* are sent over Agents to answer *Mason's* Complaints; they

|| This Letter is directed: To our trusty and well beloved the Governor and Magistrates of our Town of *Boston* in *New-England*. N. B. in those Times the Colony of *Massachusetts-Bay* (a hard Word) was called the *Boston* Colony.

as Attorneys legally constituted in the Name of the *Massachusetts Colony* disclaim those Lands before the Court of *King's Bench*.

1679, The Proprietors and Inhabitants of *New-Hampshire* not capable of protecting themselves against the *Canada French* and their Indians, desired of the Crown to take them under their immediate Protection; accordingly the King commissioned * a President with Ten Councillors for the Government thereof, *Sept. 18, 1679*, and the Lands granted there by the *Massachusetts Colony*, were directed to pay Mr. *Mason's* Heirs Six-pence in the Pound Quit-rent as Incomes at that Time were valued by way of Composition; at the same Time a Court of Record is constituted, to try and determine all Causes, reserving an Appeal Home when the Value is £. 50 Sterl. and upwards; *Robert Mason* may make out Titles to the present Possessors at Six-pence in the Pound Value of all Rents of real Estates, as Quit Rents, the unoccupied Lands to remain to said *Mason*.

1682. *May. 9.* King *Charles II.*, appoints *Edward Cranfield* Esq; Lieutenant Governor. When the Crown was endeavouring to reassume all Charters and Patents, the Patentees made another formal surrender of Jurisdiction to the Crown, and *Cranfield* 1684 was commissioned Governor, but soon went to *Barbadoes*, and Lieutenant Governor *Usher* had the Administration.

Robert Mason the Patentee's Case was recommended by the Crown, he came over to *New-Hampshire*, some few of the Possessors took Leases, but they generally refused this Proposal, Mr. *Mason* brought Writs of Ejectment against Mr. *Waldron* and about 30 others, he recovered

* For the Honour of those Families who in these Times were reckoned the principal original Settlers, we shall transmit them by Name, viz. *John Cuts* President, the ten Councillors were *Richard Martyn*, *William Vaughan*, and *Thomas Daniel* of *Portsmouth*; *John Gilman* of *Exeter*, *Christopher Huffy* of *Hampton*, and *Richard Waldron* of *Dover*, with Power to chuse three others to constitute the first Council; the President and five other Councillors to be a Board.

Judgment, but was opposed in the Execution, and his Life threatned. 1684 Mr. *Mason* brought a Writ of Ejectment against *William Vaughan* Esq; and recovered Judgment; Mr. *Vaughan* appealed to his Majesty in Council, this Appeal was dismissed and the former Judgment confirmed, and Costs given against the Appellant. Mr. *Mason* despairing of any Accommodation with the People, and his Life threatned, returned to *England*, and soon after dies, leaving two Sons *John*, and *Robert Tufton Mason*.

1691. April 27. *John* and *Robert Tufton Mason* by their Deed lawfully executed for the Consideration of £. 2,750 Sterl. did grant to *Samuel Allen* of *London* Esq; all their † Right to Lands in *New England*.

1692.

† An Abstract of *Mason's* Deed to *Allen*. 1691, April 27. *John Tufton Mason* and *Robert Tufton Mason*, Sons of *Robert Tufton Mason*, some Time of the Parish of *St. Martins* in the Fields in the County of *Middlesex*, Esq; deceased, sell to *Samuel Allen* of *London* Merchant, in Consideration of £. 2,750 Sterl. a Portion of main Land in *New-England* from the middle of *Merimack* River to proceed Eastward along the Sea-Coast to *Cape-Anne* and round about the same to *Piscataqua* Harbour, and so forwards up within the River of *Newichawanock*, and to the furthest Head of said River, and from thence North-westward till 60 Miles be finished from the first Entrance of *Piscataqua* Harbour; and also from *Neunkeag* through the River thereof up into the Land West 60 Miles; from which Period to cross over Land to the 60 Miles End accounted from *Piscataqua* through the *Newichawanock* River to the Land North Westward; and also all the South half of the *Isles of Shoals*, together with all other Islands and Iselets as well imbay'd as adjoining, laying, abutting upon or near the Premises within five Leagues Distance, not otherways granted by special Name to any at any Time before April 18, 1635, called by the Name of NEW-HAMPSHIRE. Also ten Thousand Acres at the S. E. Part of the Entrance of *Sagadahoc*, called by the Name of MASONIA. Also a Portion of Land in the Province of *Main*, beginning at the Entrance of *Newichawanock* River and so upwards along the said River, and to the furthest Head thereof, and to contain in Breadth through all the Length aforesaid three Miles within the Land from every Part of said River and half Way over said River. Also that Part of the Sea-Coast of *New-England*, on a great Head Land or Cape North Eastward of a great River of the *Massachusetts*, stretching into the Sea Eastwards five Leagues or thereabouts in the Lat. between 42 d. and 43 d, known by the Name of *Tabigranda* or *Cape Anne*, with the
North

1692, *March* 1. Col. *Samuel Allen* was commissioned Governor of *New-Hampshire*, and his Commission was from three Miles North of *Merimack* River to *Piscataqua* River, &c.

North South and East Shores thereof; the back Bounds towards the main Land beginning at the Head of the next great River to the Southward of said Cape, and running into the main Land Westward, and up a River supposed to be called *Merimack*, North Westward of said Cape to the furthest Head of said River; from which Period to cross over Land to the other great River which lies Southward of foresaid Cape, and half way over, that is to say to the Middle of the said two Rivers within the great Island called ISLE MASON laying near or before the Bay Harbour or River of *Agawam*, with all Islands laying within three Miles of said Sea-Coast, known by the Name of MARIANA. Also all those Lands and Countries bordering on the Rivers and Lakes of the *Iroquois* or Nations of Indians inhabiting up into the Landward between the Lines of the West and North West, conceived to pass or lead upwards from the Rivers of *Sagadahock* and *Merimack*, together with the Lakes and Rivers of the *Iroquois*, and other Nations adjoining, the middle Part of which Lake lies near about 44 d, or 45 d; as also all Lands within ten Miles of any Parts of said Lakes and Rivers on the South East part thereof, and from the West End or Sides of the said Lakes and Rivers, so far forth to the West as shall extend half Way into the next great Lake to the Westward, and from thence Northward into the North Side of the main River, which runneth from the great and vast Western Lakes and falleth into the River of *Canada*, including all within said Perambulation, which Portions of Lands, Rivers and Lakes are commonly called the Province of LACONIA. As also the TOWNS and Ports of *Portsmouth*, *Hampton*, *Dover*, *Exeter*, *Little Harbour*, *Greenland*, *Salisbury*, *old Salisbury*, *Concord*, *Sudbury*, *Reading*, *Belerica*, *Gloucester*, *Cape Anne Town*, *Ipswich*, *Wenham*, *Newbury*, *Haverhill*, *Andover*, *Rowley*, *Balstown*, *Woburn*, and all other Villages, Towns, Ports, and Harbours in the aforesaid Tracts of Land called *Masonia*, *Mariana*, *Isle Mason*, and Province of *Laconia*, with all Mines, Minerals, &c. and all Royal Letters or Patents, Deeds, Writings, Rentals, Accounts, Papers, and Evidences of Land whatsoever relating to the same.

It is said that Mr. *Mason* (called Treasurer and Pay-Master of the Army,) 1634, sent over about 70 Servants with Stores and Provisions to carry on the Settlement of *New-Hampshire*; and Mr. *Mason* dying towards the End of 1635, that his Estate in *New-Hampshire* inventered, amounted to about *Twenty Thousand Pounds Sterl.*

1700, Col. *Allen* came over to *New Hampshire* to prosecute his Claim, and found there were 24 or 25 Leaves torn out of the Records; these Leaves contain'd the Records of former Judgments of Ejectment obtain'd by *Mason*. He enters new Writs of Ejectment against *Waldron, Vaughan &c.* the Juries brought in for the Defendants Costs; the King in Council dismissed his Appeal without Costs, because he had not brought Proof of Mr. *Mason's* Possession, and was allowed to begin *de novo*. Col. *Allen* petitioned *Q. Anne* in Council to be put in Possession of the Waste Lands, &c. the Petition was referred to the *Board of Trade and Plantations*; they advised with Sir *Edward Northey* Attorney General, who reported that her Majesty might safely put him in Possession of the unimproved Land, but where the Inhabitants had Possession he might bring his Writs of Ejectment: an Order was sent to Governor *Dudley* (at this Time *Dudley* was Governor of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* and of the Province of *New-Hampshire* by two distinct Commissions) to put Col. *Allen* in Possession of the Waste Lands, but for Land improved he was to bring Writs of Ejectment, and when the Trials came on Governor *Dudley* was directed to go into Court and demand a special Verdict; accordingly upon a Trial of Ejectment against *Waldron*, Governor *Dudley* was notified to attend, but for certain Reasons at that Time best known to himself, and a great Indisposition of Body (as he said) he proceeded no further than *Newbury*; the Defendants obtain'd Costs of Suit; Col. *Allen* appeals to the Crown, but dies before the Appeal was prosecuted, leaving one Son and four Daughters. His Son *Thomas* succeeds him in these Claims and was cast in his Writs of Ejectment with Costs, a special Verdict being refused; he appeal'd, and died before it could be heard, leaving two Sons and one Daughter Infants. To cut off the Claim of Mr. *Allen's* Heirs to Waste Lands, so far as in them lies, lately this Government have made a Grant of the Waste Lands by the Name of *Kingswood* to about 60 of their principal Inhabitants Possessors,

sessors, that there might remain no Waste Lands in Mr. *Mason's* Grant.

The Lands lately adjudged by the King in Council, not to belong to the *Massachusetts-Bay* Grant, are now Crown Lands, but at present under the Jurisdiction of the Province of *New-Hampshire*, they lay North of *Massachusetts*, and when the Boundaries with *Canada* are settled may prove a good Distinct Inland Province for produce. By an Order of the King in Council 1744, it is directed, that if the Government of *New-Hampshire* do not provide for Fort *Dummer*, there will be a Necessity for returning that Fort with a proper contiguous District to the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*: but so it happened, that during the late *French* War, the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* by the Contrivance of — for sake of Perquisites maintained that Fort and many Block-Houses within the District of *New-Hampshire*, without any Consideration or Allowance for want of proper Application Home.

As Mr. *Mason's* Grant lies indented in the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, (the old Colony of *Massachusetts-Bay* is Westward, and the *Province of Main* by the New Charter annexed to *Massachusetts-Bay* is Eastward) perhaps it would be for the Interest of *Great-Britain* and for the Good of the Inhabitants, to annex this small Country to the neighbouring Government by an additional Charter; the Property of the vacant Lands of *Massachusetts-Bay* being in the representatives of the Collective body of the People, and the Property of the vacant Lands in *New-Hampshire* being in the Crown, is no Obstacle, seeing the vacant Lands of *Sagadahoc* or Duke of *York's* former Property tho' annexed by Charter to *Massachusetts*, continue the Property of the Crown, that is, not to be assigned by the Government of *Massachusetts-Bay*, without Consent of the Crown. *New-Hampshire* is too diminutive for a separate Government or Province; the Numbers of their People and the Value of their Commerce are insignificant: in fact the Governor of *Massachusetts-Bay* for many Years was also Governor of *New-Hampshire*;

Hampshire with a distinct Commission, but about ten Years since the Assembly of *New-Hampshire* enter a Complaint to the King in Council against the joint Governor of that Time, in Relation to the Case of settling the Boundaries between the two Provinces; that he was partial in Favour of his more profitable Government of *Massachusetts-Bay*, by adjourning and proroguing the Assembly of *New-Hampshire*, when the Case was in Agitation; this Complaint, by the King in Council was judged true and good, therefore a separate Governor for *New-Hampshire* was commissioned *Anno 1740*. In such diminutive Governments, the Governor may dominier and act in a more despotick Manner, than his Sovereign can possibly in *Great-Britain*; it is said that a Governor and such of the Council as he thinks proper to consult with, dispense with such Provincial Laws as are troublesome or stand in their Way in Procedures of their Court of Equity, so called.

Here is at present subsisting a Dispute (interrupting all publick Business) between the Governor in Council, and the House of Representatives concerning the Governor's Prerogative of negating a *Speaker*, and his qualifying so many Towns and Districts as he shall think worthy to send Representatives; and in this insignificant Government it may be called *Lis de lana Caprina*, but in our considerable Colonies it is an Affair of great Consequence, therefore I shall here insert a small Digression concerning these Prerogatives and Priviledges.

A DIGRESSION concerning some disputed Points relating to the Legislatures of the several British Colonies in America; particularly where the Prerogatives of the Crown Governors, seem to clash with the Priviledges of the Representatives of the collective Body of the People or Settlers, in General Court assembled.

Perhaps, in our Colonies after a Legislature is constituted by Royal Charters as in *New-England*, as by proprietary Patents of Government as in *Pensylvania, Maryland,*

land, &c. or by Royal Commission and Instructions * to the first Crown Governor in the King's Governments; further Instructions from the Court of *Great-Britain*, tho' obligatory upon the Governor's Negative, are not obligatory upon the Negatives of the Country's Representatives, who naturally may be supposed and doubtless were intended as a Check upon Instructions from the Boards at Home not well versed in Plantation Affairs — On the other Side, as to Prerogative, the Plantation Acts ought to have a suspending Clause, that is, not to be obligatory (thus it is in *Ireland* a *British* Colony or Acquisition, an ancient Precedent) unless confirmed by the *British* Court.

Thus in general, there are two supreme Negatives in the Legislatures of our *American* Colonies; the King in Council, and the particular Legislatures of the several Colonies.

In a Colony where there is a Royally constituted Legislature, perhaps their Publick Acts, after being approved of, or not disapproved after a certain Time (*Massachusetts-Bay* Charter expresses it after three Years) cannot be disannulled but by the Legislature of *Great-Britain* called the Parliament, who in all *British* Cases and over all Persons according to the *British* Constitution are absolutely supreme and the *Dernier Resort*.

If any Inovations were to be made by the Administration at Home upon the established Constitution of our Colonies, they naturally will begin with some insignificant Colony, such as for Instance is this of *New-Hampshire*, where the People have no Money nor Interest lodged at Home to maintain their Privileges; and from Precedents of such impotent Colonies, proceed to impose upon the more rich and valuable Colonies: thus it was in the latter End of the Reign of *Charles II.* and in the short abrupted Reign of *James II.* when all Corporation valuable Privileges were designed to be abrogated; they began with the insignificant impotent Burrough Corporations.

* The Instruction is, that after *** a limited Time, they shall Issue a Summons for convening a General Assembly,

A Governor perhaps by soliciting at Home and giving adequate Gratuities and Fees to the proper leading Clerks of the several Boards, may obtain additional Instructions suitable to his Interest or Humour. I do not maintain but only mention, that we seem to have a late Instance of this in the Province of *New Hampshire*. 1744,5. There was a Dispute between the Governor and House of Representatives concerning the House's not admitting of Members from the Governor's new constituted Townships and Districts, but not qualified by the House; the Governor by Solicitations, &c. at Home, obtained, in the King's Absence, from the Lords Justices an additional Instruction as follows.

“By the LORDS JUSTICES,

Gower (P. S. Additional Instruction to *Benning Wentworth*, Esq; His Majesty's Governor and Commander in Chief, in and over the Province of *New-Hampshire*, in *New-England* in *America*; or to the Commander in Chief of the said Province for the Time being.

(Seal) Given at *Whitehall*, the 30th Day of *June*, 1748. in the 22d Year of His Majesty's Reign.

Whereas it hath been represented unto His Majesty, That you having in his Majesty's Name, and by Virtue of your Commission, issued a Writ to the Sheriff of the Province under your Government, commanding him to make out Precepts, directed to the Select-Men of certain Towns, Parishes and Districts therein mention'd, for the Election of fit Persons qualified in Law to represent them in the General Assembly, appointed to be held at Portsmouth, within the said Province, on the 24th Day of January, 1744,5; by which Writ, the Towns of South-Hampton and Chester, and the Districts of Haverhill, and of Methuen and Dracut, and

the

the District of Rumford, were impowered to choose Representatives as aforesaid; the said General Assembly did refuse to admit the Persons duly elected to represent the said Towns and Districts to sit and vote in the Choice of a Speaker: And whereas the Right of sending Representatives to the said Assembly was founded originally on the Commissions and Instructions given by the Crown to the respective Governors of the Province of New-Hampshire, and His Majesty may therefore lawfully extend the Privilege of sending Representatives, to such new Towns as His Majesty shall judge worthy thereof,

It is therefore His Majesty's Will and Pleasure, and you are hereby directed and required to dissolve the Assembly of the Province, under your Government, as soon as conveniently may be, and when another is called, to issue His Majesty's Writ to the Sheriff of the said Province, commanding him to make out Precepts, directed to the Select-Men of the Towns of *South-Hampton* and *Chester*, the Districts of *Haverhill*, and of *Methuen* and *Dracut*, and the District of *Rumford*, requiring them to cause the Freeholders of the said Towns and Districts to assemble, to elect fit Persons to represent the said Towns and Districts in General Assembly, in manner following, viz. One for the Town of *South-Hampton*, one for the Town of *Chester*, one for the District of *Haverhill*, one for the District of *Methuen* and *Dracut*, and one for the District of *Rumford*: AND it is His Majesty's further Will and Pleasure, that you do support the Rights of such Representatives, when chose; and that you do likewise signify His Majesty's Pleasure herein to the Members of the said General Assembly." —

This would be nearly the same as if the *Patricii* of *Rome* (in our Colonies they are called Governor and Council) had assumed the Prerogative of regulating the † *Tribuni Plebis*, or Representatives of the People. The

† When the *Patricii* or *Optimates* came to lord it too much over the other People of *Rome*, these People insisted upon their having Representatives

The Writs or Precepts for electing of Representatives for the several Townships and Districts returned into the Secretary's Office, were produced in the House, Jan. 5th 1748.9, being the first Day of the sitting of a new Assembly, they consisted of

3	from <i>Portsmouth</i>	1	from <i>Newington</i>
3	<i>Dover</i>	1	<i>New Market</i>
2	<i>Hampton</i>	1	<i>Stratham</i>
2	<i>Exeter</i>	1	<i>Greenland</i>
2	<i>N-Castle & Rye</i>	1	<i>London derry</i>
1	<i>Kingston</i>	1	<i>Durham</i>
1	<i>Hampton-Falls</i>	—	
		20	
		—	

There were some other Members returned by some New Towns, *Chester*, *South-Hampton*, and three other Districts, but not admitted to sit: *Richard Waldron*, Esq; a worthy Man, chosen *Speaker* by all the Votes, excepting one, was *negatived* or disallowed by the Governor, because the Representatives from the New Towns were not admitted to sit and vote in the Choice. The House were strictly required by the Governor to admit these new Representatives, the Refusal of them being the highest Contempt of the King's Authority, as he said, and to proceed to a new Choice of a Speaker. This was *absolutely refused* by the House; denying the Governor's Power of *negating a Speaker*, and of introducing † Members

representatives in the publick Administration, called *Tribuni Plebis*, to maintain the Liberties and Privileges of the Commons against the Power of the *Optimates*; perhaps the House of Commons in the *British* Legislature had some such original.

† If the King sends Instructions to his Governors of Colonies, concerning the negating of *Speakers*, and qualifying any *New Towns* or Districts that shall be thought worthy to send Representatives to their General Assemblies; it seems an ancient established Custom or Practice, that is, Privilege of the House to admit or refuse novel Practices, it being a notorious Privilege in the *British* Constitution for the Representatives of the People to regulate their own Members.

not

not warranted by Law, Usage, Custom, or any other Authority.

This House still subsists (*June 1750*) by many Prorogations and alternate Messages, but have done no publick or ordinary Provincial Business; whether the Governor or House of Representatives are in Fault I do not determine; I only relate Matters of Fact, and refer it to proper Judgment.

As to a Governor in the *British Colonies* NEGATING A SPEAKER, it is said to be a controverted Point, therefore shall make a few Remarks in Relation to it.

1. As the King at Home and his Governors in the Plantations abroad, never pretended to negative the Election of a Member for a County, Town, or District; it seems inconsistent that they should claim a *negative* upon a *Speaker* or Chair-man or Moderator chosen amongst themselves.

2. In *Great-Britain*, towards the end of the Reign of *Charles II.* all Charters and other Privileges of the People were designed to be sacrificed to the Prerogative; there was a Dispute between the Prerogative and the Privilege of the Commons concerning the Courts negating of a *Speaker*; but ever since, this Controversy lies dormant, it is a tender Point, *a noli me tangere*; and Plantation Governors, who endeavour to revive the like in their Districts, by sily procuring Instructions from the Court at Home in Favour of such a Negative, are perhaps no true Friends to their Colony, nor to the *British* Constitution in general.

3. Notwithstanding, that, in the new Charter 1691 of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, it is expressly said, That the Governor shall have a Negative in all Elections and Acts of Government: in their additional or explanatory Charter 12. *Geo. I.* in the King's Absence granted by the Guardians or Justices of the Kingdom; it is said, that no Provision was made in said Charter, of the King by his Governor, approving or disapproving the Election

of a Speaker of the House of Representatives. In Consequence of this new Charter, not by any absolute Royal Command, but by the voluntary Consent and Act of the Representatives themselves, the Commander in Chief is allowed to negative the Speaker. Thus perhaps an Act of the General Assembly of *New-Hampshire* or their tacit Submission, might invest their Governor with the like Power, but not to be assumed in any other Manner.

4. The exclusive Right of electing their own *Speaker* is in the Houses of Commons or Representatives; the Confirmation by presenting him to the King, or to his Governors, is a meer Form in Course: thus the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs of *London*, are presented in the King's Exchequer-Court, but *no Negative* pretended; and perhaps if the King in a Progress should happen to be in any corporated City or Town at the Time of the Election of their Mayor and Sheriffs, in Compliment and Form they would be presented to the King.

As to the Governor's Dispute with the House of Representatives concerning his summoning NEW MEMBERS FROM UNPRIVILEGED PLACES OR DISTRICTS, we make the following Remarks.

1. The present Governor of *New-Hampshire*, without any prudential *Retenue* or Reserve, impolitically exposing such an arbitray Proceeding; menaces them with ten more such Representatives, he means any indefinite arbitrary Number in his Message *Feb. 15. 1748,9.*

2. For many Scores of Years, which is generally construed a Prescription; there have been no Royal Addition of Members of Parliament; and at the *Union* of the *two Kingdoms* of *Scotland* and *England*, to prevent multiplying of Members, the small Royal corporated Towns of *Scotland* were *classed*, that is four or five of them *jointly* to send *one* Member or Representative; therefore as the royal appointing of new Representatives in *Great Britain* has been discontinued Time out of Mind, why should the general Constitution be infringed upon in our Colonies?
and

and from the Caprice or private Interest of a Governor, the Assembly Members be † multiplied to an *inconvenient* and *chargeable* Number; excepting where the Cultivation of Wilderness Lands may require new Townships or Districts, and if inconveniently remote from a former Shire or County Town, they require a new separate County or Shire.

3. As an Instance or Precedent of a Royal Regulation in the Colonies; in the Charter of *Massachusetts-Bay* it is expressly declared “that the House of Representatives “with the other Branches of the Legislature, should determine what Numbers should be afterwards sent to represent the Counties, Towns, and Places;” therefore the Affairs of Representation in the Legislature is not absolutely in the Governor and his Devotee’s of the Council.

4. In the neighbouring Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* by Charter, each Township was qualified (by a late Instruction; the newly granted Township are disqualified) to send two Representatives, whereas they generally send

† In the Province of *Massachusetts Bay*, from 1730 to 1741 (the Reasons or Inducements of this Procedure, I shall not account for) by erecting of new Townships and splitting of old Townships into many Corporations, the Members of the House of Representatives was likely to be increased to an impolitical Number; therefore in the following Administration. See Vol. I. p. 490, the Governor had an Instruction, in granting new Townships to *exclude* them from sending Representatives: this seems inconsistent with the *British* Constitution, whereby all Freeholders of 40*s* per Ann. Income and upwards, are qualified to be represented in the Legislature and Taxation; in particular, Freeholders are not to be Taxed but where their Agent or Representative does or may appear.

A Vote of the Representatives to regulate their own Houses, is not a general Act of Government.

Governors have a considerable Advantage over their Assemblies; when he sends them any imposing Message of Importance, but not reasonable; to prevent any Representation of its Inconveniency or Illegality, he adjourns or prorogues them.

one, and at Times exclusively, the House of Representatives excuse some Towns from sending, and mulct other Townships for not sending. In *Great Britain* there are many Burrough Towns or Corporations not privileged to send Members or Representatives to Parliament ; but, as there are County Representatives, as Freeholders they are represented in their County : whereas in *New-England* there being no County Representatives, these unprivileged Districts are not represented, which is an * Infringement upon the *British* Constitution.

5. All new Townships and Districts, who by a Governor's Precept are required to send Representatives, their Qualification ought to be confirmed by an Act of Assembly, before they are allowed to sit, otherways the Governor to serve a Turn may multiply the House of Representatives to any inconvenient Number and *unnecessary publick Charge where the Representatives are upon Wages* ; together with the general Damage of calling off from Labour and Business, many Persons *invincibly ignorant of publick Affairs*.

6. The last Charter of the City of *New-York* in the King's Province of *New-York*, was confirmed by Act of their Provincial Assembly, 1730 ; and by its last Clause it is provided that " this present Act should be reputed, " as if it were a publick Act of Assembly relating to the " whole Colony : " This is an Instance of Corporations in the Plantations being confirmed by Act of Assembly.

* To obviate or rectify this, the Counties by Act of Assembly may be allowed County Representatives, or the new Townships and Subdivisions of old Townships may be *classed* and *jointly* send one or more Representatives. As in the Nature of Things, nothing, no Constitution is perfect ; where any Inconveniency from Time to Time appears it ought to be rectified. This introducing of County-Representatives, or of Classical Representation of Towns, is not inconsistent with a late Instruction from the Court of *Great-Britain*, that in granting of new Townships, a Provision be made that the number of Representatives be not thereby increased, or with a *suspending Clause*, i. e. *It shall not take Place till confirm'd from Home*.

I shall here insert some Observations concerning *General Assemblies* or *Houses of Representatives* which were omitted in the Section of *Massachusetts-Bay*.

1. *Constituting Townships with all Corporation Privileges, but expressly excluding them from the Privilege of sending Representatives*, seems ANTI-CONSTITUTIONAL; especially considering, that, there are no County Representations of Freeholders in *New-England*. See Vol. I. p. 459.

2. By Act of the Assembly of *Massachusetts-Bay* 40 Members are required to make a QUORUM in the House of Representatives; as this is not by Charter, it may be rectified by Act of Assembly. In the House of Commons of *Great-Britain* consisting of 558 Members or Returns, 40 make a Quorum; why should the House of Representatives of *Massachusetts-Bay* which this Year 1750 consists of only about 90 Returns, have the same number 40 for a Quorum? As many Towns are delinquent in sending Representatives, and some Members of the other Towns negligent in their Attendance, it may sometimes be difficult to make a Quorum of 40, and consequently publick Business impeded.

3. The old Act; *That a Representative must be a Resident in the Township for which he is elected*, may be salutary for some Time in a new Country not much concerned in Commerce and Policy; but a trading Politick Country, such as is *Massachusetts-Bay*, for a Country-Man not used to Trade or Money to prescribe in such Affairs, is not natural. See Vol. I. P. 506.

4. As in ENGLAND, *Sheriffs of Counties are excluded from being Members* of the House of Commons, so in the Colonies the same Regulation may take Place, because a Sheriff may be supposed to be under the Influence of the Court or Governor, his Constituents, and his personal Presence seems required in his Bayliwick.

5. *That the Councillors and Representatives may serve their Country gratis*: thus we shall have generous Members, not Hirelings easily to be corrupted. This Year 1750, the Town of *Boston* and some Country Townships

by way of leading Examples have made an Introduction. Antiently in the Parliament of *England* a Knight of the Shire was allowed 4*s* and a Citizen or Burgefs 2*s* a Day, by the respective Places for which they were chosen ; at present they have no Wages ; the House of Lords the Kings hereditary Council or second Branch in the Legislature, never had any Pay. It is full Time that our Colonies should conform to this Example ; several Provinces have conformed, particularly in *New England* our neighbouring Colony of *Rhode-Island* ever since 1746. See Vol. I. P. 507. This will be a considerable Article of *Saving* in the ordinary Charges of Government.

A DIGRESSION concerning the national Claims of Great-Britain and France relating to disputed Countries on the Continent of North-America and some of the Caribee West-India Islands.

The Crown Lands lately taken from the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, and the Lands North of *Mason's Grant*, have lately *pro tempora*, been annexed to the Jurisdiction of this small Province of *New-Hampshire* ; they extend from West to East from *New-York East Line* (which is 20 Miles East of *Hudson's River*) to the West Line of the Province of *Main* about 115 Miles ; North they extend indefinitely to a Line dividing the *American British* Dominions from the Dominions of *France* called *New France* or *Canada* ; this Line is now upon the Carpet in *Paris*, to be adjusted by *British* and *French* Commissaries. * *Mr. Bollon*, Agent for *Massachusetts-Bay*, has an † Instruction

* This Line does not immediately affect the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, it affects *Nova-Scotia*, *Sagadahock* (the Jurisdiction *pro tempore* but not the Property of *Sagadahock* or *Duke of York's Grant*, is in the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, as was also *Nova-Scotia* by the present Charter) the late Crown Land of *New-Hampshire*, *New-York*, &c.

† That the Curious may have some Notion of our Colonies *Agencies* at the Court of *Great Britain*, I shall here insert, by way of Instance, an Abstract of the last Body of Instructions to Agent *Bollon*, voted by the Assembly, *January 19, 1749, 50.*

Instruction from their Assembly to represent the Encroachments which the *French* are making upon our Settlements in *North-America*.

The late exorbitant *French* Claims of extending their Boundaries in *America*, beyond all the Limits which have hitherto been challenged or allowed, gave Occasion to the following Paragraphs.

M. *La Jangeriere* Governor General of *Canada* or *New France*, by his Instructions from Home, lately sent Letters to the Commandant of *Nova Scotia* and to the Governor of *Massachusetts-Bay*, claiming a great Part of *Nova Scotia*, and from thence so far as *Quenebec River* in *New-England*. At this writing M. *La Corne* a *French* Officer from *Canada* with a considerable † Force, lies canton'd on the North Side

1. To solicit the Payment and Reimbursement of the Charges of the late intended Expedition against *Canada*.

2. To solicit the Payment for the Provincial Cloathing, made use of by Ad. *Knowles* for his Majesty's Sea and Land Forces at *Louisbourg*.

3. To solicit the Charge of supporting Fort *Dummer*, and defending the Frontiers of *New-Hampshire*.

4. To make Application, that the Governments of *Connecticut*, *New-Hampshire*, and *Rhode-Island*, be obliged to a speedy and equitable Redemption of their Bills of publick Credit.

5. To represent the Encroachments made and making by the *French* on his Majesty's Territories in *North-America*.

6. To enquire into the State of the Line between this Province and the Colony of *Connecticut* as formerly settled, in order to have it confirmed, if not already done.

7. To make Application that several Governments on this Continent, be obliged to bear a just Proportion of Men and Money in case of another War.

8. To solicit the Exemption of Sea-men and others in this Government from Impresses on Board any of his Majesty's Ships that may come into this Province.

9. That he apply to the Court of *Great-Britain* for Pay for the *Snow Eagle* and *Dominique* taken from the Captors at *Louisbourg*, and employed in his Majesty's Service to carry Home Prisoners to *France*.

10. The Agent being impowered to receive what Money shall be obtained at *Great-Britain* for this Government, he is to lodge the same at the Bank of *England* for the further Order of the General Assembly.

† This Force consists of three Companies of Marines, about 400 Indians of *Canada*, *St. John's*, *Cape-Sables*, and *Penobscot*, some *Canada*

Miitia

Side of *Chicanisto* Bay and River, to prevent us from extending further North than the *Peninsula*, so called, and from building a Fort upon the Neck where is the *Barca-dier* by the *Bay Verte* to *Canada*. Major *Laurence* of *Warburton's* Regiment with about 450 Men was sent to dislodge them, but finding the *French* too strong, and instructed to repel Force by Force, as also the Houses burnt to prevent any Lodgment there, he retired to *Minas*.

The *French* Court has appointed as Commissaries the Marquis *de la Glissoniere* late Commandant General of *New France*, and M. *La bouettes*; with two Commissaries nominated by the Court of *Great-Britain*, Mr. *Shirley*, late Governor of *Massachusetts-Bay*, and Mr. *Mildmay*; to regulate all the respective Pretensions of the two Nations in *America*, and the Contests still remaining on some Prizes made on both Sides during the War. It is thought that for some Time they may avoid coming to any Determination, and perhaps instead of a definitive may come to a provisional Treaty of *Uti*, &c.

There was lately a Dispute concerning the Property and Jurisdiction of the Island of *Tobago* in the *West-Indies* between the Governor of *Barbadoes* and the General of *Martinico*; this Dispute ended in a provisional Treaty; this with some other of the Windward *Caribee* Islands commonly went by the Name of || *Neutral Islands*.

Soon after the Peace of *Aix la Chapelle*, which was concluded *October 7, 1748*, the *French* began to settle, (erect Batteries) the *Neutral CARIBEE* Islands of * *Tobago*, *St. Vincents*,

Militia and *Coueurs des Bois*, and *French* Neutrals, as they are called, of *Nova-Scotia*.

|| The Imprudence of our Commanders and other Officers, in giving the Denomination of *Neutrals* to the *French* Settlers of *Nova-Scotia*, perhaps gave Occasion to the present *French* Claim of a great Part of *Nova-Scotia* and of some Part of *New-England* so far as *Quebec* River.

* *Tobago* was formerly the Property of the *Dukes of Courland*, they had a Settlement on the Coast of *Guinea* called *Fort St. Andrew*, to supply it with *Negro Slaves*: in the beginning of the Reign of King *Charles II.* they were dispossessed by the *Dutch*; this occasioned

James

Vincent's, St. Lucia, and St. Dominico. These and some other *Caribee* Islands called *Neutrals* are expressly mentioned to keep up the Claim, in both † Commissions of the Governor of *Barbadoes*, and the *French* General of *Martinico*. Beginning of *December* 1748, the *French* Governor of *Martinico* issued a Proclamation, prohibiting the *English, Dutch* or *Danes* from trading there without Licence from the General of *Martinico*, on Pain of forfeiting Vessel and Cargo. Upon Information of these Proceedings the Governor of *Barbadoes* sent Capt. *Tyrrel* with some Frigats to

James Duke of *Courland* by Treaty *November* 17. 1664, to make over to *Charles* II, the Sovereignty of said Island and of Fort *St. Andrews*, reserving Liberty of Trade to the *Courlanders* and *Dantzikers*. Upon this the *Dutch* seem to have quitted the Island, and the *Courlanders* never repossessed it; thus it remains at least a Fief of the Crown of *Great Britain*.

It was first discovered by the *Spaniards*, and had its Name from *Indian Tobacco Smokers*. When the *English* first settled *Barbadoes*, there being no *Spanish* Settlers in *Tobago*, the *English* from *Barbadoes* frequented it, and *Charles* I, made a Grant of it to the Earl of *Pembroke*, the subsequent Civil Wars prevented his settling of it. Soon after about 200 *Dutch* People settled there, but were expelled by the *Spaniards* and *Caribee Indians*. Next *James Kettler* Duke of *Courland*, God-son to *James* I. of *England*, made a Settlement there; but was dispossessed by the two *Lampsons*, *Dutch* Merchants from *France*, they had the Titles of Counts and Barons of *Tobago*; and from the *Dutch West-India* Company had a Grant of the Island, and with Consent of the States they sent over M. *Bavean* Governor. It was in Dispute between the *English* and *Dutch* in *Charles* II. *Dutch* War. The House of *Kettler* being extinct it reverted to *England*.

† The present Governor of *Barbadoes*, his Commission runs thus; *Henry Granvillee*, Esq; Captain General and Chief Governor of the Islands of *Barbados, St. Lucia, St. Vincent's, Dominico*, and the rest of his Majesty's Island Colonies and Plantations in *America*, known by the Name of the *Caribee Islands*, laying and being to Windward of *Guardaloupe*. The present Governor of *Martinico* his Commission runs thus; *Marquis de Caylus* Governor and Lieut. General of the Islands of *Martinico, Guardaloupe, Grande and Petite Terre, Deshada, Marygallant, the Saints, Dominico, St. Lucia, St. Vincent, Bequia, Canaanvan, Caricacoacan, Grenada*, and of all the Islands and Islets commonly called the *Granadillos, Tobago, St. Bartholomew, St. Martin, Cayan*, and the Continent comprehended between the River of the *Amazons* and *Oranoke*.

Tobago,

Tobago, Capt. *Tyrrel* sent aboard the *French* Commodore to enquire what Business he had there, who roundly told him, he was come to settle that Island, and if obstructed therein, was to make the best Defence he could. Capt. *Tyrrel* returned to *Barbadoes* for further Orders.

When Complaint was made to the *French* Court, by the Court of *Great-Britain* concerning the *French* assuming the Island of *Tobago*; the Court of *France* by way of Recrimination answered in *April* 1749, that the *English* were the Aggressors by presuming last *November* in a clandestine Manner to stick up a Proclamation in that Island, commanding the *French* Subjects there, to quit the Place within the Space of thirty Days, upon Pain of military Execution: this (as they pretend) induced the General of *Martinico*, without previous Orders from his Court, to prevent the same, by settling Inhabitants and Batteries there.

Martinico, *November* 27, 1749, a provisional (not definitive) Treaty, was sign'd between Commodore *Holburn*, authorized by Governor *Grenvilee* of *Barbadoes*, and the Marquis *de Caylus* Governor of *Martinico*, for the reciprocal Evacuation of the Island of *Tobago*, as well as for the immediate Demolition of all the Works and Fortresses which the *French* have raised on *Rockley-Bay*, or any other Part of the said Island: that neither Nation shall make Settlements there, but may wood and water there, catch fish, and build temporary Huts to screen them from the Weather during their fishing or wooding, but shall not cut down any Trees other than for Fire-wood, nor gather any Simples or valuable Plants. Accordingly a *British* Man of War Sloop from *Barbadoes*, and a Brigantine from *Martinico*, sailed to *Tobago*, having each of them an Officer on Board charg'd to see that Island evacuated by the Subjects of both Crowns.

The Wars of *New-Hampshire* with the *Canada French* and *Indians* their Allies, is generally comprehended in what

what is wrote in the Section of *Massachusetts-Bay*. * Moreover, 1, towards the Reduction of *Louisbourg*, on *Cape-Breton* Island, they contributed a Regiment of 350 Men under Col. *More*. 2. Towards the second Reinforcement of 1000 Men sent from *New-England* for the Protection of *Nova-Scotia*, they contributed 200 Men, whereof only 40 that were sent to *Minas* did any Duty, the rest in some trifling Disgust soon returned to *Portsmouth* in *New-Hampshire*. 3. In the late *French* and *Indian* Wars, they were neither capable nor willing to protect their own Frontiers; the G — of *Massachusetts-Bay* gladly embraced this Opportunity of further Perquisites, and procured the Assembly to take them under Protection at a considerable Provincial Charge, but hitherto without any Reimbursement.

This Province makes only one County or Shire: Anno 1742, it contained about 6000 reatable Whites, and about 500 Negroes or Slaves.

Their Compliment of Counsellors is ten; when much deficient, the Governor may appoint *pro tempore*. The new Grants of Lands or Townships are not from the Re-

* As we hinted in the first Volume, during the late *French* and *Indian* War, at the Request of the President and Council of *Nova-Scotia*, representing the weak State of *Annapolis* as to their Garrison and the ill Condition of their Fortifications; there were three Reinforcements of Men sent from *New-England* to *Nova-Scotia*. 1. From *Massachusetts-Bay* 200 Men, they were of good Use in the beginning of the *French* War in Summer 1744; the other two Reinforcements were of no Use. 2. In the Winter 1746,7, A Reinforcement of 500 Men of *Massachusetts-Bay*, 300 of *Rhode-Island*, and 200 of *New-Hampshire*, in all 1000 Men to be canton'd amongst the *French* at *Minas* to keep them in due Subjection, and at the same Time to eat up their spare Provision which used to victual the *French* and *Indian* Parties: from ill Contrivance and worse Management, being indiscreetly canton'd, no Snow Shoes, and ill provided with Ammunition, they suffered a dismal Massacre by a *French* and *Indian* Party from *Chiconisto*; our Forces happened to be only 470 Men, the 300 *Rhode-Island* Men never arrived, having suffered Ship-wreck; of the 200 *New-Hampshire* Men, only 40 marched to *Minas*, the rest soon returned Home. 3. Was a Reinforcement of 270 Men from *Massachusetts-Bay* sent in the Winter 1747,8, when the Peace with *France* was as good as concluded.

representatives of the Collective-Body of the People, but by the Governor and Council conform to the Governor's Commission and Instruction, at a certain nominal Quit-Rent, *v. g.* Londonderry to pay yearly one Bushel of Petatoes when required. The Constitution of their House of Representatives, See Vol. II. P. 37.

The *Juries* are returned by the Sheriff.

Their Courts of Judicature, besides the Jurisdiction of a *Juslice of the Peace*, and of a Bench of Justices, are

1. The *General Sessions* of the Peace held Quarterly.
2. *Inferior Court of common Pleas* held four Times a Year, consist of four Judges, whereof three make a *Quorum*.
3. *A Superior Court of Judicature* or Common Pleas held twice a Year, consists of a chief Judge and three other Judges, whereof three make a *Quorum*; from thence are allowed, Appeals to the Governor and Council, or to a Court of Appeals in Cases where the Value in dispute exceeds £. 100 St. and to the King in Council where the true Value of the Thing in Difference exceeds £. 300 St.
4. *Courts of Oyer and Terminer*, *Affizes*, or General Goal Delivery, are specially appointed by the Governor and Council.
5. At present the same Judge of *Vice Admiralty* and other Officers, serve for *Massachusetts-Bay*, *Rhode-Island* and *New Hampshire*.
6. The Officers of the *Court of Probates*, are appointed by the Governor and Council, with Appeal to the Governor and Council.

7. *Court of Equity*. The Commander in Chief with the Council, sustain by way of Appeal from the Court (having Jurisdiction) next below; directly without any new Process, is tried on the same original Writ or Process brought to the first Court, and comes in *Stato quo* exactly, saving that either Party may bring new Evidence if they please: after a Hearing, perhaps some Weeks or Months may elapse before Sentence is pronounced; and from these may Appeal to the King in Council.

In this Province there is only one Collection or Custom-House, kept at *Portsmouth*. By the Quarterly Accounts from *December 25, 1747*, to *December 25, 1748*, foreign Voyages

Cleared out,		Entred in,	
Ships	13	Ships	11
Snows	3	Snows	1
Brigs	20	Brigs	7
Sloops	57	Sloops	35
Scooners	28	Scooners	19
<hr/>		<hr/>	
121		73	

besides about 200 Coasting Sloops and Scooners, which carry † Lumber to *Boston, Salem, Rhode Island, &c.* whereof about one half enter in with Freight from these Parts.

Their Produce is Provisions, but scarce sufficient for their own Consumption; Masts, Timber, Deal Boards, Joists, Staves, Hoops, Clap-Boards, Shingles, and some dry Cod-fish.

Their *Manufactures* are *Ship-building*, lately a good Fifth Rate Man of War called the *America* was built there. Bar-Iron, The noted Iron-works on *Lamper eel River* were only Bloomeries of Swamp or Bog Ore; these Works were soon discontinued, they never made any considerable Quantity of Bar-Iron, they wanted Water in the Drought of Summer and in hard Frosts of Winter, and their Ore become Scarce.

† By *Lumber*, is meant all Sorts of Wooden Traffick that is bulky and of small Value. In *North-America*, Ranging Timber, Spars, Oak and Pine Plank, Oak & Pine Boards, Staves, Heading and Hoops, Clap-Boards, Shingles & Laths are called *Lumber*. In the Act of Parliament 1722, giving further Encouragement for the Importation of Naval Stores, Lumber is specified, *viz.* Deals of several Sorts, Timber Balks of several Sizes, Barrel-Boards, Clap-Boards, Pipe-Boards or Pipe-Holt, White Boards for Shoemakers, Boom and Cant-Spurs, Bow-Staves, Caprevans, Clap-Holt, Ebony-Wood, Headings for Pipes Hogsheads and Barrels, Hoops for Coopers, Oars, Pipe and Hoghead Staves, Barrel Staves, Firkin Staves, Trunnels, Speckled-Wood, Sweet-Wood, small Spars, Oak Plank, and Wainscot.

Their

Their Excise upon strong Liquors may amount to about £. 1000 O. T. *per Annum*; this with £. 1000 O. T. from the Interest of Loan-Money *per Annum* is the present Sallary of their Governor. In *New-Hampshire* as in *Massachusetts-Bay*, there are two Sorts of Licences for selling of strong Drink. 1. A Licence to keep an open Tavern. 2. A Licence to retail Liquors out of Doors only. This Liberty or Licence is first to be obtained of the Select Men of the Township, afterwards to be confirmed by the Justices of the County in their Quarter Sessions.

Mr. *Brown*, Missionary at *Portsmouth* of *New-Hampshire*, Anno 1741, writes to the Society for the *Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts*, that there were in *New-Hampshire* about 50 to 60 Families of the Church of *England*, the rest were *Independents*; that they had no Quakers, Baptists, Seperatists, Heathens, or Infidels amongst them.

MISCELLANIES. About 1623, Mr. *David Thompson* attempted a Settlement at *Piscataqua* now called *New-Hampshire*, it soon vanished, and the very Memory of it is lost.

New Hampshire printed Law-Book begins July 8, 1696. *Usher*, *Partridge*, *Vaughan* and *John Wentworth*, Esq; were successively Lieutenant Governors; the successive Governors of *Massachusetts-Bay* being Governors in chief, until July 1741, when *Bennin Wentworth*, Esq; was appointed Governor in Chief of *New-Hampshire*.

John Wentworth, Esq; was appointed Lieutenant Governor 1717, he died Dec. 12. 1730.

1731, in July, arrives Col. *Dunbar* as Lieut. Governor, he was also Surveyor General of the Woods in *North-America*, with four Deputy Surveyors, principally to prevent waste of the Mastig Trees. Anno 1743, He relinquished those Posts, and was by the Directors of the *East-India* Company appointed Governor of *St. Helena*; there has been no Lieut. Governor appointed since, and Governor *Wentworth* succeeded him as Surveyor of the Woods.

A DIGRESSION.

Concerning Timber, Wood, Lumber, and Naval Stores ;
the Growth, and Manufacture of North-America.

This is a Subject so copious as to require a peculiar Volume, but the † Character of Summary does not permit to expatiate upon this useful Subject.

The Timber Trees of *North-America* for † Construction of shipping and framing of Houses may be reduced to two general Kinds, *Pine* and *Oak*.

The PINES may be subdivided into the *Masting*, or white Pine, the *Pitch Pine* or *Picea*, and others of the Pine Kind used as Lumber. I shall not use any stiff * scholastic

† For this Reason I seldom mention their Quadrupeds commonly called Beasts, their Birds, their Fishes, their Serpentine Kind, and their Insects ; I avoid the useles Vertuoso Part of Natural History concerning Figured Stones, curious Marcasites, extraordinary Petrefactions and Chrysalisations, Shells of all Sorts, &c. Men of that sort of Curiosity may consult peculiar Authors, *v. g.* in *Botany*, Father *Plumier* a *Minime* of *Marsiles*, in his four Voyages to *America* discovered 900 new Plants, especially in the capillery of Tribe ; in this Tribe, *North-America* exceeds any Country upon our Earth or Globe.

‡ *New-England* perhaps excells in good Ax-Men for falling of Trees, and squaring of Timber.

* *P. Turnesfort*, M. D. for many Years Professor of the Royal Garden in *Paris*, a deservedly celebrated Antiquary and Naturalist, as appears by his *Voyage au Levant*, 4to. 2 Vol. *Paris*, 1717 : In his *Institutiones Rei Herbariæ*, seems upon too frivolous Differences, that is, from the Number of Leaves or Needles from the same Theca or Sheath, transfer the noted Naval Store Pines, the White and Pitch Pine to the *Larix*. Classing of Plants, especially Trees by their general Habit, seems to be more obvious or *scientifick*, than the minute Inspections of their Flowers and Seed ; we find *Turnesfort* himself the Prince of *Botanists*, recede from this Rigour in classing of his Leguminous Trees by Differences in the Leaf, *viz. folijs singularibus, folijs ternis, & folijs per conjugationes*. When he comes to use this last Deviation with regard to the Pine Kind, instead of the obvious Habit, he seems not to distinguish well : His general Distribution of the Pine Tribe into *Coniferous*, and *Bacciferous* is natural, but his Subdivision of the *Coniferous* into *Abietes* or Firs *folijs Singularibus, Pinus folijs binis, larices*

lastick Enumerations, which can be of no common Use, but shall endeavour to express myself in an intelligible Manner.

The WHITE PINE or † MASTING PINE may be called *Pinus excellior, cortice lævi folijs quinis angustis perpetuis ex eodem exortu, Conis, Longioribus*; Turnefort calls it, *Larix Americana, folijs quinis ab eodem exortu*. Plum. Some are of very large Dimensions. An. 1736, near *Merimack* River a little above *Dunstable*, was cut a white Pine streight and sound, seven Feet eight Inches Diameter at the Butt-end; the Commissioners of the Navy seldom † contract for any exceeding 36 Inches diameter at the Butt-end, and to be so many Yards in length as they are Inches in Diameter at the Butt-end.

From Time to Time the Commissioners of the Navy agree with Contractors to furnish certain Numbers of specified Dimensions of Masts, Yards and Bowsprits, with his Majesty's Licence for ‖ cutting such Trees: the late Contracts have been from *Piscataqua* Harbour in *New-Hampshire*, and *Casco bay* in the *Province of Main*. The Mast Ships are built peculiarly for that Use, are generally about 400 Tun, navigated with about 25 Men, and carry 45 to 50 good Masts per Voyage. By Act of Parliament there are * Penalties for cutting of Masting Trees without Licence, cognizable by the Court of Vice Admiralty.

Col. *William Dudley* some Years since, in his frequent Surveys of New Townships about 50 or 60 Miles inland,

larices folijs (or Needles) *pluribus quam binis ex eadem theca* or *Sheath*, is not natural, because the *folijs pluribus quam binis* in their external Habit agree with the *folijs binis*, and ought to be called Pines.

† In *New-Hampshire* and *Province of Main*, much good Ship Timber and Masting Trees: in *Duke of York's Grant*, called *Sogadabock*, not much of either.

‡ Col. *Partridge* some Years since had the Masting Contract for ten Years, no Mast to exceed 36 Inches diameter at the Butt-End, he sent Home a few of 38 Inches and two of 42 Inches.

‖ Hard Winters are good for the Sledding Conveyance, but hard Frosts render the Edges of their falling Axes inconveniently brittle.

* See Vol. I. P. 379.

observed white Ash-trees, streight and without Branchings for about eighty Feet, and about three Feet diameter at the But-end, it is as light and much tougher than White-Pine : would not those make stronger Mafts than White-Pine, and in all respects better ? It is true, the Land Carriage for so great a Distance is inconvenient—The Black-Ash has a smaller Leaf than the White-Ash.

White Pine is much used in framing of Houses and in Joiners Work, scarce any of it to be found South of *New-England*. In Joiners Work, it is of a good Grain, soft, and easily wrought ; but soon looses its good Complexion by mildewing ; priming or painting may hide this in many Cases, but in some Cases it is not to be hid, *v. g.* in Flooring ; the Softness of its Texture subjects it to shrink and swell *Hygrometer* like, and consequently never make a good Joint. The best White Pine is from the Upland ; these from Swamps or Marshy Lands, are the most apt to mildew, make a bad Joint, and shake or shiver upon the least Violence. The Apple Pine is of the White Pine kind, but more frowey. †

New-England abounds in Saw-mills of cheap and slight Work, generally carry only one Saw, one Man and a Boy attending of a Mill may in 24 Hours saw four Thousand Feet of White-Pine Boards ; these Boards are generally one Inch thick, and of various Lengths from 15 to 25 Feet, and of various Wedths 1 Foot to 2 Feet at a Medium ; it is reckoned that 40 Boards make 1000 Feet.—These Mills mostly stand upon small Streams, because cheap fitted, but with the following Inconveniencies.

1. As the Country is cleared of Wood and Brush, small Streams dry up.
2. In living small Streams they do not afford Water sufficient to drive the Wheel in Summer.
3. In the Winter they are frozen up.

The Surveyors of the Woods mark the Mastig Trees, and survey the Logs

† *Norway* red Deal Boards answer for Upper Works of Ships, because their Splinters are not so dangerous as Oak. *Norway* white Deal Boards are 9 to 10 Feet long, 1 and quarter to 1 and half Inch thick.

at the Mills, for which they have some Perquisites from Timber Men. A Timberman's Estate consists in Mills and Oxen; Oxen are a more steddly Draught than Horses; in † Logging the Snow must not exceed 2 Feet deep.

Spruce or true † *Firr* grows streight and tapering; is very beautiful; is used as Spars; it is apt to cast or warp, and being

† Misunderstandings with the *Indians* are a great Hindrance in our Timber and Lumber Trade; therefore the *Indians* ought to be awed by 4 or 5 Forts at proper Distances upon our Inland Frontiers, kept in a respectful Condition by the Appearance of some Military Force; and enticed by proper Assortments of Goods, to exchange with their Furrs, Skins, and Feathers.

‖ The commonly called *Scots Furr*, is properly *Pinus folijs binis ex eadem theca*.

I shall enumerate five *Abietes* or *Firrs* of the Growth of *New-England*; this Volume swells too much, I can only mention them.

1. *Abies pectinatis folijs Virginiana, conis parvis subrotundis*. Pluk. *Hemlock*: it is cut into Deal Boards but much inferior to the White Pine: Its Bark is used by the Tanners.

2. *Abies tenuiere folio, fructu deorsum inflexo, minori, ligno exalbado*. The white Spruce Furr of *New-England*; all the *Abietes*, especially the Spruces so called, grow in Swamps or Marshes; the Extremity of a Branch is well represented by *T. I. R. H. Fol. 354*, and its Cone or Fruit in *Fol. 353*.

3. Dit. *Ligno rubente*, Red Spruce.

4. Dit. *Ligno obscuriore*, Black Spruce.

5. *Abies tenuiorebus folijs absque ordine dispositis fructu deorsum inflexo Balsamifera Accadiensis*; the *Fir Turpentine Tree* of *Nova-Scotia* commonly called the *Balsam Gilead Tree* of *Nova-Scotia*. From the Tumors or Blisters in the Bark, by Incision is gathered a thin fragrant Fir Turpentine, which from its Citron like Fragrancy, such as that of the Levant, Balsam, has been called *Balsam Gilead*; it is very hot; some Years since, when *Balsam Capivi* was wanting here, I used it in *Gonorheas*, but it increased the *ardor Urinæ* and some other Symptoms to such a violent Degree, I was obliged to drop it; the name of *Balsam Gilead* gives a prejudice in its favour, but from its great Heat and attraction in all recent Bruises, Wounds and other Ulcers it induces violent Pains, Inflammations and Fluxions upon the Part.

It is a mistaken Notion of many People, that all our Medecinal Balsams or liquid Rozins are from various *Firr-Trees*; I shall here by way of Amusement rectify those Errors by enumerating, and describing the Medecinal Natural Balsams.

1. *Opobalsamum, Balsamum Verum, Gilead, Syriacum, Judaiacum, e meeha*; is a liquid Rozin fragrant as Citron, of a Syrup Consistence; from

being too flexible is not fit for Masts or Yards of any considerable Largeness ; its Twigs with the Leaves are boil'd with a Beer or Drink made with Molasses, and is esteemed good in the Scurvy and the like Fowlnesses of the

from a small Tree or Shrub with pinnated Leaves ending in an impar, on the Top of the Stalk are *hexapetalous* whitish Flowers succeeded by a roundish rugged Fruit ; this Fruit is called *Carpobalsamum*, and the Wood is the *Xylobalsamum* of the Apothecary Shops, but at present not in Practice.

2. The *Balsam Gilead* or Fir Turpentine of *Nova-Scotia*, *Newfoundland*, and *Canada* is from an *Abies tenuiore folio*, already described.

3. *Terebinthina communis*, one of the enumerated Naval Stores, is from the *Pinus folijs ternis ex eadem theca* ; it is whitish, thick and Opaque.

4. *Straßburg* Turpentine, from the *Abies mas Theophrasti*. *Picea major prima sive Abies rubra*. C. B. P. Red Fir : This Turpentine is clearer, paler, and of thinner Consistence than *Venice* Turpentine, of a pleasant Lemon peel Smell.

5. *Venice* Turpentine is from the *Larix folio deciduo conifera*, I. B. The Larch Tree ; this is browner and thicker than the *Straßburg* Turpentine. The *Cedrus Libani et Palestinæ præcella*. Lob. belongs to the *Larices*.

6. *Chio*, and *Cyprus* Turpentine, is not from the Pine kind, but from the *Terabinthus vulgaris*. C. P. P. The Turpentine Tree. It is a Tree Shrub with pinnated Leaves, ending in an impar, the Fruit is a longish hard Nut. This though not of the Pine Kind gives Name to all the Rozins of the Pine Kind. It is thicker and more tenacious than *Venice* Turpentine, and of a pleasant Smell ; that from *Chio* is clear and almost transparent, that from *Cyprus* is full of Drofs and Browner.

7. *Balsam Capivi*. *Balsamum Americanum*. C P P. It comes to us from the *Dutch* Plantations of *Surinam* ; It is from a large Tree with long rounding Leaves, its Fruit is in short Pods. This Balsam is of a bitter hot or rough Taste, does not give that remarkable Violet Smell to the Urine, that Turpentine occasions. By Experience I have found it the most effectual of all the natural Balsams, in internal *Ulcerations*, *Dysenteries*, *Diseases* of the *Lungs*, *Kidneys* and *Bladder*, in the *Fluor æbus* and *Gonorrhœa* : It inviscates the Acrimony and prevents the *Colliquation* of our Juices.

8. *Balsam of Peru* from *Spanish West-Indies* in Earthen Jars ; it is of a redish dark Colour, Consistence of a thick Syrup, fragrant, warm, aromattick Taste ; from a midling Tree with Almond Tree like Leaves, and a Fox glove Flower : This Balsam is also a nervine Medicine internally and externally used.

9. *Balsam of Tolu*, comes in small Calabashes from *Tolu* in the *Spanish*

the Blood and other Juices ; it is much drank in the Northern Parts of *Norib-America*, especially in *Nova-Scotia* and *Newfoundland*.

What is further to be said of the Pine kind, is referred to the Paragraphs of Lumber and Naval-Stores. *

The

nish West Indies of a yellow brown Colour friable by Age, of a fragrant Smell and Aromatick Taste : with this is made the *Syrupus Balsamicus*, used in Affections of the Lungs. It is from the *Soliquæ arbar sive Ceretia*. I. B. with a Pinnated Leaf and foliuous Fruit.

There are several other natural Balsams, but hitherto not introduced into the *Materia Medica*.

* Here once for all, I shall insert some general Annotations concerning *Vegetable Produce*.

There is such a *lusus naturæ* in the Herbs, Shrubs, and Trees between the Tropicks, or in Hot Countries, they are scarce to be reduced to Tribes.

Most of the fine Flowers in the Gardens of *Europe* came from the *Levant* or *Asia*. The Sultans and their Mistresses or *Seraglio* Women, take Pleasure in fine Flowers and delicious Fruits ; the *Basbas* and other Governors of the several Provinces supply them with the most gay, fragrant, and elegant ; most of the Orchard, especially the Stone Fruit, came from thence.

Systematick Writers in any Part of Literature, are much inferior to those who write only of such Things as were discovered or observed in their own Time and Place. I shall mention a few in the Affair of Plants. *Cornuti Canadensium Plantarum Historia* 4to *Paris*, 1635, he was a small Rate *Botanist*. *Hortus Malebaricus* containing elegant Descriptions and Icons of 745 *East India* Plants, done by the Direction and at the Charge of *Draakenstein* Governor of the *Dutch East Indies*, in Folio, published in twelve Parts from *Anno* 1678, to 1693. *Tournefort*, *Corollarium Rei Herbariæ*, 4to *Paris* 1703 in 3 Vol. containing 1356 new Plants which he discovered in his Voyage or Travels to the *Levant*, that is the Islands of the *Archipelago* and the *Lesser Asia*, at the Charge of the King of *France* ; as a Supplement to his *Institutiones Rei Herbariæ* 4to *Paris* 1700 in 3 Vol. whereof two Volumes are composed of elegant Icons, the other Vol. contains a Catalogue of 8846 Plants. His *Histoire des plantes, qui naissent aux environs de Paris, avec leur usage dans la medecine*, is a finished useful Piece of 1037 Plants, printed at *Paris* in Octavo 1698.

As to Time and Place in general with Regard to our Mother-Country, *Anno* 1696—last Edition in 8vo. Mr. *Ray* a Naturalist in his *Synopsis Methodica, Stirpium Britannicarum*, has 1480 Plants, whereof 113 are Trees and Shrubs. With Regard to the Country near *Boston*

The WHITE OAK or OAK for CONSTRUCTION of SHIPPING may be called *Quercus ligno exalbido duriore cortice cinereo leviter rimoso*. We have † great Variety of

in *New-England*, I arrived to the Descriptions of about eleven Hundred indigenous Plants, but was interrupted by * * * * *
 * * * * *
 * * * Plunkenet in his *Phytographia* and *Almagestum Botanicum* published in Folio, *London* 1691 to 1696; he mentions *Benister's* Catalogue of *Virginia* Plants not published at that Time. Sir *Hans Sloan* a noted *Liesbaber* or *Virtuoso*, his *Catalogus plantarum Insulæ Jemaaca*, &c. *London* 1696; there are no Descriptions; the Plants generally were not in his own Knowledge, but an immethodical Rapsdady of Synonima copied from sundry Writers concerning the *West-India* Settlements. There are Enumerations of many *American* Plants with elegant proper coloured Icons in *Catesby's* natural History of *Carolina* and the *Babama* Islands, See *Phil. Transact.* Vol. 36. P. 425; Vol. 37. P. 174, 447; Vol. 38. P. 315; Vol. 39. P. 112, 251; Vol. 40. P. 343; Vol. 44. P. 435, *Catesby's* Essays are in eleven Setts.

Father *Plumier* in his Description of the *American* Plants published at *Paris* near 60 Years since, gives an Account of more *West-India* or *American* Plants than all the *Botanists* of that Age; he made four Voyages to *North-America*, on Purpose, and observes, that it remarkably abounds with *Capillary* Plants.

The two Brothers *Lignons* in the *French* Islands, and *Saracen* in *Canada* in Quality of *Royal Botanists* with Sallaries, have deserved well. *Dierwille* a *French* Surgeon in *Nova-Scotia* sent some curious Plants from *Nova-Scotia* or *L'Accadie* to *Turnesfort*. In *New-England* hitherto we have had no *Botanick* Writer.

Frequently I find some Difficulty to restrain my self against Excursions, I shall conclude this Excursion by observing that in the sixteenth Century, the *Moderns* began to apply themselves to the Knowledge of Plants in some Method; before that Time, Plants were ranged according to their general Appearances, or Virtues, and in a very loose Manner; in that Century many good *Botanists* appeared; *Gesner* the Father of all Natural History, born in *Switzerland* 1516, died of the Plague 1565, his *Botanick* Writings were most of them lost and never published; *Turnesfort* followed his Method of classing the Plants by their Flower and Seed.

† These *Botanick* Excursions must prove tedious to most Readers; I shall therefore slightly describe only a few of the Oaks that are most common in *New-England*, partly by their *Classical* Latin Names, and partly by their common *Englisch* Appellations.

Oaks, but this is the only Oak required by Contract with the Ship-Builders for Construction. Black Oak for the bottom of Vessels always under Water answers well, and being very *acid*, as I am informed, is not so subject to the eating

1. The *White Oak* of the Ship Builders, is a large Tree, with Ash coloured Bark of small and frequent Crevices, the Leaves resemble those of a Dwarf Oak, *Robur III. Clusij*, or rather like that of T. I. R. H. Tab. 349, on Inch pedicles, the Acorns sometimes, more than one from a common half Inch pedicle from the *Sinus* of the Leaves near the Extremities of the *Surculi*, *paraboloid*, *exos*, one Inch, transverse Diameter three Quarters of an Inch, of a pleasant Taste, the *cupulæ* are Shallow and *verrucose*.

2. The *Red Oak*, while young all the Bark is smooth like the Beech Tree, when old the Bark of the lower Part of the Tree becomes rough ; it is a large spreading Tree with a large shining Leaf *Esculi divifura*, that is lacinated to sharp Points, a large Acorn but no pleasant Taste, generally the Wood is of a reddish cast and very *porous* ; this Species is subdivided into many distinct Sorts, viz. red, gray, blue, yellow, &c.

This Oak being very spongy is of short Duration in use, it rives easily into Staves for Molasses, Bread, and dry Cask.

N. B. *Quercus parva sive Phagus Græcorum, et Esculus Plinij*, C. B. P. or the *Esculus* of the Ancients, is a Shrub Oak with a deeply lacinated Leaf, its Name is from the peculiar Sweetness of its Acorn ; for this Reason in *Maryland*, *Virginia* and *Carolina* all Acorns, Beech Nuts, Walnuts, and other Nuts of the Forest are called *MAST* from Masticare, and when plenty, it is said to be a good Mast Year for feeding of Swine or making of Pork.

3. *Black Oak*, perhaps so called from its dark coloured Bark : may be called *Quercus Americana magna, patula, Cortice obscuriore rimoso folijs Majoribus Esculi divifura* ; may be used as Plank in the under Water Parts of a Ship ; it makes the best Charcoal.

4. *Swamp Oak* is from strong moist Land, such as White Pine requires ; it is of a midling Size, its Leaf like that of *Ilex*. (T. I. R. H. Tab. 350) but not so rigid and spinolous ; the Acorns are Oval, of a pleasant Taste, in dusky Scally Cups.

5. *Chestnut Oak*, so called from the Inequalities or *rimæ* of its Bark, resembling the Bark of Chestnut Trees : it is of a fine Grain, and by some used in Construction.

6. Common *Black Shrub Oak*, grows from 5 to 10 Feet high, *patulous*, smooth Bark, deeply sinuated somewhat rigid Leaf, Acorns small from the Body of the Trunk on short Pedicles, bitter Taste, and Scally Cup.

eating or boring of the *Teredines* or Worms of the hot Countries ; some think that Black-Oak may be used as Timber but not as Plank. In *Virginia* and the *Carolinas* there is an Oak called live or ever green Oak, *Quercus latifolia perpetuo virens, caudice contorto et valde ramoso* ; it is very hard stubbed Shrub Trunk, but of a cross Grain fit for Compas Timber, that is for crooked rising Timbers, Standards, and Knees ; but not for Plank. Excepting this Live-oak, all Oaks South of *New-England* are soft and spongy, they rive well for Staves, but in Ship-building they soon rot. In *Great-Britain* and *Ireland* there is no other Distinction of Oaks but Upland and Marsh-oak ; their Oak is *Quercus vulgaris brevioribus et longis pediculis*, I. B. 1. 70, the Leaves resemble those of our Shrub white Oak, the Leaf has a short or no *pedicule*, unequally lacinated or rather deeply dented with 4 or 5 Dentations each Side of the Leaf, the Acorn some have shorter some longer Pedicles. *Great-Britain* does not afford Oak sufficient for their own Use, they import much from the *Baltick* or *East Country*. *Pomerania* ships off the best Oak Timber and Plank ; *Koningberg* in *Ducal Prussia* ships off considerably ; the best *East Country* Oak

7. A lesser *Black Shrub Oak* resembling the former, but of a distinct Sort.

8. *White Shrub Oak*, 3 or 4 Feet high, *Vimineous*, Leaf dented like that of the *Swamp Oak*, Acorns small as a Pea, *Sessile* in the *Sinus* of the Leaves, and Scally Cup.

9. A lesser *White Shrub Oak*, resembling the former, but of a distinct Kind.

N. B. Such waste barren Lands as in *Great Britain* are called Heaths ; in *New England* are called Shrub Oak and Huckleberry Plains, from these Shrubs which are their only Produce. In *Great Britain* there are several Species of Heaths, the most common, is the *Erica vulgaris humilis semper virens flore purpureae et albo*. I. B. common Heath ; in *New-England* are several Species of Shrub Oaks, the most common is the large *Black Shrub Oak*, and several Sorts of the *Vitis Idæa*, or Huckle berries, the most common may go by the name of *Vitis Idæa communis folijs subrotundis non crenatis, fructu nigro minus succulento in fasciculis*.

Timber

Timber and Plank, comes down the *Oder* to *Statin*, and down the *Vistula* or *Wefer* to *Dantzick*; this River of *Wefer* is navigable a long way up into *Germany* and *Polland*, and is the chief Mart in *Europe* for importing of Herrings and exporting of Grain.

The next Oak in Goodness if to be used in Ship-building or Construction, is *Swamp Oak* so called; see the Annotations.

The *Black-Oak*, some find that it may do for Timbers; not long since a Gentleman by way of Experiment built a Ship, Timber and Plank of Black Oak called the *Black Oak Galley*.

Live Oak in the South Parts of *North-America* is used for Construction, it is a short stubbed Tree, hard Wood.

Mahogany Wood of the *West Indies* between the Tropicks is used in Ship-building there; it is durable, and in receiving Shot does not Splinter; for Cabinet and Joiners Work, it is excellent, much surpassing the red Cedar of *Carolina* and *Bermudas*, which has a disagreeable Perfume.

Cedar of *Bermudas*, see Vol. I. P. 148. it is excellent for Sloops, the Worm does not Seize it, it is light and of quick growth, may be cut every twenty Years, Plank thin and narrow; crooked Timber, Beams, and Masts, are brought from the Continent, for their Sloops.

In *Newfoundland* they build Fishing and Coasting Vessels of many sorts of Wood.

From the *Cuprussus* of *Carolina*, they make Canoes and Periaugues that may carry fifty Barrels; it is of a good Grain but soft. It is of the Cedar or Berry-bearing Kind of Pine, grows tall, affords good Boards and Shingles.

THE AMERICAN PITCH PINE. This is the Mother of the Naval Stores of Turpentine, Tar, Pitch, Rozin, and Oil of Turpentine, and may be expressed by a short † Description. *Pinus Americana communis, sive Picea,*

† The name of a Plant expressing a short Description thereof, is of great use in Botany, being the most natural.

patula, cortice Scabro rimoso, folijs ternis ex eadem theca, conis mediocribus turbinatis duris quasi sessilibus vix deciduis. It grows on a dry Sandy Soil. The Leaves about three Inches long with a Prominent Longitudinal Rib instead of a *Sulcus*; T. I. R. H. Tab. 355. Fig. A. well represents its *Amentaceous* Flowers, and Fig. G. represents its fresh Cones. In *New England* there is another distinct Pitch Pine, called yellow Pine, it is taller, Bark not so rough and dark, Wood with a yellow Cast, and not so knotty, does not yield Turpentine so plentifully. In the *Carolinas*, much Pitch Pine, harder than that of *New-England*, so as to sink in Water; it is saw'd into Boards for the *West India* Islands; it is used for masting, being streighter than that of *New-England*.

1. TURPENTINE of *North-America*, is a liquid Rosin, gathered by Boxing the Pitch Pine Trees in the lower Part of their Trunk. 2. White Pine boxed affords a Turpentine brighter than that of the Pitch Pine, but not in plenty, and therefore neglected or not followed. 3. The *Abies* or Spruce gives a very liquid Turpentine by Incision of Bladders or *Tubercules* in the Bark, it is not gathered in Quantities, therefore of no general Naval Use. 4. From the White Cedar is gatherd from the Bark in Lumps or Grains a solid dry Rosin, being concreted *Exudations*, and by some is called *Olibanum* or Frankincense. 5. Pitch Pine Knots boil'd in Water, gives a Top by way of Scum, a Semiliquid Rosin resembling Burgundy Pitch.

New-England Turpentine, is of a Honey Consistence, that of the *Carolinas* is less liquid, resembling Tallow or Slush; *New England Turpentine*, yeild about three Gallons Oil per Ct. wt. that of the *Carolinas* not exceeding two Gallons, Turpentine *residuum* in Distillation is about 7 12ths, called Rosin. The Still not exceeding one half full of Turpentine, lest it should boil over. Our chymical and *Pharmacopœa* Writers seem not to be practical Distillers; *Quincey* much consulted by young Practitioners,

advifes

advifes to add Water to the Turpentine, whereas the more Phlegm in the Turpentine the more tedious and dangerous is the Diffillation. In diffilling, if the Turpentine boils up, a Sprinkling of Water makes it sparkle and fly, but a large Quantity of Water foon quells it — The Stills in *Boston*, are fmall, three Barrels of Turpentine of 300 Wt. each may be wrought off in three Hours, the principal Care in Diffilling, is in the beginning left the Phlegm boiling over fhould blow up the Still; as the Phlegm goes off the Still fubfides, and the Danger is over. At firft comes over more Phlegm than Oil, the Proportion of Phlegm gradually diminifhes to the ceafing of the watery Ebullition, and for a fhort Time Oil only paffes, and more abundantly, but foon comes turbid, and if the Fire is not removed the *refiduum* or Rofin is fpoil'd; after the Oil is drawn off and the Fire removed or extinguifhed for an Hour, the Rofin is to run off from the Still.

Varnifh is from one half Rofin and one half Oil of Turpentine boiled up together, and is fold at the fame Price with Oil of Turpentine.

TAR is from light Wood fo called, the Knots of fallen Pitch Pine; every 14 Years they reckon that the Pine Lands afford a fufficient Crop for the Tar Kilns. In *Carolinas* the People are not fo much indulged as formerly in gathering of Touchwood at Random in the proprietary Lands, and the Exports of Tar and Pitch from the *Carolinas* is not fo much as formerly. The largeft Kiln for Tar in *Carolina* in my Knowledge was of 960 Barrels; this is too great a Risk, becaufe in blowing up, all is loft: Four Hundred Barrels is a good Kiln, and the running of the firft 100 Barrels is not much inferior to that of *Stockholm*. Anno 1746, The Difference in Price between *Swedes* and *American* Tar was 21 *f* *Swedes*, and 16 *f* *New-England* per Barrel; *Swedes* Tar is cooler and better for Cordage; by Act of Parliament only the firft half of the running of a Kiln is to be ufed

as Tar, the other half to be boiled into Pitch, Penalty Forfeiture of the Kilns ; this Act is not put in Execution. Green Tar which has an additional Premium, is made from green Pitch Pine Trees stript of the Bark eight Feet or thereabouts up from the Root of each Tree ; a Slip of the Bark of about four Inches in Breadth, having been left on one Side of each Tree, and such Trees shall stand one Year at the least before cut down for making of Tar. No Certificate Bill, shall be made out by any Officer of the Customs for any Tar, &c. imported from the Plantations, nor any Bill made out by the Commissioners of the Navy, to entitle the Importer of Tar to any Premium ; unless the Certificate of the Governor, Lieutenant Governor, Collector of the Customs, and Naval Officer, or any two of them, do express that it has appeared to them by the Oath of the Owner that such Tar &c.—Tar that leaves a yellowish Stain is good, a black Stain is of a bad burning Quality.

Pitch is made by boiling 3 Barrels of Tar into two Barrels, in *South Carolina* this is done in Coppers ; in *North-Carolina* it is done in clay'd Cisterns by setting Fire to the Tar. At present scarce any Tar is made in *New-England*, and very little Turpentine is gathered—A Barrel of Tar should gage 31 and half Gallons, a Barrel of Pitch should be 2 and half Ct. wt. Neat. Tar should be free from Water and Dross, Pitch free from all Dirt and Dross, Turpentine free from Water and Chips, and Stones.

The *Horn-beam* Trees : or *Carpinus Dod*, and the Button-tree (so called from its Seeds growing in Clusters resembling Buttons,) or *Platanus occidentalis*, because of their cross or confused Grain not liable to rive or split, are used for Windlances, Blocks, and Turners-work.

This Section swells too much, I shall refer Lumber and other Woods to the Article of Natural History in the *Appendix*, and at present only mention the following Observations.

Shingles

Shingles are made by cutting, splitting and shaving of certain Woods into the Form of a Slate or flat Tile for covering the Roofs of Houses; in *New-England* they are made of white Cedar, or *Cedrus excelsior ligno exalbido non olente in udis proveniens*; this Wood is easily split and managed, but may be furrowed by the Rain, therefore *Shingles* from white Pine are preferable; these may continue good 20 to 30 Years. In *Carolina* *Shingles* are made of Pitch Pine and Cyprus. In *Jamaica* they use Bullet Wood, which may last 100 Years.

Clapboards for facing of Houses, and *Laths* for Plastering are made of the same Woods.

Red Cedar; or *Cedrus folio Cupressi atro, medio ligno rubro duro*; this is of excellent Use for Posts fixed in the Earth, it will hold good for a Century.

The common Chestnut of *North-America*, or *Castanea amplissimo folio, fructu moliter echinato*. T. I. R. H. the Fruit is smaller, and *capsula* not so much *echinated* as in *Europe*. It rives well, and is most durable in Rails in fencing of Lands.

In *North-America* are many † Varieties of Walnuts. The Hunters of the Woods say that there are almost as great a Variety of Walnuts as of Apples; their general Distinction is into Black and White, from the Colour of the Wood.

† *Hickery* or white Walnut. This is the most common Walnut of *New England*, a midling Tree, the *central luminæ* or *annuli* with Age, become dark like black Walnut; the Nuts are small oval and smooth, too hard to be crackt by the Teeth. This is our best Fire Wood.

2. *Nux Juglans Virgimiana nigra*. H. L. B. Black Walnut; the Wood is of a dark brown, is much used in Joiners and Cabinet Work.

3. *Nux Juglans fructu tenero, fragili putamine* C. B. P. Shag-bark of *New-England*. It is not so common as the *Hickery*, and of a smaller Habit, the Bark exfoliates in Coats (as the Birch and Button Tree) the Nut is easily broke by the Teeth.

4. *Nux Juglans Porcorum*, the Pig Nut, a middling spreading Tree, exfoliating Bark; the *putemen* or Shell of the Fruit, is not so brittle as the Shag-bark, nor so hard as the *Hickery*, the *nucklens*, is considerable and of a pleasant Taste.

Vitis or Grape Vines in *New-England*, Natives, are five or six distinct Sorts * that are in my Knowledge.

Cerasus, or *Cherries*, Natives of *New England*, in my Knowledge are four or five distinct || Kinds.

Our

* 1. *Vitis Americana Sylvestris, Uvis nigris, Pruni Sylvestris magnitudine folijs magnis, Vulpina dicta Virginiana.* Pluk. The Fox Grape or wild Vine with black Grapes. It is the most common of all our Grapes, grows generally near Ponds, not exceeding 4 to 7 in a *racemus*, ripen into Grapes, not much succulent, and of a disagreeable Tobacco Taste.

2. *Do. Uvis albidis, Vulpina Virginiana alba.* Pluk. White Fox Grapes differs from the former only in Colour, and less frequent.

3. *Vitis quinquefolia Canadensis Scandens.* T. I. R. H. Five Leaved Ivy of *Virginia*, or *Virginia Creeper*. It creeps and climes to a great Extent, Leaves of a bright green Colour, makes agreeable Arbours, very plenty in the Woods: the *Racemi* or Clusters are laxe, the Grape or Fruit is in Form and Bigness of the *Uvæ Corinthiacæ* or Currants used in Puddings.

4. *Vitis sylvestris Americana, Platani folio, uva racemosa, acinis rotundis parvis acidulis, nigro cæruleis.* The small American Grape Vine with large Leaves and small black Grapes, in laxe Clusters.

5. *Vitis Americana Sylvestris, Platani folio, uva racemosa, acinis rotundis parvis rubris;* differs from the former only in the deep red Colour of its Grape.

|| 1. *Cerasus Sylvestris rubro fructu Americana.* Common wild Cherry. It is frequent in the Woods, and flowers more early than the *racemosa*; is an *Arborescent frutex*, in taste flatter than *Carasa sativa*, or common red Cherry.

2. *Cerasus sylvestris Americana racemosa præcocior fructu majori nigro.* The greater wild Cluster Cherry or Birds Cherry. A midling Tree, the *racemus* of the Flowers and Fruit is from the Extremities of the Branches, not from the *Sinus* of the Leaves as the *Padus*. I. B. The Cherry is larger than the following, black succulent and sweet; its Wood is used in Joiners and Cabinet Work.

3. *Cerasus Americana Sylvestris racemosa, fructu minore nigro dulci.* The common Bird Cherry of *New-England*, a midling Tree, Flowers and Fruit in *racemi*, like the *Ribesia*, and somewhat larger; in *New-England* it is used in Place of the *officinal* or *Cerasus Sylvestris fructu nigro*. I. B. the small Birds affect it much.

4. *Cerasus Americana Sylvestris humilis fructu nigricante non eduli.* The American Dwarf crabbed Birds Cherry, does not exceed the Height of 7 or 8 Feet, it is not a *Padus*, because the *racemi* are not from the *Sinus* of the Leaves, but from the Extremities of the Branches or Twigs; this Cherry is smaller than the former, dark red, and of an acerb choaky Taste.

Our Apple-Trees are all from *Europe*; ten to twelve Bushels of Apples are required to make one Barrel of Cyder, one Barrel Cyder gives not exceeding four Gallons of proof Spirit: beginning of October is the height of Cyder making.

Sassaparas ex Florida ficulneo folio. C. B. P. is plenty in *New-England*, and not so strong a Perfume as further South: it is an Ingredient in the Decoction of the Woods so called, and used in Venereal and other Pforick Disorders.

I omitted in the proper Place to insert, That the right merchantable Hoops, are from the Saplings of White Oak and of *Hickoree*, White Oak is the best. Staves for tight Cask are from the White Oak, Red Oak Staves are used for Molasses and dry Cask: one thousand Staves make from 30 to 35 Hogheads of 100 Gallons each.

Some Miscellany Observations relating to this DIGRESSION.

In *New-England* Ship building, a Vessel fitted to Sea, two Thirds of the Cost is a Profit to the Country, the other Third is Iron, Cordage, Sail-Cloth, and small Stores from *Great-Britain*.

Timber if of too old Growth, is dotted: if too young, it's sappy: neither of them fit for Construction.

There are several good Acts of the *British* Parliament and of the Legislatures of the several Colonies concerning the Seasons and Times of falling of Timber; as also con-

I have not Room to mention the great Varieties of wild Roses, Goose-berries, Currants, Brambles, Rasp-berries, &c.

All the Apple Trees in *New England* are *Exoticks*; as I formerly hinted, *La Hontan* perhaps is mistaken in saying, that he did see several *European* Fruit Trees Natives upon the River *Linci*, probably they are the Relicks of a former *French* Settlement there.

Thuya Theophrasti. C. B. P. *Arbor Vitæ.* Clus. Tree of Life of *New England*, is by Mistake called *Savine*. *Sabina* is not well described by *Botanists*, some with *Boerhaave* say, it is *bacciferous*, some with *Ray* call it *Conifer*: the Ambiguity may proceed from its bearing seldom, and not till very old.

cerning

cerning the proper Seasons of killing these Beasts that afford Fur, Skins, and Hides; but little attended to, and perhaps never put in Execution.

Clearing a new Country of Wood, does not render the Winters more moderate but conduces to its being more healthful: the Damp of Wood Lands produces *intermitting, Pleuritick, Peripneumonick, Dysenterick, and Putrid Fevers.*

Where Trees and other Growth are large it is a sign of good Land. Chestnut, Walnut, and Beach Trees are symptoms of good Land. Alder is good Meadow Ground.

We have in the Woods Variety of beautiful flowering Shrubs; but few of them flower in Winter, the most valuable Qualification for a flowering Shrub.

For peculiar Things of this kind, if we consult the most celebrated Dictionaries, we are led astray, for instance, *Bailey* describes Tar, “*A Sort of gross fatty Liquor issuing from the Trunks of old Pine Trees.*”

In midling Climates Timber or Wood is generally spungy or light by alternate Relaxtions and Bracings from heats and colds, consequently of no good Use or Duration; thus it is from *New-England* to *Carolina*: further North the Timber is solid and heavy, fit for permanent Construction, *v. g.* in *New-England, Nova Scotia* and *Canada*; still further North the Timber is too small Shrubby and narry; in the hot Countries are many Species of hard Wood of slow growth, good for Wainscoting and other Joiners Work; Summary does not allow me to enumerate them.

Summer built Vessels are of better Use than those of any other Season

The Fire Wood near *Boston* is much exhausted, we are under a necessity of fetching it from the *Province of Main*, and Territory of *Sagadahock*. A Wood Sloop with three Hands makes about 15 Voyages *per Ann.* from the Eastward to *Boston*, may carry about 30 Cord Fire Wood each Voyage.—A Cord of Wood is 8 Feet lengthwise, per 4 Feet height, of 4 Feet Sticks or Logs. A Kiln for

for Charcoal to Furnaces, Bloomeries and Refineries of Iron, is generally of 20 Cord Wood, and generally may yeild 10 Cart-Load of Charcoal at 100 Bushels per Load.

At smelting Furnaces they observe that young black Oak makes the best Coal. One Acre of Wood Land at a medium yeilds about 40 Cord Wood ; one Cord of Wood yeilds 40 to 50 Bushels Charcoal.

Our Seasons are uncertain ; in open Winters the Sap rises too soon, and a subsequent hard Frost makes the Bark split and peal off ; thus at Times our Fruit Trees particularly suffer.

Timber under 12 Inches is called *Ranging Timber*, above 12 Inches it is called *Tun Timber*, Standards and Knees are called *Compas Timber*, the *Compas Timber* to the Northward is best.

Our Trees, especially the Oaks, while growing, are much subject to the † *Teredo* or Worm, therefore in all new built Ships these Wormholes in the Plank must be carefully spiked.

The Ships built in *Boston* exceed all of other building Yards, the many Merchants and Ship-Masters, good Connoisseurs, transiently inspect them, and every bad Piece of Timber or length of Plank is censured. In *Newbury* where they are not much inspected, the Builders act at Pleasure, and as the Contracts are generally to be paid in Goods, they build accordingly ; thus a noted Builder *T. W.* jocosely said, *that he had built for ——— a Callicoe Ship.* The other Country building Places are still

† There are Varieties of *Teredines* or Wood eating Insects ; I shall upon this occasion only mention two. 1. An *Ascarides* or Magget like *Teredo*, which preys upon the Wooden Wharfs in *Boston* and elsewhere. 2. The *Xylophagus marinus major navibus infestus*, it is pernicious to Ships in hot Countries, especially in their first Voyages ; lately it did damage in the Harbour of *Newport* of the Colony of *Rhode-Island* ; this is not the same with the Insect which makes the Worm Holes in our Timber Trees while a growing : neither is that which a few Years since, 1730, and increased for 8 or 9 Years, seized the Piles or *Paalen* of the *Dykes* in *Holland*, threatning an Inundation, but were destroyed by a hard frosty Winter.

worse, particularly *North River*, where instead of what is reckoned Ship-Timber, they use Forest-wood of any Sort; these Vessels with repairs last only two or three Voyages, and are designed as a Bite upon Ship Buyers at Home.

Timber used Green or with the Sap up, is like *fenum madide repositum*, it soon tends to Putrefaction: this Sap may be extracted by macerating or soaking in Salt Water, In Ship Building, they ought to use *only White Oak* for Timber, Plank and Trunnels; and these as much as may be without Sap, † Rot, or Worm Holes.

|| Oak if long seasoned or dry'd, becomes vapid or dry rotted, and does not last; We have lately had a notorious Instance of this: Cord-Fire Wood to the N. E. of *Boston* cut before our late War with the *French* and their *Indians*, during the War of a few Years, could not be carried off; upon a Peace it was shipt to *Boston*, it

† The *Annuli* or *annuolæ* Increments of Trees begin from the Center of their transverse Sections or Heart of the Tree; and in the decline (Trees like Animals, for many Years according to the nature and Construction of Individuals of their several Species increase, then for some Years are at a State or Stand, and afterwards are upon the decline; thus our First or ancient Growth of Timber is not good, our Second Growth perhaps may equal that of *Great-Britain*) the Dottedness, Ceriocity, or *tabes* begins naturally, progressive from the Center; this is most remarkable in the spongy Timber of Red Oak. One may blow Spittle through a Stave of 4 Feet length; Its *annuli*, or *circular Laminae*, in the transverse Sections are noted, and after surveying, if Red Oak, and some other Trees, are used for Monument Trees, by the Number of the surcresant *Laminae* we compute the Number of Years from the Survey; therefore it is better to mark Monument Trees upon the Bark, which does not alter, than upon the Wood substance where the Marks are yearly enveloped.

|| A Wood Fire is more pleasant to the Sight and Smell than that of Pit coal, but its warming Influences is not so diffusive; it searches more, but is not so steady and lasting, its Smoke and Vapour is more offensive to the Eyes, it discolours and dry rots Paper Prints more than Pit-coal. We have lately in *Charlestown* adjoining to *Boston* made an Essay, for discovering of Pit coal? if it succeeds, by Act of Assembly Wood ought to be prohibited for Use in firing in and near *Boston*; otherways than in Charcoal for the Use of Furnace of Bloomeries and Refineries.

burnt

burnt like Stubble, of no Duration, leaving no Coal, and the Ashes not profitable to the Soap-boiler.

* Oak Timber from thick Wood Lands is not good.

Next to the Oare; in all Iron Works, Wood or Charcoal is the most essential: here we may observe, that Iron Works require only 3 Men who may be called Artificers, *viz.* a Forgerman, a Carpenter, and Collier; the others are only common Labourers.

When the Sun does not shine, *Les hommes des bois*, Swampeers or Wilderness Men, distinguish the Courses or Corners of Winds by. 1. Mosses growing most plentifully on the North Side of old dotted Trees; 2. Pines branching most Southward. 3. Trees reclining generally Eastward, theirs from the prevailing of the Westerly Winds, Sir *John Nerborough* observed the same in *South America*. This Observation holds good all over *America*. 4. The Rings in the transverse Section of Trees, which are most compact Northward.

There is no Author who has wrote tolerably well concerning the Natural History of *New-England*. †

When *Sweden* began to impose upon *Great-Britain* in the Exportation of their Naval Stores, an Act of Parlia-

* Oak Timber called Day Oak, from Places well cleared, is better than that from Wood Lands where there is not the Benefit of the Sun and free Air; our second Growth of Timber or pasture Oak is almost equal in Quality to that of *Great-Britain*,

In all Oak Timber there is an acid Juice which corrodes Iron (therefore the *French Spiking* does not answer so well as our Trunnelling of Ship Plank) and the Timber itself; therefore it ought to be seasoned either by drying, or by (this is better) soaking in Salt-Water to extract this acid Juice. Red Oak, the most spongy, abounds most with this corrosive Acid.

† *Josselyn* frequently quoted, arrived in *Boston* 1663, and resided in *New-England* many Years, published a small Book called eight Years Observations, printed in *London*, 1672, as a Natural History of the Country; it abounds with gross Mistakes, *v. g.* "some Frogs when they sit upon their breech are a Foot high, and some as long as a Child one Year old. *Barley* frequently degenerates into Oats," here he was imposed upon, by some Oat and Barley Seed intermixed as frequently happens: "in *New-England*, no Woodcocks, no Quails" N.B. they are very plenty.

ment was made allowing certain Premiums upon the importation of certain Naval Stores from *English America*. †

In Rope-making by the Addition of Tar, the Cordage acquires one fifth more in Weight, the Rope-makers great Gains — A Rope-walk for Merchants Use need not exceed 200 Fathom : because 200 Fathom yarn when twisted makes 120 Fathom Cable.

† In the Miscellany Article of a Section, I sometimes insert things which should have been inserted in their proper Places but were forgot.

Here should have been inserted some short Account of Dr. *Barkley's* Tar-Water used as a Medicine ; but as most Readers are not in the Taste of Natural History, I have already exceeded too much in that respect ; and here shall only observe, that his Directions for making of it are. A Gallon of cold Water to a Quart of Tar workt thoroughly together with a flat stick for five or six Minutes, after three Days the Tar being thoroughly subsided, decant the above, and Bottle it for Use ; at a Medium one Pint drank per *diem* at Intervals upon an empty Stomach : It may be made weaker by a less Proportion of Tar or less stirring according to the Constitution and Stomach of the Patient. As Dr. *Barkley* favoured Boston with some Sermons agreeable to the People in *New-England*, his Medicine *ex verbo sacerdotis* is much used there, and I have had the Opportunity of observing the effects thereof. 1. In Ladies of a soft fine fair Complexion a

‡ The Premiums at present are, for Masts, Yards, and Bowsprits, per Ton of 40 Feet girt Measure	_____	_____	£. 1
Merchantable Tar. 8 Barrels.	_____	_____	2 4
Green Tar _____ dit.	_____	_____	4
Pitch _____ dit.	_____	_____	1
Turpentine _____ dit.	_____	_____	1 10

There must be a Plantation Certificate that they are of the Growth or Produce of our Colonies : upon landing the Pre-emption to be offered to the Commissioners of the Navy : if 20 Days after landing the Commissioners do not contract for the same, the Owners may dispose of them at Pleasure, and receive the Præmium.

long Use of it gives their Countenance, a fallow, that is a yellow greenish Cast. 2. As Tar is a Creature of the Fire, and therefore *Caustick*, I observe, it has a bad Effect in all *Heckticks* and *Hæmorrhages*, and inflammatory Cafes. 3. In vapid Disorders of the nervous System it is of good Use, if not used too long ; if used too long, its Effects are more violent or destructive to the Constitution, than the habitual drinking of Rum or Brandy. N. B. of all these I can produce special Vouchers.

4. This is no quack Medicine, because it is no *Noftrum*, and published by a benevolent Clergyman without any Design of lucrative Profit ; his Friend in publishing a considerably large Book of many Hundreds of Cafes exactly in the Form and Universality of quack Recommendations is a Disparagement.

The *Prerogatives* of Provincial Governors *multiplying Members* or Representatives from new Places to the General Assembly *ad libitum*, is a Matter of great Consequence to our Colonies : as this has been lately assumed in the small Government of *New-Hampshire*, I cannot close this Section, without taking some further Notice of the same.

There is a Law of this Province called the *Triennial Act*, by which the Qualification of Members, and of those who may elect them is stated, the Method of calling and governing the Meetings of the Electors is regulated, and the longest Term an Assembly may subsist limited. June 4, 1748, the Assembly became dissolved in Course by Virtue of this Law ; from which Time to the 3d of *January* following there was no Assembly in Being ; in this Interval the Governor received the Instruction, Vol. II. p. 35. And besides the Places mentioned in said Instruction, the Freeholders of *Pelham* and *Methuen* are ordered to unite and chuse one Representative for both Places at a joint Meeting held at *Pelham* : this was a novel Thing, to assemble the Electors of two or five Towns in one Body : in *Scotland*, where by the Act of the Union

Parliament (not by Prerogative,) 4 or 5 Towns were classed to send one Member or Representative, each Town voted separately for a Representative, and those Representatives by Vote sent one of their own Number as a Member of Parliament; but in a different Manner the Freeholders of the Towns of *Dunstable*, *Merrimack*, *Holles*, *Monson*, and *Nottingham* West, are ordered to unite in one Meeting to be held at *Dunstable* and chuse one Member for the whole as a consolidated Body; this was done, but no Return made, as I am informed.

After the late running of the Line with *Massachusetts-Bay* Government, several Parts of Townships and other Settlements formerly in *Massachusetts-Bay* fell within this Province; as the Assembly were desirous that the Polls and Estates of these Annexations should contribute to the Charge of Government; by a temporary Act, they incorporated them by the Name of *Districts* with the same Appellations, as before, and the Fragments from the *Massachusetts* Townships, viz. of *Almsbury* and *Salisbury* were made one District; from *Methuen* and *Dracut* one District, *Haverhill* one District, &c: this Act was frequently renewed for short Periods, only that they might contribute towards the Charge of Government; but after repeated Application of the Inhabitants, they had the Privilege of Townships added, but still temporary; some of these Districts were made Townships by Charter, thus *Dracut* was made a Town by the Name of *Pelham*: about seven Months after calling the Assembly the last District Act expired; notwithstanding their legal Existence expiring, *Methuen*, v. g. had a Representative in the Assembly.

By the Triennial Act, the Select-men of each Place sending Representatives, are to call the qualified Voters within their Precincts to meet and proceed to a Choice; but there was no legal Authority for the Select-men of one Town or District to call a joint Meeting of the Electors of two or five Places, and therefore was in Propriety a
tumultuous

sumultuous Assembly : thus were two of the excluded Members chosen.

The Governor was from Home required to communicate the Lords Justices additional Instruction of *June 30. 1748*, to the Members of the General Assembly concerning this Affair ; which he never did in Form, they only obtain'd a Transcript of it by the Courtesy of a private Hand as a Favour ; and the Governor's Friends insisted that they should first admit these disputed Members, and afterwards enter upon the Merits of the Case. I have no Concern in the Affair, and endeavour only impartially to represent Facts.

N. B. By the Royal Charter to the Colony of *Rhode-Island*, their Assembly is to determine what Towns have Power to send Representatives to the Assembly.

As this is a petty inconsiderable Province or Government, very irregular and factious in their Œconomy, and affording no Precedents that may be of exemplary Use to the other Colonies ; I omit (to ease the Summary) many Articles, which in the other Colonies are deduced at length, as of good Use and Information. Perhaps if this Government were annihilated, and annexed to the neighbouring Province ; it might be of Benefit, for their Protection in Cases of War with the neighbouring *French* and *Indians* or Insurrections, and for good Order, and to ease their Charges of Government.





SECTION X.

Concerning the Colony of

Rhode-Island.

I Shall not repeat what I have already mentioned in general, concerning the earliest *European Discoveries* and Settlements in *America*.*

This Colony was not originally or immediately from *England*, it proceeded from the neighbouring Colony of *Massachusetts-Bay*; and was at first made up of the Emigrants and † Banished from thence, because of dissenting from their generally received Way of religious Worship; these Emigrants were *Puritans* of *Puritans*, and by Degrees refined so much that all their Religion was almost vanished, afterwards it became a Receptacle of any People without Regard to Religion or social Worship: and their Modes of Civil Government were very variable and defective.

* See Vol. I. P. 63, &c. For the first *British Discoveries* and Settlements there. See P. 109, &c. and P. 203, &c. the first settling of *New-England*. P. 364, &c.

† These Banishments were under Pretence of preserving the publick Peace, and preventing of Sectary Infection; and as is natural to all Zealots and Bigots, they fell into the same Error of Rigidity, which they complained of upon their Emigration from the Church of *England*. At a general Synod in *Newtown* near *Boston*, which was called *August 30, 1637*, eighty erroneous Opinions were presented, debated, and condemned; and by the General Assembly or Legislature of the Colony, *October 2* following, some Persons were Banished.

There were some Incidents, which favoured the first *English* Settlements. 1. A few Years before the *English* came to *New-Plymouth*, there prevailed some malignant contagious very mortal Distempers amongst the *Indians* from *Penobscot* to *Narraganset*, which made Room for a safe Settlement. 2. Several of the neighbouring *Indian* Nations were instigated to destroy one another; thus the *Narragansets* assisted the *English* to destroy the *Pequods* 1637; *Myantomy* the great Sachem of the *Narragansets* was made Prisoner by *Uncas* the Sachem of the *Mobegins*, and was put to Death 1643.

In the *British* Acts of Parliament, this Colony is named *Rhode-Island*, *Providence Plantations*, and the *Narraganset Country* or *King's Province*: originally these were distinct Associations or Plantations, but since have been united, and by Charter incorporated into one Colony or Jurisdiction. I shall briefly mention the Origin of these several distinct Settlements.

Mr. *Roger Williams* came over from *England* to *Salem* 1630, he succeeded Mr. *Shelton* Minister of *Salem* 1634, and because of his Antinomian, Familistical, Brownist, and other fanatical Doctrines, though in other respects a good Man, 1635 he was excommunicated and banished from *Massachusetts* Colony by their Assembly or Legislature as a *Disturber of the Peace of the Church and Common-wealth*, and removed to *Seaconck*, now called *Rehoboth*, and procured a Grant of Lands from *Massasoit* Sachem of the *Pakanokat Indians*; the *Magistrates* of the Colony of *Plymouth*, *Seaconck* being within their Jurisdiction, obliged him to remove; in the Spring following, with some of his Friends and Adherents he settled on the other Side of *Patuket* the Boundary River at *Moosachick*, by Mr. *Williams* called PROVIDENCE, and the *Narraganset* Sachem, made them several Grants of Lands; one of the Grants is dated *Nantigansick* the 24th of the first Month commonly called *March*, the second Year of our Plantation or planting at *Moosachick* or *Providence*; Mr. *Williams* lived in *Providence* 40 Years; 1640 the 27th Day

of the 5th Month about 40 Persons † voluntarily formed a sort of Civil Government. When for the Ease of the Inhabitants, the Colony formerly all in one County as is at present the small Province of *New-Hampshire*, was divided into 3 County's, the Township or Plantation of *Providence* was divided in 4 Townships, *Providence*, *Smithfield*, *Scituate*, and *Glocester*; *Providence* sends 4 Representatives to the General Assembly, the others send 2 each.

Duke of *Hamilton's* Grant from the Council or Company of *Plymouth* in *April* 1635, was from *Providence* or *Narraganset-Bay* East, to *Connecticut* River West, Southerly upon the Sea, and Northerly up inland 60 Miles, or so far North as to reach the *Massachusetts* South Line; this takes in all the Colony of *Rhode-Island*, and the Eastern Parts of the Colony of *Connecticut*; the Duke of *Hamilton* had a further Grant of 10,000 Acres East of *Sagadahoc* adjoining to Lord *Ware's* Grant; that Family have at sundry Times essay'd to revive their Claim, but as they never fulfilled the Conditions of the Grant or Settling, they never prosecuted the Affair to Effect. There were several other vague Grants, but as they are now obsolete, and Claims not likely to be revived, we shall not mention them.

In the Year 1637, The Synod at *Newtown* in *Massachusetts-Bay* having condemned the Opinions of many Sectaries, and by the subsequent General Court or Assembly Persons being ill used, these Persons with their Friends

† To perpetuate the Memory of the first considerable Settlers and of their Families, I shall in the History of our several Colonies mention some Names. The first 12 Persons who with Mr. *Williams* were concerned as Proprietors of the *Providence* Lands; *William Arnold*, *John Greene*, *John Throgmorton*, *Thomas James*, *William Harris*, *Thomas Olnay*, *Richard Waterman*, *Francis Weston*, *Ezekiel Holliman*, *Robert Cole*, *Stukely West-coat*, and *William Carpenter*; afterwards were associated *Chad. Browne*, *William Fairfield*, *J. Warner*, *E. Angel*, *J. Windsor*, *R. Scot*, *Wm. Reynolds*, *Wm. Wickenden*, *Gregory Dexter*, &c. at length they amounted to the Number of 100 Proprietors of *Providence*, being the value of 20 Miles Square.

and

and Adherents went to *Aquatneck*, now the Island of *Rhode-Island*, and by Deed *March* 24, 1637,8, purchased the Island from the *Indians*; 18 Persons || without a Patent did voluntarily incorporate or associate themselves; the Easterly end of the Island with *Seaconet* was called *Pocasset*; this Settlement increased fast and was called *Iste of Rhodes* or *Rhode-Island*, 1644 it was divided into two Townships, *Newport* its Easterly Part, and *Portsmouth* its Westerly Part; lately *Newport* is subdivided into *Newport* and *Middletown*. In the beginning the Economy or Government was variable, 1640 they agreed that the Government should be in a Governor, Deputy Governor and four Assistants, * they held their Offices until the Patent of Incorporation.

1642,3, *Jan.* 12. *Showamet* was purchased of the *Indians* by eleven Associates † and called *Warwick* in honour to the Family of the Earl of *Warwick*, who had a Grant (but never prosecuted) of a large Tract of Land in these Parts; they were by Directions from this Minister incorporated in the *Province of Providence Planta-*

|| These 18 Persons were *William Coddington*, *John Clark*, *William Hutchinson*, *John Coggeshal*, *William Apinwal*, *Samuel Welborn*, *John Porter*, *John Seaford*, *Edward Hutchinson*, jun. *Thomas Savage*, *William Dyree*, *William Freeborn*, *Philip Sherman*, *John Walker*, *Richard Corder*, *William Raulifston*, *Edward Hutchinson*, Sen. *Henry Bull*. N. B. Some Families returned to the *Massachusetts Bay* Colony, the *Hutchinsons*, *Dummers*, *Savages*, &c.

* *William Coddington* Governor, *W. Brenton* Deputy Governor, *N. Easton*, *J. Coggeshal*, *W. Hutchinson* and *S. Porter*.

† *Rendal Holden*, *John Wickes*, *Samuel Gorton*, *John Greene*, *Francis Weston*, *Richard Waterman*, *John Warner*, *Richard Corder*, *Samson Shelton*, *Robert Patten*, and *William Woodeal*. N. B. *Gorton* was a Preacher or Exorter, of many wild peculiar Opinions in Religion, different from those of the other *New-England* Sectaries, and used a mysterious Dialect; his Followers were called *Gortonians*; he came to *Rhode-Island* 1638, was Banished from thence 1640; he was of a good Family in *England*, he disowned the *Puritans* and opposed the *Quakers*; he settled at *Patuxet*, and kept a peculiar religious Society for upwards of sixty Years, and liv'd to a great Age; but as this Sect is utterly extinct, we shall not revive the Memory of it in the Digression concerning the *British* Plantation Sectaries.

tions. About this Time some People began a Settlement at *Patuxet River*, † whereof at present Part is in the Township of *Providence*, and Part in the Township of *Warwick*. *Warwick* is lately subdivided into the Townships of *Warwick*, four Representatives, and *Coventry* two Representatives.

1643, Mr. *R. Williams* went to *England* as Agent, and by the Assistance of Sir *Henry Vane*, obtained from the Earl of *Warwick* Governor and Admiral of all the *English* Plantations for the Parliament, a sort of Charter of Incorporation of the several Settlements by the Name of “ the Incorporation of the Providence Plantations in “ the *Narraganset-Bay* in *New-England*; may settle themselves into any Form of Government the Majority of “ the Freeman should agree upon, suitable to their Estate “ and Condition, and make suitable Laws; agreeable to “ the Laws of *England*, so far as the Nature and Constitution of the Place will admit, &c.” dated 1643, 4. *March* 17. Their first General Assembly was not called until *May* 19. 1647; this Assembly established a Body of very good and wholsom Laws, and erected a Form of Government for the Administration of these Laws, and for making further Laws that may be found requisite. Their Legislature, called a Court of Commissioners, consisted of six Members from each of the four Towns of *Providence*, *Newport*, *Portsmouth* and *Warwick*; but the *supreme Power* to be in a regular Vote of all the || Freeholders of the Colony or Incorporation, the Freeman’s Vote superseded or repealed the Acts of the Court of Commissioners and made them void — A President and four Assistants yearly chosen were Judges of the Court of Tryals, assisted by the two Wardens or Justices of the

† Meadows upon a River, has in our northern Plantations, always and every where been an inducement to begin a Settlement; as being immediately furnished with Food for their Cattle in Winter.

|| At present there remains in our Plantations, only two Populace or Popular Colonies where the *supreme Power* or *dernier Resort* is lodged in the Community, *viz.* *Connecticut* and *Rhode-Island*.

particular Town, in which this Court sat from Time to Time. Every Town chose a Council of six Persons to manage the prudential Town Affairs, and had the Tryal of small Cafes, with the Wardens or Justices of the Town, but with an Appeal to the Court of President and Associates. There was a short Interruption of this Form of Government, *October 2, 1652*, by Order of the Council of State from *England*; but soon resumed, and continued until the present Charter took Place.

The present Charter is dated *July 8, 1662, 15 Regn. Carol. II.* in which it is enumerated, that they were People who left their Settlements in the other Colonies, because obliged thereto by their different Sentiments in Religion; and did by good Providence transplant themselves into the midst of Indian Natives, and made Land Purchases of those Natives, fit for building of Vessels, making of Pipe Staves and other Lumber: that their Design was to live quietly with Liberty of Conscience together, and to convert the Indians. They are by Charter made a Body Politick or Corporate by the Name of the Governor and Company of Freemen of the *English Colony of Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations in Narraganset Bay in New-England.*

Grants Liberty of Conscience in Religion *, a Power to make a common Seal, to call an Assembly annually, first Wednesday of *May*, and last Wednesday of *October*, or oftener: composed of the Governor †, Deputy Governor, 10 Assistants; and Representatives of Towns, whereof *Newport* not exceeding 6, *Providence* 4, *Portsmouth* 4, *Warwick* 4, and 2 for each other Place or Town to be elected by the Majority of Freemen in each Town. The Majority of the Assembly, whereof the Governor or Deputy Governor and Six of the Assistants at least to be

* Without excepting *Roman Catholicks* or any others.

† In the Charter, for the first Year, the King nominated *Benedict Arnold, Esq;* for Governor, *William Brenton* Deputy Governor.

seven ; † to have Power to appoint the Time and Place of their Meetings, to make any Man free of the Company, to nominate proper Officers, to make Laws, &c. not repugnant to those of *England*, to appoint Courts of Judicature with their proper Officers, to determine what Towns have Power to send Representatives to the Assembly, to pardon Criminals, to make Purchases of the native *Indians* ; when the Assembly does not sit, the Governor with the major Part of the Assistants to have the Direction of the *Militia*. The Governor, Six of the Assistants, and major Part of the Representatives of the Freemen in Assembly, have Power of making War against the *Indians* or any of the *King's* Enemies, but not to invade the *Indians* of any neighbouring Colony without the Consent of the Government of that Colony : allowed the Liberty of fishing and of curing Fish on any of the Coasts of *New-England* : Persons born there, to be *Denizens* of *England* ; all Persons and manner of Goods may be transported thither from *England* : any difference arising with the neighbouring Colonies, to appeal to the King in Council : to have a free Trade with all the other *English* Colonies. The Bounds of the Colony to be Westerly, the middle Channel of the middle great Stream of *Pokatuke*, alias *Narraganset* great River, so far as it lies up the Country, and thence by a Line due North to the Southerly Line of the *Massachusetts* Colony ; Northern Bounds, the Southerly Line of the *Massachusetts* Colony so far East as three Miles to the E. N. E. of the most Eastern and Northern Parts of the *Narraganset-Bay* ; the Eastern Bounds, as the Bay lieth or extendeth it self from the Ocean into the Mouth of the River which runneth into *Providence* : and from thence higher along the Easterly Bank of said River called *Seaconck* River, up to the Falls

† As in the Majority of Voters there must at least be the Governor or Deputy Governor and Six of the Assistants, it was the same Case as if the Governor and Assistants were a seperate Board or House, therefore after some Years by Act of Assembly they were constituted a separate House, and the Governor in Case of an Equivote in the Board of Assistants, to have the casting Vote, but no Negative.

called *Patucket Falls*, being the most Westerly Line of *Plymouth Colony* : and from said Falls in a streight Line due North, till it meets with the South Line of *Massachusetts* ; Southern Bounds, the Ocean comprehending all the Islands and Banks in *Narraganset-Bay*, *Fisher's Island* excepted. To hold of the King as the Mannor of *East Greenwich*, in free and common Soccage, paying the fifth of all Gold and Silver Oar found there— Any Clause in a late Grant to the Governor and Company of *Connecticut Colony* notwithstanding. Signed *Howard*.

Their first Assembly met at *Newport*, *March 1. 1663*, and enacted, That on the first Wednesday of *May* annually by a Majority of the Votes of the Freemen of the Colony, shall be elected a Recorder or Secretary, a Sheriff *, an Attorney General, and one Treasurer General. —All Purchases of the *Indians* without Consent of the Assembly, to be void, and the Purchasers finable. All Inhabitants of competent Estates Christians (*Roman Catholics* excepted) to be accounted Freemen, and have Power of choosing and of being chosen Deputies and other Officers.

This Competency of Estate has been varied from Time to Time ; *Anno 1746*, the Assembly enacted, that the Qualification for a Freeman should be Freeholds of £. 400 Currency in Value, or that shall Rent for £. 20 *per Ann.* or the eldest Son of such a Freeholder ; and to be proposed to their respective Town Meetings three Months at least before their Admission. As Briberies in the Elections of Assembly Men and general Officers were become frequent and notorious, by the same Act, no Man is admitted to vote until he has taken Oath or Affirmation ; That he will use his Freedom for the good of the Government without any other Motive, and shall not receive nor expect any Reward or Promise of Reward in Elections. The same Assembly enacted, that no Assistant (Member

* At present the Sheriffs of the several Counties are appointed by the General Assembly.

of the Council) or Member of the House of Representatives should be allowed any Wages or pay for their Service. Several other such wholesome and exemplary † Laws have at Times been enacted, when the Government was in good Hands.

From Time to Time there were some *English* trading Houses, with small Purchases of Lands from the *Indians*, in the *Narraganset* Country. 1657, the Island of *Canonicut* was purchased of the *Indians*, and 1678 incorporated by Act of Assembly, and named *James Town*. Some Gentlemen of *Rhode-Island* and other Parts of *New-England* made a considerable Purchase of *Petaquamsecut* (from the *Indians*) which with the adjacent Lands were incorporated a Township by the Name of *Kingston* 1674: but since divided into three Townships, *South Kingston*, *North Kingston*, and *Exeter*.

Misquamicut purchased of the *Indians*, 1665, was constituted a Township 1669, by the Name of *Westerly*; this is lately divided into three Townships, *Westerly*, *Charlestown* and *Richmond*; in *Charlestown* is the *Narraganset Indian Reserve* (*Ninigret* is Sachem,) of two Miles from E. to W. and of about 6 Miles from North to South; which is generally farmed by the Friends of the *Indian Guardians* appointed by the Assembly, upon long Leases and small Rents.

Manisses or *Block Island* 1672 was constituted the Township of *New Shoreham*.

1677, The Township of *Greenwich* was incorporated, and lately divided into the two Townships of *Greenwich*, and *West Greenwich*. By this Time all the Colony or general Lands were reduced to private Property; see a subsequent Table, P. 89.

When the Court of *England*, in a bad Administration, were resolved to vacate Charters of any Nature, because Restraints or Obstacles to a despotick Power; a Writ of *Quo Warranto* was issued out against the Colony *October*

† Exemplary to the other Colonies.

6, 1685, and delivered June 2, 1686, by *Edward Randolph*, Esq; The Freemen of the Colony by their Ballots or written Votes called *Proxies*, by a Majority gave in their Opinion to the General Assembly; in Conformity to which, the General Assembly, after the Example of many Corporations or Charters in *England*, determined not to stand Suit with his Majesty, but by a humble Address to the King, pray for the Continuance of their Privileges and Liberties according to Charter: the King promised them Protection and Favour; they were put under the Government of President *Dudley*, who was soon superseded by Governor *Andros*. 1686, 7, Jan. 12. Sir *Edmond Andros's* Commission as Governor of *New-England*, was published in *Rhode-Island*, and all the Colony formed into one County.

Upon the ORANGE REVOLUTION, by a general Vote of the Freemen in May 1689, it was concluded, that Sir *Edmond Andros's* Authority, by his Confinement in *Boston*, was terminated or silenced, and therefore they reassume their former Government or Charter; and as their Charter never was vacated in a due Course of Law or Judgment, the Court of *England* allows them to continue in the Possession and Use of it to this Day.

Each Township is managed by a Town Council consisting of the Assistants who reside in the Town, the Justices of the Town, and six Men Freeholders chosen annually by the Freemen of the Town; the Major Part of them is a Quorum, with full Power to manage the Affairs and Interest of the Town to which they respectively belong, to grant Licences to publick Houses; and are a Probate Office for proving Wills and granting Administration, with Appeal to Governor and Council as supreme Ordinary.

On any urgent Occasion the Governor, or in his Absence, the Deputy Governor, may by Warrant call a General Assembly.—The Direction of the Militia is in the General Assembly of the Colony; but when the Assembly does not sit, the Governor and Assistants have the Power of the Militia.

At

At the Township Meetings in *March* annually, the Freemen of the Town bring in their written Votes called *Proxies*, for a Governor, a Deputy Governor, 10 Assistants, Recorder, Treasurer, and Attorney General; these Votes are sealed up and sent to *Newport* for next *May* General Election; the Governor has no Negative in Elections, has no Negative in passing of Bills or Resolves, only in the House or Board of Assistants in Case of an *Equivote*, he has the casting Vote. All other Officers Civil and Military are appointed by a joint Vote of the Board of Assistants and House of Representatives. The Legislature of *Rhode-Island* Colony stile themselves, *The Governor and Company of the English Colony of Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations in New England in America*; the enacting stile is, *Be it enacted by the General Assembly of this Colony and by the Authority of the same it is enacted*. The Assembly adjourn themselves for any Time. The Governor for the Time being, has the Custody of the Colony's Charter, Seal &c. and appoints the Naval Officer; the Governor's Sallery is £. 300 *per Ann.* Currency, and all his Perquisites do not exceed £. 1000.† There are yearly two Assemblies or Elections of Representatives; they sit *first Wednesday* in *May* at *Newport*; the second Assembly meets *last Wednesday* of *October* at *Providence*, and *South Kingston* alternately. In all grand Committees, and Elections; of Officers, the Board of Assistants and House of Representatives, sit and vote together.

In the last || Election of General Officers *first Wednesday* of

† At this writing 1750, The Deputy Governor has a Sallery of £. 30 Currency or O. T. *per Ann.* the Treasurer £. 200; Assistants and Representatives have no Wages.

|| Formerly the Parties in Election and Publick Transactions were upon *Secretary Footings*; but for some Years past the opposite Parties, are they who are against *multiplying a fallacious fraudulent Paper Currency*, and they who encourage it for *private iniquitous Ends*; Majority of the present House of Representatives are of the *Paper Money Side*, notwithstanding of a growing Depreciation: from *April 1, 1750, to Sep. 1, 1750,*

of May 1750, were chosen *William Greene* Governor, *Robert Hazzard* Dep. Governor ; Assistants, *George Wanton*, *Jonathan Nichols*, *John Potter*, *John Bowen*, *Benjamin Tucker*, *Robert Lawton*, *James Arnold*, *William Richmond*, *Daniel Coggeshal*, *Jeffry Watson* ; *Thomas Ward* Secretary, *Daniel Updike* Attorney General, and *Thomas Richardson* General Treasurer. * When the Charter first took Place 1663, there were only 18 Representatives, 6 from *Newport*, 4 from *Providence*, 4 from *Portsmouth*, and 4 from *Warwick* : at present 1750, besides these, there are 2 from each constituted Township incorporated from that Time, and at present are 58 Members.

1750, their Paper Currency from *Par*, suffers a Discount with the *Massachusetts* Paper Currency above 20 per Ct, that is, a Piece of 8 in *Boston* sells for 45 s. O. T, in *Rhode-Island* it sells for 56 s. O. T ; by selling, I mean, it is Merchandize and will continue such, until the Paper Money is generally annihilated, or by its small Quantity arrive at a just *Par* with Silver : I shall mention a palpable Instance of the good Effects of Paper Currency being gradually annihilated (if the Transition is too sudden, it may occasion a Stagnation of Business, Confusion and Uproars, which ought carefully be avoided, as tending to *Sedition*) by sinking of our Paper Medium ; within these last Six Months (this is wrote *September* 1750) Exchange with *London* is fallen from Eleven and a half, for one Sterling, to Nine and a half, for one Sterling good Bills or well endorsed.

* The fallacious Plantation Paper Money Currencies are a most disagreeable Topick, and fall too often in my Way : here I cannot avoid observing, that the habitual Practice of this Paper Money Cheat, has had a bad Influence not only upon profligate private Persons ; but upon the Administration of some of our *New-England* Governments : for Instance, one of the Legislature, a Signer of the *Rhode-Island* Colony Bills, was not long since CONVICTED of Signing Counterfeit Bills. Men are chosen into the Legislative and Executive Parts of their Government, not for their Knowledge, Honour, and Honesty, but as Sticklers for depreciating (for private Ends) the Currency, by multiplied Emissions : this Year 1750, the Parties amongst the Electors of Assembly Men were distinguished by the Names of Paper Money Makers, and the contrary : the Paper Money Makers have got a Majority in the lower House, and propose a New Emission of 200,000 O. T ; it is probable the House or Board of Assistants will not concur ; it is not for want of Paper-Currency, at present they have more than ever ; *Massachusetts-Bay*, where the Bulk of their Bills were lodged, have sent them back accompanied with the Bills of *New-Hampshire* ; their Design is by Quantity to depreciate the Value of their

As a Table is the most concise and distinct Form of representing several numeral Articles relating to a Colony; I shall here represent each Township, their late Numbers of *Proxies* or Freemen Voters, their Representatives in General Assembly, their Justices, their Companies of Militia, *perustration* of (1748) of Whites, Negroes, and Indians.

their Bills; and Lands mortgaged for Publick Bills will be redeemed in those minorated Bills, at a very inconsiderable real Value. In the neighbouring Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* the principal Directors and Signers of bubling or notorious cheat Bills (in the Act of Parliament, 1741, it is termed *a mischievous Undertaking and publick Nufance*) were by Votes concurred by Gov. *Sb—y*, made Councillors, Signers of publick Bills of Credit, Judges, Justices, &c. this to an impartial Reader must appear the greatest Disregard of a Minister (all Governors are in a ministerial Capacity) to Acts of Parliament. To prevent this Nufance, in all Acts of Assemblies concerning Paper Money Currencies, there may be a Clause, that any Person convicted of making, signing, or uttering any false, fraudulent, or counterfeit Bills; be rendred incapable of any Place of Profit or Trust in said Province or Colony.

In *Massachusetts-Bay* Province December 1748, the Act for drawing in their Bills of Credit, expressly declares, *that the Bills of the neighbouring Provinces, have passed promiscuously with the Bills of our Province; and the Inhabitants of Massachusetts-Bay Province will thereby be liable to greater Evils than they have as yet suffered, if the Bills of the neighbouring Governments continue current within the Province; therefore, &c.* particularly every Person so accounting (extra provincial Bills reckoned up to a Person or otherways evading in Negotiation) receiving, taking, or paying the same, shall forfeit the Sum of *Fifty Pounds New Tenor* for every such Offence. There has lately happened a publick Controversy in the *Boston Weekly News Papers* for *Sept. 1750*, concerning the Word *accounting*: this ought to be explained by some subsequent Act of Assembly; as there is a Discovery of a principal Manager, negotiating in *Boston* (in a manner as he thought evadable in the Law) some Bills of *New-Hampshire*: as he was a principal Agent in restraining the Currency of Bills of the neighbouring Provinces, if Interest had not prevailed against common Prudence, he would have evaded the negotiating of these Bills in any Manner though evadable in Law.

N. B. To annihilate Plantation Paper Currencies in a general Sense, is very laudable; but to do it suddenly or in the Space of one Year, when there is no other Medium or Currency; puts a Stop to all Trade and Business; this Obstruction may divert our Commerce into some other Channel; We have a notable Instance of this in the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, 1750.

Townships.

Townships.	1748. 1749.			Companies.			
	Proxies.	Repref.	Juflices.	Whites.	Negroes.	Indians.	Militia.
Newport	96	6	9	5335	1105	68	4
Providence	32	4	13	3177	225	50	5
Portsmouth	25	4	5	807	134	51	1
Warwick	21	4	8	1513	176	93	3
Westerley	23	2	6	1701	59	49	4
* New Shoreham	23	2	0	260	20	20	1
North Kingfton	30	2	7	1665	184	86	3
South Kingfton	21	2	5	1405	380	193	3
Greenwich	17	2	6	956	61	27	2
James Town	4	2	0	284	110	26	1
* Smithfield	45	2	5	400	30	20	3
Scituate	58	2	4	1210	16	6	3
Gloucefter	11	2	4	1194	8		3
Charles-Town	9	2	3	641	58	303	1
West Greenwich	25	2	4	757	8	1	2
Coventry	12	2	6	769	16	7	2
Exeter	24	2	4	1103	63	8	2
Middletown	20	2	4	586	76	18	1
Bristol	13	2	5	928	128	13	1
Tiverton	102	2	4	842	99	99	2
Little Compton	107	2	5	1004	62	86	1
* Warren	82	2	4	600	50	30	1
Cumberland	73	2	3	802	4		1
* Richmond	11	2	5	500	5	3	1
	888	58	119	28439	3077	1257	51

N. B. The Numbers of Whites, Blacks, and Indians for the Townships of *New Shoreham* or *Block-Island*, *Smithfield*, *Warren*, and *Richmond* are only Estimates, and not an actual *Census*.

When the Qualification of a Freeman, as formerly, was low, the Proxies or Voters never exceeded 1300: at present the Qualification is better or higher, and *Anno* 1749, the Proxies were only 888.

The Valuation or *Census* *Anno* 1730 was Whites 15,302, Blacks 1648, Indians 985, in all 17,935; the Valuation *Anno* 1748, was Whites 28,439, Blacks 3077, Indians, 1257, in all 32,773; from these deduct *Bristol*,

Tiverton, Little Compton, Warren, and Cumberland a late Addition taken from the Jurisdiction of *Massachusetts-Bay*, and added to *Rhode-Island* Colony, of 4196 Whites, 343 Blacks, and 228 Indians, remains 24,243 Whites, which is an Increase of near 9,000 Whites, upon 15,500 *Circiter*, in 18 Years; this is more than one third increased in the Space of 18 Years. The *Census* of their Blacks and Indians perhaps is not exact; that small Colony does not possess more Negroes, than the much larger Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*; it is true, their late *Guinea* Trade exchanging of Negroes for Horses, Stock, and Provisions shipt off for the *West India* Islands, has added considerably to the Number of their Negroes. Here is an Increase of 44 Indians, whereas they are observed every where to be upon the Decrease from the intemperate Use of *British* *Spirits*, and from their being sent to Sea, and upon Expeditions. The 51 Militia Foot Companies are formed into 4 Regiments, being one Regiment Foot in each of their four Counties of *Newport, Providence, King's County, and Bristol*; there are also one Troop of Horse in the County of *Newport*, and a Troop in the County of *Providence*.

Concerning the Boundaries of the Colony of *Rhode-Island*.

King *Charles*, Anno 1630, made a Grant to the Earl of *Warwick* from *Narraganset-Bay*, Westward along Shore 40 Leagues, and in length from Sea to Sea: he assigned this Grant to *William* Viscount *Say* and *Seal*,* Lord *Brooks*, Lord *Rich*, and eight more Associates: the Conditions of the Grant were never complied with by Settling &c, and the Grant is become void. A subsequent Grant to Duke *Hamilton*, 1635, for the same Reason is Null.

* *Seabrook* at the Mouth of *Connecticut* River is so called from the Names of Viscount *Say* and Lord *Brook*. This Humour of joint Names for Townships is still practised in the Colony of *Connecticut*, thus a Township granted lately to *Hartford* and *Windsor* jointly, is called *Harwinton*, from the initial Syllables of these two Townships.

In the beginning of our Settlements, the Country not being well investigated, sundry succeeding Royal Grants interfered with former Grants †. King *Charles II.* having received Complaints concerning the wrong Description of Places and Grants, not to be determined at a Distance, but by Commissioners to be sent expressly upon the Spot; accordingly 1664, four Commissioners, Col. *Nichols* (afterwards Governor of *New-York*) Sir *Robert Ker*, &c. were sent over to settle all the controverted Boundaries of the Provinces, and to be determined by the Concurrence of any three of these Commissioners, or of two of them, whereof *Nichols* to be one. † Three of those Commissioners

† For Instance, *Plymouth* old North Line, from *Conabasset* due West to *Patuket* River; and *Massachusetts* South Line, from 3 Miles South of the Southermost Part or Head of *Charles* River extended E. and W. overlap one another several Miles; *Attleborough* Gore is plainly included in *Plymouth* Grant, and also in the Grant to *Rhode-Island*. Some of the Lands of *Tiverton* and *Little Compton*, seems to be in both these Grants. In Equity perhaps the Prior Grant should take Place; but this was not observed in the late Determination of *Rhode-Island* Easterly Bounds; the Validity of the *Plymouth* Grant as to Jurisdiction being questioned. *Rhode-Island* Colony pretended to the Settlements of *Tiverton*, *Little Compton*, *Dartmouth*, *Rochester*, *Sandwich*, and *Cape-Cod* Townships, because *Plymouth* Grant is not said to be bounded upon the Ocean: but as this Claim was not brought before a late Court of Commissioners appointed by Patent from *Great-Britain* to settle the Eastern Boundaries of *Rhode-Island* Colony, it may be supposed dropt and silenced. Lately in *Rhode-Island*, they have imagined a Claim of Jurisdiction further North than their present Line; taking in Part of *Wrentham*, *Bellingham*, *Mendon*, *Uxbridge*, and *Douglasi*; they were encouraged to this by their late Success in the Eastern Claim; but when they complained Home concerning the Encroachments of *Massachusetts-Bay*, upon their Eastern Borders, they made no Complaint of Northern Encroachments; which if any, might have been adjusted by the same Commission without further Charge: and when Commissioners were appointed, December 18, 1749, by the General Assembly of *Massachusetts-Bay*, to join with Commissioners from the Jurisdiction of *Rhode-Island*, to run and renew the Line agreed on and settled by both Governments, Jan. 19, 1710, 11; the *Rhode-Island* Commissioners did not appear.

† The *Rhode-Islanders* construed it that nothing could be concluded without the Concurrence of *Nichols*, and because *Nichols* happened not

missioners gave the *Attleborough Gore* to *Plymouth Colony*, that is *Patucket* alias *Blackstone* || River to be the dividing Line between these two Colonies; the King's Pleasure concerning this Determination was never signified; as it was not confirmed at Home, it continued many Years in Dispute, and at length, determined by Commissioners 1741, and confirmed by the King in Council 1746, in favour of *Rhode-Island*; it is now called *Cumberland Township*, in Honour to his Royal Highness the *Duke of Cumberland*, and is annexed to the County of *Providence*.

Rhode Island Easterly Line dividing it from the present Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* was settled by Commissioners * 1741, *Massachusetts* Government appealed Home against every Part of the Judgment as grievous and injurious; but the Judgment in whole was confirmed 1746, by the King in Council. In *Autumn* 1746, the Government of *Rhode-Island* sent to the Government of *Massachusetts-Bay*, a Copy of his Majesty's Order in Council, affirming the Judgment of the Court of Commissioners, for settling the Boundary Line between the two Governments, and by Act of Assembly appointed Commissioners, to run (*Dec. 2. 1746*) this late adjudged Line with Commissioners from *Massachusetts-Bay*; the Assembly of *Massachusetts-Bay* could not be informed of this appointed Time until their next Sitting, *December 24*, thus *Rhode-Island* contrived to run this Line *ex parte*. For a minute Description of this Line, see Vol. I. P. 399.

For *Rhode-Island* Northerly Line dividing this Colony from the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, see Vol. I. P. 415.

to be one of the three that concurred in the Determination of the *Attleborough Gore*, they alledged the Determination was not perfect, whereas *Nichols* was plainly intended to have only a casting Vote when two were against two.

|| This River was so called by the Name of Mr. *Blackstone*, who removed from *Massachusetts-Bay* and lived in this Gore, upon that River, many Years.

* The settling of this Line cost each Government about 4,000 O. T. The Commissioners had from each Government 6*s* Sterl. *per diem*, with all Charges in coming, at, and returning from the Congress.

Southerly

Southerly the Colony of *Rhode-Island* is bounded upon the Sea or Atlantick Ocean.

Its Westerly Line dividing it from the Colony of *Connecticut* was settled by Commissioners from both Colonies *September 27, 1728*; was ascertained by a direct Line extending West from the Rock at the uttermost Point of *Warwick Neck*, 20 Miles, to a considerable Heap of Stones in a Cedar Swamp, the S. W. Corner of *Warwick Purchase*. From this Monument the Line with *Connecticut* is determined by running first N. 7 d. E. by Compass, 23 Miles 10 Rod to a large Heap of Stones in a Valley being between two marked Pine Trees in the South Line of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, and for the first 7 and a half Miles were made Monuments every half Mile, and from thence Northward to the *Massachusetts* South Line, were made Monuments at the End of each Mile: from the said Monument the S. W. Corner of *Warwick* was made a Southerly running of 15 Miles and 9 Rod S. 11 d. 20 m. W. to the Mouth of *Astrawage River* where it falls into *Pakatuke River*; and from thence *Pakatuke River* is the Boundary to the Sea.

Signed	<i>Roger Woolcot</i>	}	For Connecticut.
	<i>James Wadsworth</i>		
	<i>Daniel Palmer.</i>		

	<i>William Wanton</i>	}	For Rhode-Island.
	<i>Benjamin Ellery</i>		
	<i>William Jenkes.</i>		

The Colony of *Rhode-Island* have been very little concerned in the *British North America Wars* with the adjacent *Indians*, and their Encouragers to Rapine the *French* of *Canada*; from the *Quaker Principles* of many of the Inhabitants, and as not being immediately exposed to the Ravages of the *French* and their *Indians*. In the Expedition against *Port-Royal* in *Nova-Scotia*, An. 1710, and in the abortive Expedition against *Canada*, 1711, they

they had some Forces : towards the Feint or intended Expedition against *Canada*, in the Summer 1746, they fitted out 300 Land Men with a Warlike Sloop of 100 Seamen ; they were ordered for *Nova-Scotia*, but in their Voyage suffered Disasters, never proceeded, and after some Time this Expedition was countermanded. They have been noted for Privateering against the *French* and *Spaniards* in Times of War. They have built a good Fort upon *Goat Island*, an *Island* in the Harbour of *Newport*.

The Numbers of their Whites, Slaves and other Lists, may be seen in a foregoing Table.

Concerning their Courts of Judicature.

Formerly the Colony of *Rhode-Island* made only one County : not long since it was divided into 3 Counties, *Newport*, *Providence*, and *King's* County ; lately they have constituted a fourth County called *Bristol*, comprehending the late Addition from the Province of *Massachusetts* ; *Cumberland* is in the County of *Providence*. *Newport* County contains *Rhode-Island* (the Townships of *Newport*, *Portsmouth*, and *Middletown*,) *Block-Island* (the Township of *New-Shoreham*) *Canonicut Island* (the Township of *James Town*) *Prudence Island*, and *Patience Island*, with the lately adjudged Parts of *Tiverton*, and *Little-Compton*. *Providence* County comprehends the Townships of *Providence*, *Smithfield*, *Scituate*, *Glocester*, *Warwick*, *Coventry*, *Greenwich*, *West-Greenwich*, and *Cumberland*. *King's* County includes *South Kingston*, *North Kingston*, *Exeter*, *Westerly*, *Charles Town*, and *Richmond*.

The Legislature, called the General Court or General Assembly, sits the first *Wednesday* in *May* annually at *Newport*, and at *Providence* and *South Kingston* alternately the last *Wednesday* of *October*.

The Form of their judicial Oath or Affirmation does not invoke the Judgments of the Omniscient GOD, who
fees

fees in Secret, but only upon the Peril of the Penalty of Perjury. †

JURIES. The Town Council of each Township, take a List of all Persons liable by Law, and whom they shall judge able and well qualified to serve on Juries, and lay the same before a Town Meeting called for that Purpose; and the Names of all such Persons written on separate Pieces of Paper, shall be put in a Box to be delivered to the Town Clerk, to be by him kept under Lock and Key. When the Precept or Notification for returning of Jurors is issued, at a Town Meeting the Box shall be unlocked, and the Town Clerk shall draw out so many Tickets, as there are Jurors required to be returned as Jurors; such as in the Judgment of the Town Meeting are unable to serve at that Time, their Names shall be returned into the Box and others drawn in their stead; the Names of the Persons returned to serve, shall be put in another Box from Time to Time, until all the Tickets be drawn as aforesaid; then they shall be returned into the first, to be drawn from Time to Time as aforesaid. The Town Council shall once a Year lay before a Town-Meeting such other Persons as may from Time to Time become qualified, to be put in the Box. If by Reason of Challenge or otherways there are not a sufficient Number of good and lawful Men to make up the Jury, the Jury shall be filled up by the Sheriff or his Deputy *de talibus Circumstantibus*.

JUSTICES OF THE PEACE. The General Assembly in their *May* Sessions, chuse for each Town, so many Justices of the Peace as they may find requisite, to be commissioned by the Governor of the Colony under the Seal of the Colony; their Power extends all over the County. A Justice may join Persons in Marriages, take the Ac-

† This does not seem to be a sacred or solemn Oath, and may be illustrated by the Story of two profligate Thieves; one of them had stolen something and told his Friend of it: well, says his Friend, but did any body see you? No: then says his Friend, it is yours as much as if you had bought it with your Money.

knowledge of a Deed or other Instrument, take Depositions out of Court, the adverse Party being notified. Two or more Justices may Hear, Try, and Adjudge all manner of Debts, Trespasses, and other Actions not exceeding *five Pounds* Currency; Titles of Lands are excepted, and such other Actions as are excepted by any particular Law of the Colony. Three or more Justices of the Peace may try all Persons suspected of Thieving to the Value of *Ten Pounds* Currency. Appeals in Civil Cases are allowed to the Inferior Court of Common Pleas, and in Criminal Cases to the Court of the General Sessions of the Peace: the Judgment of which Court, on all Appeals from the Justices Court is final.

SESSIONS OF THE PEACE. In each County are held twice a Year, a Court of General Sessions of the Peace, five Justices of the County making a *Quorum*, impowered to hear and determine all manner of Matters and Things relating to the Conservation of the Peace, the Punishment of Offenders, and all Pleas of the Crown (Capital Crimes excepted) are therein cognizable. Any Person aggrieved at the Sentence of this Court, may appeal to the next Superior Court of Judicature, Court of Assize and General Goal Delivery.

INFERIOR COURTS OF COMMON PLEAS, are held twice a Year in each County; three Justices of the said Court are a *Quorum*: they have Cognizance of all Civil Actions arising or happening within the County, and Tryable at Common Law, of what Nature, Kind, or Quality soever: but no Action not exceeding *five Pounds* Currency, is brought into any of these Courts, unless where any Men's Freehold is concerned, or by Way of Appeal from any Justices Court. Liberty of Appeal from these Inferior Courts of Common Pleas, is allowed to the next Superior Court of Judicature, &c.

SUPERIOR COURT OF JUDICATURE, Courts of Assize and General Goal Delivery, are holden twice a Year in each County; three Judges are a *Quorum*: they have Cognizance of all Pleas, real, personal, or mixt, as also
Pleas

Pleas of the Crown, and Causes Criminal, and Matters relating to the Conservation of the Peace, Punishment of Offenders, and generally of all other Matters as fully and amply to all Intents and Purposes whatsoever, as the Court of Common Pleas, King's Bench, or Exchequer in his Majesty's Kingdom of *England* have, or ought to have, and are impowered to give Judgment therein, and to award Execution thereon, and make such necessary Rules of Practice, as the Judges shall from Time to Time see needful; but no Cause, Matter, or Thing (Writs of Error, Capital Crimes, &c. excepted) are brought into this Court by an Original Writ or Process, but by Appeals from the Inferior Courts of Common Pleas.

APPEALS TO HIS MAJESTY IN COUNCIL, are allowed, where the Matter or Thing in Controversy is the Value of *three hundred Pounds* New Tenor, unless from Judgment obtain'd upon a Bond, which has no other Condition but for the Payment of a Sum or Sums of Money. They appeal to the King in Council not only on personal, but also in real Actions.

A COURT OF CHANCERY or Delegates not long since was erected, but on their iniquitous Proceedings in dispensing with all Laws, no Man's Property was safe, it was therefore discontinued.

THE ORDINARY FOR PROBATE OF WILLS, and granting Administration is in the respective Town Councils, with Appeals to the Court of Governor and Assistants.

THE COURT OF VICE ADMIRALTY consists of the same individual Officers or Persons, that officiate in *Massachusetts Bay*, or by Deputations from them.

THE JUSTICIARY COURT OF ADMIRALTY is much of the same Nature with that of *Massachusetts Bay*, with an Addition of the Governor and some of the Council of the neighbouring Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*.

Their present Taxes of all Kinds are very inconsiderable, the Interest of their publick Loans generally defrays all

Charges of Government and other Needfuls both of the Colony and particular Towns.

NAVIGATION. *Newport of Rhode-Island* is their principal trading Town at present; lies in 41 d. 35 m. N. Lat. it is of easy and short Access, being near the Ocean, but for that Reason not so well scituated for inland Consumption; *Providence* is about 30 Miles farther up *Narraganset-Bay* inland, therefore in a few Years it must be their principal Place of Trade. For the Safety and Conveniency of sailing into the Harbour of *Newport* in Summer 1749 was erected a *Light-House* in *Beaver Tail* at a publick Colony Charge.

LIGHT-HOUSE.

The Diameter at the Base is 24 Feet, and at the Top 13 Feet. The Height from the Ground to the top of the Cornice is 58 Feet, round which is a Gallery, and within that stands the Lanthorn, which is about 11 Feet high, and 8 Feet diameter.

The Ground the Light-House stands on is about 12 Feet above the Surface of the Sea at High Water.

The following are the Bearings (by the Compass) of several remarkable Places from the Light-House, viz.

Point Judith	S. W.	3	Deg. S.
Block-Island. N. W. Point	S. W.	8	— S.
Ditto S. E. Point.	S. W. b. S.	5	— S.
Whale Rock	W.	9	— S.
Brenton's Reaf	E. S. E.	4	— E.
Seal Rock	E. S. E.	10	— E.
S. Point of Rhode-Island	E.	7	— S.
Watch House on Castle-Hill	E. N. E.	4	— E.
Brenton's Point	E. N. E.	4	— N.
Fort on Goat-Island	E. N. E.	5	— N.
S. Eastermost of the Dumplings	N. E. b E.		
Kettle Bottom Rock	N. E.	4	— E.
Anchoring Place between the Town of Newport and Coaster's Harbour.	N. E. b E.		

N. B. There

N. B. There is a small sunken Rock lies off due S. and at the Distance of about 200 Yards from the Light-House.

The Entries and Clearances of Vessels in the Collection of *Newport* for the last Year of the late *French* and *Spanish* War ; and for the first Year of the present Peace.

From 25 *March* 1747, to 25 *March* 1748.

	Ships	Snows	Brigs	Sloops	Scooners	Total
Entred in	2	3	20	27	4	56
Cleared out	4	5	33	71	5	118

From 25 *March* 1748, to 25 *March* 1749.

	Ships	Snows	Brigs	Sloops	Scooners	Total
Entred in	2	2	30	37	4	75
Cleared out	8	11	49	9	83	160

The Vessels used here are generally Brigantines and Sloops. Their Trade in Time of War consists much in Privateering ; this last War they had bad Success ; not much Trade with *Europe* ; much used to smuggling of Conterband and uncustomed Goods ; they export for the *West-India* Islands, Horses, Live Stock of several Kinds, Butter, Cheese, Lumber, and Rum of their own distilling: their Trade seems to be upon the Decline ; they import or rather carry to *Boston*, *Sugar*, *Molasses*, and other *West-India* Island Produce, a few Negroes from *Guinea*, and Logwood from the Bay of *Honduras*.

Ever since 1710, their most beneficial Business has been Banking or *negociating a base fraudulent Paper Money Currency*, which is so contrived, that amongst themselves it comes out at about 2 & half *per Ct. per Ann.* Interest, and lend it to the neighbouring Colonies at 10 *per Ct.* † a most barefaced Cheat. The Interest of these Publick iniquitous Frauds, one Quarter goes to the several Townships to defray their Charges, the other three

† I shall only mention their Emission 1744, of a publick Paper Money Credit of £. 160,000 O. T. upon Pretext (as the Preamble exprets it) of the present *Spanish* War, and of an impending *French* War ; but was shared amongst themselves by Way of Loan at 4 *per Ct. per Ann.* Interest, for the first ten Years, and after the Expiration of those ten Years, the Principal to be paid off gradually in ten Years more without any Interest.

Quarters are lodged in the Treasury to defray the Government Charges of the Colony.

PRODUCE. Rhode-Island Colony in general is a Country for Pasture, not for Grain; by extending along the Shore of the Ocean and a great Bay, the Air is softned by a Sea Vapour which fertilizeth the Soil, their Winters are softer and shorter than up inland; it is noted for Dairy's, hence the best of Cheese made in any Part of *New-England*, is called (abroad) *Rhode Island Cheese*.

Anno 1687, when by Act of Assembly Taxes were receivable in Produce of certain Species, Indian Corn was valued at 18*d.* per Bushel, Butter 4*d.* per Pound, Sheeps Wool at 8*d.* per Pound; Currency at that Time Pieces of Eight at a Denomination of 33 3 quarters worse than Sterling.

The most considerable Farms are in the *Narraganset* Country. Their highest Dairy of one Farm, *communibus annis* milks about 110 Cows, cuts about 200 Load of Hay, makes about 13,000 Wt. of Cheese, besides Butter; and sells off considerably in Calves and fatted Bullocks. A Farmer from 73 milch Cows in five Months made about 10,000 Wt. of Cheese; besides Cheese in a Season, one Cow yeilds one Firken of Butter, 70 to 80 Wt. In good Land they reckon after the rate of 2 Acres for a milch Cow.

In this Colony there is no College or *Schola Illustris*; lately some Gentlemen, Lovers and Encouragers of the Liberal Arts and Sciences, to promote Literature in the Colony, have in *Newport*, the Metropolis of the Colony of *Rhode-Island*, lately founded a Library. That this may be of exemplary Use to our other Provinces and Colonies, I shall give some Account of it. 1747, *Abraham Redwood*, Esq; bestowed £. 500 Sterl. in Books, being Volumes, 206 Folio's, 128 Quarto's, 712 Octavo's, and 251 Duodecimo's; several other Persons have bestowed some valuable Books; A Gentleman of noted Liberality has promised an Experimental Philosophy *Apparatus*, and to erect a spiral Monument with an *Observatory*. Some
Gentlemen

Gentlemen incorporated by an ample Colony Charter have contributed, and upon Ground, given by Mr. *Henry Collins*, Merchant, erected a regular Building for a Library, at the Charge of about £. 8,000 Currency O. T.

The Building for the Library consists of one large Room where the Books are kept, 36 Foot long, 26 Foot Broad, and 19 Foot high, with two small Offices adjoining. The principal or West Front is a Pediment and *Portico* of 4 Columns after the *Dorick* Order; the whole *Entablature* of which, runs quite round the Building. The two Offices are placed as Wings, one on each Side the *Portico*, and connected with the Body of the Building, so as to form two Half-Pediments proceeding from the lower Part of the *Entablature*. These two Wings, besides the Conveniencies they afford, have a very good Effect in extending as well as adding Variety to this Front. The East Front consists of a plain *Dorick* Pediment supported by a Rustick *Arcade* of three Arches, in the Recesses of which, are plac'd three *Vinetian* Windows, after the *Ionick* Order. The Outside of the whole Building is of Rustick Work, and stands on a Base about 5 Feet high from the Ground, and the Entrance is by a Flight of Steps the whole Wedth of the *Portico*. Their Charter constitutes them a Body Politick by the Name of the *Company of the Redwood Library*, with Power to chuse annually 8 Directors, a Treasurer, Secretary, and *Librarian*; to admit new Members, make Laws, &c.

It is to be wish'd that a Tasse for Learning and Books with the better sort of People may prevail in all our Colonies. In *Philadelphia*, some Years since, a Company of Gentlemen, Well-wishers to Letters, have constituted a considerable Library; of this we shall give some Account in the Section of *Pensylvania*. In *Charlestown* of *South-Carolina*, is lately formed a Library Company, April 21, 1750, they consisted of 128 Members; their first general Meeting was 2d *Wednesday* of *July* 1750; they are to have four general Quarterly Meetings yearly, whereof one is the general annual Meeting for Election of Officers, viz. President, Vice,

Vice-President, Treasurer, Secretary, *Librarian*, Correspondent, and Steward. The Contributions of the Members to be || 5*s* Currency *per Week*: The Books to be lent to any of the Society, giving a Receipt for the same to be returned within a limited Time, a Pamphlet in — Days, an Octavo or Duodecimo in — Weeks, a Quarto in — Weeks, a Folio in — Months; of this we shall give a further Account in the Section of *South-Carolina*.

Rhode-Island Government * pretend to an Extent of Jurisdiction further North, than is at present settled, (this we hinted at p. 91. of Vol. 2.) and takes off from the Jurisdiction of *Massachusetts-Bay*, considerable Parcels of the Townships of *Wrentham*, *Bellingham*, *Mendon*, *Uxbridge* and *Douglass*. Commissioners were appointed by the General Assemblies of the Province and Colony, as is usual, to run their divisional Line last *Autumn* 1749; respectively they did not meet, and the *Rhode-Island* Commissioners run the Line *ex parte*, *Jonathan Randal*,

|| 8*d* Sterl, which is about 34*s* Sterl. *per Annum*.

* The Provincial Taxes and Township Rates have lately in the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, from the wrong headed Management of — been so oppressively great, that, 1. Upon a Dispute between the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* and Colony of *Connecticut*, lately broached concerning some Townships of the Province indented with the Colony; the *Massachusetts* Townships of *Woodstock*, *Somers*, *Enfield*, and *Suffield*, did in a voluntary Manner withdraw from the Jurisdiction of *Massachusetts*, and put themselves under the Jurisdiction of *Connecticut*; and by Force or Menace prevent the Civil Officers of *Massachusetts* from exercising any Authority and gathering of Taxes. 2. The *Massachusetts* Townships adjoining to the Northerly Line of *Rhode-Island* Colony, allowed the *Rhode-Island* Men (in an actual Trespass) to run a Line, without any Opposition; chusing rather to be under the Jurisdiction of *Rhode-Island*, where the Publick or Colony Taxes are very small, and sometimes nothing, and no Parish or Ministerial Rates, a very stunting or discouraging Article in the poor new Settlement: these Disputes can not be composed, but by applying to the Court of *Great-Britain* at a great Charge. Here we may observe, that ill devised exorbitant Taxes occasion Discontent amongst the People, with a Charge, and Confusion to the Governments.

Thomas Lapham, and *Richard Steern* Esq; † were appointed in *August* 1749 Commissioners to run the Line according to Charter : The Commissioners with *Henry Harris*, Esq; Surveyor, and two Chairmen, by themselves run a Line to their own Mind, and made Report last Tuesday of *February* 1749, 50 ; that, 30th of *October* 1749, no Commissioners from *Massachusetts-Bay* appearing, we proceeded : “ We || could find no Stake or Monument of *Woodward* and *Safferey*, but from the Place described in our Commission, viz. We found a Place where *Charles River* formed a large *Crescent* Southerly, which Place is known by the Name of *Poppolatick Pond*, which we took to be the Southermost Part of said River ; from thence we measured three Miles on a Plain in *Wrentham*, one quarter of a Mile N. Easterly from the Dwelling-house of *Thomas Man*, and about a quarter of a Mile S. Easterly from the House of *Robert Blake*, where we marked a Pine-Tree and erected a Monument of Stones, and found the same to be in Lat. 42 d. 8 m. North, which we deemed the N. E. Bounds of the Colony. From said Pine-Tree we proceeded to run the northern Boundary Line in a West Course of 8 & half d. Variation, and in this Course mark'd many Trees, said Line passing over the Southermost Part of *Manchoag Pond*, * and did terminate about 30 Rods Eastwards of a small Pond called *Graffy-Pond* at a black Oak Tree which we marked with a Monument of Stones about it, as the North Western Bounds of the Colony, being about 22 Miles from foresaid Pine-Tree to said black Oak.”

† In *Rhode-Island* Government are Squires many, because annually Elective, and once a Squire always a Squire ; not long since, a facetious Gentleman met upon the Road a *Rhode-Island* Justice of his Acquaintance, bare Legs and Feet, driving a Team in very foul Weather, he saluted him in this Manner : your Servant Squire — I am surprized to see a Gentleman of your noted Frugality, to wear his best Stockings and Shoes in such dirty Weather.

|| Perhaps, according to Instructions they designedly did not find this proper Monument.

* In the Northern Parts of *Douglasi*.

Some Time afterwards a new Commission issued from each of the Governments to perambulate the northern Boundary of *Rhode-Island Colony*, by the Stake set up by *Nathaniel Woodward* and *Solomon Safferey*, pursuant to the Agreement of the Province and Colony, *Jan. 19, 1710, 11.*

There is a Case concerning some MINISTERIAL LANDS in this Colony of considerable Value, claimed by the *Church of England*, and by the *Presbyterians* or *Congregationalists*; this Case has been depending almost 30 Years in the Colony Courts of common Law, called the Courts below, and before the King in Council, and hitherto not issued: A particular Account of the Case may be agreeable to the Devotees of both Sides.

Anno 1657. The chief Sachems of the *Narraganset* Country sold to *John Parker*, *Samuel Wilbore*, *Thomas Mumford*, *Samuel Wilson* of *Rhode Island*, and *John Hull* Goldsmith of *Boston*, *Petaquamscut Hill* for sixteen Pound; next Year the Sachem of *Nienticut*, sold for fifteen Pound some Lands North of said Purchase, to the same Purchasers. The whole Purchase was about 15 Miles long, and 6 to 7 Miles wide; afterwards they associated *Brenton* and *Arnold*, jointly they were called the seven Purchasers. Another Company, called *Athertons Company*, 1659, 60 purchased Lands of the Indians North of said *Petaquamscut* Purchase; these two Companies had several Controversies concerning their Boundaries, *Anno 1679*, they came to a final Accommodation.

Anno 1668. The *Petaquamscut* Purchasers by Deed gave 300 Acres of their best Land, for an *Orthodox Person* to preach GOD's Word to the Inhabitants: From this proceeds the Dispute, *who is the Orthodox Minister?* By the *Rhode-Island Charter* all Professions of Christians seem to be deemed *Orthodox*; by one of the first Acts of their Legislature 1663, *all Men professing Christianity, and of competent Estates, and of Civil Conversation, and obedient to the Civil Magistrate, though of different Judgment in religious Affairs, Roman Catholicks only*

only excepted, shall be admitted Freemen, and shall have * Liberty to chuse and be chosen Officers in the Colony, both Civil and Military.

The Boundaries with the *Atherton* Company being finally accommodated, the *Petaquamscut* Purchasers, 1693 made a final Division amongst themselves, and amongst other Company Grants (120 Acres to a Mill, &c.) confirmed the Grant of 1679, of 300 Acres to an Orthodox Ministry, which were Surveyed and Lotted.

These Ministerial Lands not being claimed by any Orthodox Minister, *Anno* 1702, Mr. *Henry Gardiner* enters upon 20 Acres of it, and *James Bundy* upon the remaining 280 Acres.

Most of the Grantees seem to have been of the *Church of England*, but many of them fell off to an *Enthusiastick Sect* in *Warwick*, called † *Gortonians*, now extinct; perhaps at that Time there were no Presbyterian or Congregational People in *Rhode-Island*, and at this Time it is said there are in *South Kingston* more People of the *Church of England* than of the Presbyterians and Congregationalists.

1702. Mr. *Niles*, not ordain'd in any Manner, preached in said District for some Time, but never had Possession from *Bundy* of the 280 Acres; in 1710 he left *Kingston*, and settled at *Braintree* of *Massachusetts-Bay*.

1719, *George Mumford* bought of *Bundy* the Possession of said 280 Acres.

Several Inhabitants of the *Narraganset* Country having

* They were not originally of so Catholick and Christian Spirit in *Massachusetts-Bay* Colony; the *Massachusetts* first Settlers left *England*, because of an Oppressive Test Act, notwithstanding (such is the Nature of zealous, furious Bigotry and Enthusiasm) upon their first Settling 1631 in *Massachusetts* was made a Test Act, that no Person could be free of the Colony, who was not in full Communion with some of their Churches in the Independent or Congregational Model. Here we see that Priests and Bigots of all Religions are naturally the same; the People of *New-England* are become good Christian Catholics.

† From Mr. *Gorton* their Leader, this Sectary is now lost or extinct; it did not survive Mr. *Gorton* the Father of the Sect.

petitioned the Bishop of *London*, and the Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts, for a Missionary ; Mr. *Mc Sparran* was appointed 1721, and Mr. *Gardiner* delivered his 20 Acres which he had in Possession, to the Church of *England* Incumbent, Mr. *Guy* before *Mc Sparran's* Time, had been appointed Missionary, but soon left it ; Mr. *Mc Sparren* upon a Writ of Ejectment 1723 against *Mumford* for the 280 Acres, grounded upon the Confirmation 1679, and the laying out 1693, the Original Grant of 1668 being secreted, was cast in two Tryals ; he appealed to the King in Council, but the Society for propagating the Gospel refusing to meddle in the Affair, the Matter rested, and *Mumford* kept Possession.

The Presbyterian Incumbent Minister, Mr. *Torrey*, the first Incumbent of Ordination, brought an Action versus *Gardiner* for the 20 Acres, but was cast, and Mr. *Mc Sparren* the Church of *England* Incumbent, brought and recovered Ejectment against *Robert Hazard* Tenant to Mr. *Torrey*.

1732, Mr. *Torrey* brought an Action of Ejectment against *Mumford* ; both Inferior and Superior Court gave it for *Mumford* ; but upon *Torrey's* Appeal to King in Council, these Verdicts were disallowed, and Possession ordered to the Incumbent Mr. *Torrey*, 1734—The Members of *St. Paul's* Church of *England* in *Narraganset*, April 7, 1735, addressed the Society for propagating the Gospel, &c. for their Assistance in Advice and Expence, but to no Purpose.

1735, By Advice from *England*, Mr. *Torrey* conveyed the said 280 Acres which he recovered of *Mumford*, to *Peter Coggsbal* and five others in Fee in Trust for himself and his Successors in the Presbyterian Ministry : The said Trustees leased the same to *Hazard* for a few Years.

1739, The Original Deed of the Ministerial Lands in *Petaquamscut* Purchase, which had been secreted, coming to Light, Dr. *Mc Sparren* in behalf of himself and Successors in *St. Paul's* Church of *South Kingston*, by the Advice of his Lawyers, Capt. *Bull*, Col. *Updike*, and Judge

Judge *Auchmuty*, brings a new Writ of Ejectment against *Hazard* the Occupant or Tenant of the said 280 Acres, was cast in the Courts of *Rhode-Island*, but allowed an Appeal to the King in Council, which, for some Reasons has not been entred, nor petitioned for a Hearing.

For the Information of the Curious, of after Times, I shall here insert, the VALUATION or Quota of each Township towards a publick Colony Rate of £. 5,000 New Tenor, Anno 1747.

	£.		£.
<i>Newport</i>	825	<i>Glocester</i>	118
<i>Providence</i>	550	<i>Charlestown</i>	75
<i>Portsmouth</i>	276	<i>W. Greenwich</i>	79
<i>Warwick</i>	239	<i>Coventry</i>	60
<i>Westerly</i>	270	<i>Exeter</i>	125
<i>N. Shoreham</i>	83	<i>Midletown</i>	149
<i>North Kingston</i>	325	<i>Bristol</i>	175
<i>South Kingston</i>	450	<i>Tiverton</i>	140
<i>East Greenwich</i>	125	<i>Little Compton</i>	167
<i>James Town</i>	100	<i>Warren</i>	115
<i>Smithfield</i>	274	<i>Cumberland</i>	84
<i>Scituate</i>	132	<i>Richmond</i>	64

The Affair of Currencies in general is left to the Appendix ; at present we shall only hint, that in the Colony of *Rhode Island* from the Votes of their General Assembly, it appears, that in *February* 1749, 50, their publick Bills of Credit current were £. 525,335 O. T. (whereof upon Funds of Taxes £ 135,335 ; the rest upon Loan not to be finished until 1764) which is sufficient to carry on the Trade and Business of the Colony even at their present depreciated Value ; and the present Design of emitting £. 200,000 O. T. more upon Loan, is not as a further Medium of Trade, but a *knarish Device of fraudulent Debtors of the Loan Money*, to pay off their Loans at a very depreciated Value ; the Threatnings of *Connecticut* Government to prohibit the Currency of *Rhode-*

Rhode-Island Bills in Case the *Rhode Islanders* emit more, will be an Advantage to the Fraud ; because *Rhode-Island* will then have such a Drug of their own and *New-Hampshire* Bills as to render them of little or no Value, consequently a real Debt or Mortgage may be discharged by a little or no Value.

In *Attleborough Gore* or *Cumberland* of this Colony are great Variety of *Iron-rock Ores*, but unprofitable ; here we shall give a short Account of the *Metallick Ores* and *Minerals* hitherto discovered in *New-England* ; See p. 540. Vol. I.

Mr. *Baden*, an ingenious Minner and Effayer, not many Years since, was sent over to *New-England* from *England*, by a Company of Gentlemen in quest of *Metallick Ores* and *Minerals* ; he found, 1. *Iron Ore*, (both *Rock* and *Swamp* or *Bog Ore*) in Plenty but not profitable. 2. *Lead Ore* near *Merimack*, and *Soubegan* Rivers, but not plenty, and so intermixed with *Rock* and *Spar*, is not worth working. 3. *Copper Ore* in *Simsbury Hills* in the Colony of *Connecticut*, near *Connecticut River* ; three different Companies (*Belcher* and *Caswel*, Mr. *Bowdoin* and Company, *Goff* and Company ; this last was a Bubble of *Shodes*) have wrought these Mines with a considerable Loss, and for some Years have been neglected ; Mr. *Belcher* erected a smelting Furnace in *Boston* for his *Copper Ore*, but to no Purpose. 4. *Silver Ore* in *Dracut* near *Merimack River*, a Furnace was erected in *Boston*, for smelting this Ore, but the Ore prov'd a Cheat of Col. *V—m's*, and all miscarried.

In *Attleborough Gore* some *Copper Ore* intermixed with *Iron Ore*, which is a Detriment to the *Iron Ore*, and of no Profit as to *Copper*.

We have some *Allum Slate* or *Stone*, but no *Salt Springs*, no *Pyrites* of *Vitriol Stone*, such as is found both Sides of the River *Thames* along the *Kentish* and *Essex* Shores in *England*, no *Lapis Calominaris*. We have Plenty of several sorts of *Earths*, called *Boles* or *Okers*,

Okers, such as *Black Lead* in *Brimfield* of *Massachusetts-Bay* near *Connecticut River*, *Rudle*, or *red Oker* in many Places, and some small Quantities of *yellow Oker*, which is the only valuable *Oker*.

Our only metallick Ore at present under Improvement is that of *Iron*, and may be reduced under the following Heads. 1. *Furnaces* for Smelting of *rock Ore* into *Pigs*; In *Attleborough*, now *Cumberland*, annexed lately to the Jurisdiction of *Rhode-Island*, were erected at a considerable Charge three *Furnaces*, the Country was well Wooded for *Coal*, but the Ore proved not good or profitable, and is neglected, they were of some small Use in the late War in casting of small Cannon, Bombs, and Bullets. Here is a *Magnatick Iron Ore*, which yields a red Shot Iron, not good. 2. Smaller *Furnaces* for Smelting of *Swamp* or *Bog Ore* into hollow or cast Ware, Pots, Kettles, &c. which we can afford cheaper than from *England* or *Holland*. 3. *Bloomeries*, which from *Bog* or *Swamp Ore* without a *Furnace Heat*, only by a *Forge Hearth*, reduce it into a *Bloom* or *Semiliquidated Lump* to be beat into Bars; commonly three Tons of this Ore yields one Tun of Bar Iron, much inferior to the Barr manufactured by the Refineries of Pig Iron imported from the *New-York*, *Jersies*, *Pensylvania* and *Maryland* *Furnaces*.

Col. *Dunbar*, late Surveyor General of the Woods in *America*, Anno 1731, reported to the Board of Trade and Plantations, that in *New-England* were six *Furnaces*, meaning hollow Ware *Furnaces*, and 19 *Forges*, meaning *Bloomeries*, for at that Time we had no Pig *Furnaces*, no Pig *Refineries*.

In *New-England*, we have two *slitting Mills* for *Nail Rods*, one in *Milton* eight Miles from *Boston*, and another in *Middleborough* about 30 Miles from *Boston*, which are more than we have Occasion for. Our *Nailers* can afford *Spikes* and large *Nails* cheaper than from *England*, but small *Nails* not so cheap.

RELIGION, or rather the various Religions in the Colony of Rhode-Island. The Rev. Mr. Cotton Mather in a Folio History of New-England, which he calls *Magnalia*, &c. writes, that Anno 1695. (Book VII. Chap. 3, p. 20,) “*Rhode Island Colony is a Colluvies of Antinomians, Familists, Anabaptists, Antisabbaterians, Arminians, Socinians, Quakers, Ranters, and every thing but Roman Catholics, and true Christians ; bona terra, mala gens,*” he should have added some *Brownists, Independents, and Congregationalists*, but not formed into Societies or Congregations.

In this Colony are no Township or Parish Rates for the Support of *Ecclesiasticks* of any Denomination ; only the *Church of England* Missionaries, Ministers, and School-Masters have Sallaries from *England* by the Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts ; and the Congregationalist Minister in *Westerly*, as a Missionary amongst the *Narraganset Indians*, has an Exhibition from an incorporated Society in *Scotland*, called a Society for propagating Christian Knowledge.

In the Address of the several Plantations, since united by Charter into one Colony called *Rhode-Island*, to the supream Authority in *England* 1659, they call themselves a poor Colony “*An outcast People, formerly from our Mother Nation in the Bishops Days, and since from the New-Englsh over zealous Colonies.*”

The Plantations of *Rhode Island* were originally settled by People privately Whimsical in Affairs of Religion, *Antinomians*, rigid *Brownists*, &c. their first embodied Societies of Publick Meetings were *Anabaptists* (the true *Entbusiasts*, were only Transients or Vagrants) and to this Day seem to have the Majority in the Colony.— In general they differ from the other two Branches (*Presbyterians* and *Independents* of the Professions in *England* tolerated by Licence) solely in their admitting only of Adults to Baptism, and that not by sprinkling, but Dipping or Immersion ; private Persons among themselves differ in particular Tenets, such as, It is unlawful to pray with

with or for any practical Unbelievers——That human Learning is no way necessary for a Gospel-Preacher——Differences as to Grace and Free-Will, &c.——

Some have no particular Place of Meeting or Worship: We shall give a more particular Account of the *Sectaries* amongst the *Anabaptists* in the digressional Article of *British* Plantation Sectaries in Religious Worship.

The *Quakers*, persecuted in *Massachusetts-Bay*, first came to *Rhode-Island* 1656, and several of the most Enthusiastick amongst the *Anabaptists* joined with them; the Congregational Way did not take Place until 1698; Mr. *Honyman* the first settled Church of *England* Missionary, fixed in *Newport* of *Rhode-Island*, 1706, he was the Senior Church of *England* Missionary, and died lately.

The *Baptists* or *Anabaptists* of *Providence*, 1654, divided into two Sects concerning the essential Necessity of laying on of Hands (Ordination) as a Qualification in a Person to administer Baptism: the laying on of Hands at length generally obtained—There is a strict Association of the Ordination Baptists by Itenerant yearly Meetings all over *New-England* once a Year.—1665, A Baptist Church or Congregation was formed in the new Plantation of *Westerly*, and generally embraced the seventh Day or Saturday Sabbath, and are at present a large Society, called Sabbaterian Baptists—1671. From the Sabbaterian Baptist Church of *Newport* some drew off, and formed a first Day Sabbath Church.

1720, In *Newport* was gathered a Society in the Congregational Way; 1728, Another Church of Congregationalists proceeded from them; their first considerable Appearance, but without any Place of publick Worship, was 1698.—There is a Congregational Society in *Providence*, but do not thrive.—There is a Congregational Meeting in *South Kingston* which we have mentioned at length in the Account of the Ministerial Lands of *Petaquamscut*.—There is a Congregational Church in *Westerly*, the Minister has an annual Exhibition from the *Scots* Society.

Society for propagating of Christian Knowledge amongst the *Narraganset* Indians as his Province; the Fund was partly the Donation of the Rev. Dr. *Williams* of *London*. — There is a Congregationalist Society in *Shoreham* called *Block Island*. — And some in Townships lately taken from the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* and annexed to the Colony of *Rhode Island*.

The Church of *England* Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts, in this Colony have four Missionary Ministers at *Newport*, *S. Kingston*, *Providence*, and *Bristol*, and occasional Worship at *Warwick* and *Westerly*, two School Masters with Sallaries, and lately in *Newport* a Catechist or School-Master, a Donation of their late Collector of the Customs, Mr. *Key's*.

Here is no Presbyterian Congregation after the Model of the Churches of *Scotland*, *Holland*, *Geneva*, and the *French Hugenots*.

Many Quaker Meetings all over the Colony.

Civil Officers are chosen indifferently out of every Religious Society; some Years since Mr. *Cranston* was continued Governor many Years as an impartial good Man; he did not associate with any Sect, and did not attend any publick Meeting; as the Charter grants an universal Liberty of Conscience, he was a *Keep at home Protestant*.

A small Congregation of *Jews*, who worship at a private House, where a Clerk or subordinate Teacher regularly officiates at all constituted Times.

A DIGRESSION

Concerning the various Sectaries in Religion, in the British Settlements of North-America.

With Regard to Religion, Mankind may be distinguished into three general Sects, 1. *Infidels*, 2. *Scepticks*, 3. The *Religious*, properly so called, consisting of many peculiar Modes or Schemes of Practical Devotion.

The *Religious* are divided into Christians, &c, here we write concerning Christians only.

The

The sacred Scriptures, called our BIBLE, is the *Magna Charta* of all Christian Societies ; this Book or Bible is a most valuable Collection of moral Precepts; some times delivered in plain literal Sentences, but generally by way of *Mystery, Fable, Allegory, Allusion*, and the like, as was the Manner of the *Eastern Sages* and Writers of those Times. I am a catholick Christian, no Libertine, no Enthusiast, no Bigot ; what I relate is purely Historical ; Bishop *Tillotson* writes, “ The Zealots of all Parties have got a ‘scurvy Trick of Lying for the Truth.”

It is the general Opinion of Politicians, that a proper Deference to a well regulated Clergy is requisite in a Commonwealth ; notwithstanding, and not inconsistent with this due Deference, I may be allowed to make the following Remarks concerning the Conversions or Propagation of Christian Knowledge among our *American Indians* : I shall premite the Observations of some good Men who were knowing in this Matter, before the Missionary Societies did take Place. *

Mr. *Elliot* Minister of *Roxbury* near *Boston*, with much Labour learnt the *Natick* Dialect of the Indian Languages. He published an *Indian Grammer*, preached in Indian to

* At our first Arrival among the *American Indians*, we found no Places and Times of religious Worship, only some Priests called *Powowers*, a kind of knavish cunning Conjurers, like those in *Lapland*, who pretend to converse with familiar Spirits.

After some Years Communication with the neighbouring Indians, these Indians of themselves established some good and natural Regulations ; such as — If any Man be idle a Week, or at most a Fort night, he shall pay *five Shillings*. — If an unmarried Man shall lye with a young Woman unmarried, he shall pay *twenty Shillings*. — Every young Man, not a Servant, shall be compelled to set up a Wigwam (a House or Hutt) and Plant for himself. — If any Woman shall not have her Hair tied up, but hang loose, or be cut as Men’s Hair, she shall pay *five Shillings*. — Whoever shall commit Fornication, if a Man, shall pay *20 s.* and if a Woman *10 s.* — None to beat their Wives, Penalty *20 s.* The *Powowers*, who are the Indian Physicians as well as Priests ; any Person inclinable to the Christian Religion, when sick, and weak minded, are used as we Christians of different Sects of Religion use one another, that is, damn them if they do not assent to the Faith of the Priest.

several of their Tribes, and translated 1664 our BIBLE and several Books of Devotion into the said Indian Language ; he relates several pertinent natural Queries of the Indians relating to our Religion. Whether JESUS CHRIST the Mediator or Interpreter, could understand Prayers in the *Indian* Language ? How Men could be the Image of GOD, since Images were forbidden in the second Commandment ? if the Father be nought, and the Child good, why should GOD in the second Commandment be offended with the Child ? with many other intricate Questions concerning our Accounts of the Creation and the Flood, particularly, how the *English* came to differ so much from the *Indians* in their Knowledge of GOD and JESUS CHRIST, since they had all at first but one Father ? Mr. *Elliot* was so much approved of ; that in relation to the Indians, in the Acts of the General Assembly, the Acts run thus “ by the Advice of said Magistrates and of Mr. *Elliot* ;” Mr. *Elliot* travelled into all Parts of the *Massachusetts* and *Plymouth* Colonies even so far as *Cape Cod*.

Mr. *Maybew*, a noted English Evangelist, † or Itinerant Missionary among the Indians, more especially with the Indians of *Martha's-Vineyard*, *Nantucket*, and *Elizabeth* Islands ; he learnt the Indian Language, that he might be in a Capacity of instructing the Natives in the Christian Faith ; his Father had a kind of Patent from Home, as Proprietor and Governor of these Islands.

All our Missionaries who have endeavoured the Conversion of the Indians, have been guilty of a grand fundamental Mistake, which if not amended, will forever render their real Conversion impracticable ; the Clergy Missionaries began by inculcating the most * abstruse and

† In his Voyage to *England* 1657, the Vessel foundered at Sea, and he was lost.

* As it is generally agreed amongst Christians, that Revelations, and Mysteries or Miracles are ceased ; Religion is become a rational Affair, and ought to be taught in plain intelligible Words. The Basis

and Myfterious Articles of the Chriftian Religion. Mr. *Mayhew* in his Journals, writes, *That the Indians declared the*

of all Religions and Myfteries, is, the Belief of the Exiftence of a fupreme incomprehenfible BEING, Director of the Universe ; this we can investigate no other Ways but by Reason : The TRINITY ought to be introduced by fome rational obvious Analogies, fuch as : We offer our Praifes and Prayers to the fupreme Being, called GOD THE FATHER : invited and encouraged thereto, from the Confideration of the divine Clemency and Benevolence, that is, by the Mediation of GOD THE SON ; with the Affiftance of the DIVINE SPIRIT, GOD THE HOLY GHOST ; all three being the Attributes of, or perfonated by one and the fame GOD, and which we exprefs by three Perfons in the Godhead : When the Heathens come to underftand thefe Expreffions, they may be impreffed upon them in our ufual myftical Terms ; but all abftrufe fanatical Formulas and Creeds, fuch as is the *Athanaſian Creed* ought never to be offer'd to them.

The Catechiſms whereby we initiate our Children and the Indian Heathen into the Chriftian Religion perhaps require Caſtigation. That of the Church of *England* in its firſt Queſtions ſeems very low andilly, adapted to a Nurſe and her Child, and may give the Indians a mean Opinion of our Religion Doctors.

Queſtion. What is your Name ?

Answer. A. B.

Queſtion. Who gave you this Name ?

Answer. My God Fathers and God Mothers.

That of the Weſtminſter Aſſembly of Divines, immediately enters into the moſt abſtrufe Articles of our Religion.

How many Perfons are there in the Godhead ?

What are the Decrees of God ?

Who is the Redeemer of God's Elect ?

What is effectual Calling ?

Good Works ought inceſſantly to be preached to the Indians. Free Will and Predeſtination ought not raſhly to be touched upon, according to our Notions of the Preſcience and Omnifcience of God, and of the Free agency of Mankind which renders them accountable for their Actions, they are ſo much in *Contrast*, that to reconcile them is one of the greateſt Myſteries of the Chriftian or any other Religion.

Their Inſtruction ought to be brief, and not *verbose*, not to meddle with the manifold ſmall Differences and Controverſies among our Sectaries, becauſe, as the Conceptions, Humours, and Intereſt of ſeveral People are various, a general Comprehention is impracticable in Nature. Only teach them that all Religions are good which are conſiſtent with Society ; that is, all Religions are good, that teach Men to be good. Our Attachment to peculiar Ways of Worſhip, is not
from

the Difficulties of the Christian Religion were such as the Indians could not endure; their Fathers had made some Tryal of it, but found it too hard for them, and therefore quitted it. The fundamental Catholick Articles of our Religion are short, simple, and easily understood by the meanest Capacity. 1. To adore one supreme Being, in his Agency of creating and governing the Universe. 2. To Honour our natural Parents, and all Persons in political Authority (Parents of the Country) over us. 3. To love our Neighbours as ourselves. 4. To be merciful, even to brute Beasts. Whatever is inconsistent with any of these, is *Irreligion.* *What doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love Mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God.* The fewer *Credenda*, or Articles of

from any *Light within us*; but is inculcated in our tender flexible Years, by our Parents, Nurses, Preceptors, Priests, and Laws of our Country. Orthodoxy in Religion is ambulatory; upon a Revolution, the Party that prevails, is the Orthodox.

All Bigots or uncharitable idle Sectaries are Disturbers of Society, such are the Roman Catholicks, the High-flyers of the Church of England, the Covenanters or *Cameronians* of the Kirk of Scotland, &c.) and their Ringleaders fall under the Inspection of Civil Authority, and may without any Imputation of Persecution upon account of Religion, by way of a Salutary Civil Remedy, be sent to a mad House or Work-House, to bring them to a right Mind.

Some proper Degree of Learning or Literature, administered to the Indians is requisite, not only to civilize them, bring them to our Language and Manners, but to render them less subject to Credulity and Frantickness in their Devotions. The Roman-Catholick Tenet of Ignorance being the Mother of Devotion, is meant only of a superstitious Devotion, not of a proper decent Mode of Worship—I do not join avowedly with the Free-thinkers, who from the Maxim of *frustra fit per plura* say, that the intricate Method of our Redemption from Damnation and hellish Everlasting Pennances, by the Omnipotent God, might in a peremptory Manner been done by a FIAT.

Mysteries, are properly Deviations from the ordinary Laws of Nature or Providence: Mysteries in most Schemes of Religion are unnecessary, and too much multiplied: the standing Maxim ought to be, *Nec Deus interfit, nisi dignus vindice nodus.* Human Laws and Sanctions can not extend to numberless human Vices and Wickednesses; therefore divine Rewards and Punishments of a God who knows in Secret ought to be inculcated.

Faith in any Scheme of practical Religion ; the less intricate, more comprehensive, and consequently not subject to split into Sectaries : All *Enthusiastical* or *Juggling Schemes* of Devotion are a Nuisance, the *Wb—ld* (an insignificant Person, but a happy dramattick Actor of *Enthusiasm*) *New-Lights*, pretend to know one another at *first Sight* as much as if they were of the Order of *Free-Masons*.

In former Times, before hired Missionaries from incorporate Societies took Place, the Voluntier Provincial Missionaries, viz. Mr. *Elliot*, Mr. *Maybew*, &c. of *New-England*, who believed what they taught, were of exemplary good Life, and spared no Fatigue, were of great Service in civilizing our intermixed Indians, though their Faith was not strong enough to carry them out among the Tribes of our adjacent WilderNESS Indians. We have scarce any Account to give of the late Missionaries from the three several Societies now subsisting for propagating of Christian Knowledge amongst the wild Indians, or Men of the Woods, as the *French* call them. The *Albany* Church of *England* Missionary, sometimes visits the adjacent Tribe of *Mohawk-Indians* of the *Iroquois* Nation. The Congregationalist Missionaries from the *New-England* Society in *London* upon the *New-England* Frontiers at *Georges*, *Richmond* and *Fort-Dummer* act only as Chaplains to these small Garrisons of ten or a dozen Men each. Mr. * *Brainerd*, a late Missionary upon the Frontiers of
the

* The Rev. Mr. *Brainerd*, a Missionary from the *Scot's* Society to the Indians upon the Rivers of *Delaware* and *Sesquahanna*, was a true and zealous Missionary, giving Allowances for his weak Enthusiastick turn of Mind. In his printed Book, *Philadelphia* 1745, concerning the Indian Conversions, " at a Distance with my Bible in my Hand, I was resolved if possible, to spoil their Spirit of *Powwowing*, and prevent their receiving an Answer from the Infernal World." In the Year 1744, he rode about 4,000 Miles to and fro among the Indians, sometimes five or six Weeks together, without seeing a white Man ; he had three Houses of Residence at Distances in the Indian Countries. Is there any Missionary from any of the Societies for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts, that has reported the like ?

the *Fersies* and *Pensylvania* upon the Exhibition of the *Scots Society* for propagating Christian Knowledge ; seems to have been the only Minister who faithfully performed the Service of an Indian Missionary.

In all Royal Charters, and proprietary Grants of Colonies in *British North America*, one of the principal Designs is said, *to be the Conversion of the Indians by good Instruction and an exemplary good Life* : the Missionaries from the Society, do not in the least, attempt the Conversion of the Indians, because it requires Travel, Labour, and Hardships : and the *British People* in general, instead of Christian Virtues, teach them *European Vices* ; for Instance, by introducing the Use of intoxicating Liquors, for private Profit, they dispence *more strong Liquor* than *Gospel* to the Indians ; and thus have destroy'd, and continue to destroy perhaps more Indians, than formerly the *Spaniards* did, by their inhumane and execrable Cruelties, under the Name of Conversions ; the *Spaniards* destroy'd only their Bodies, we destroy *Body and Mind*. Mr. *Mayhew* in his Journals writes, That the Indians told him, that *they could not observe the Benefit of Christianity, because the English Christians cheated them of their Lands, &c. and the Use of Books made them more cunning in Cheating*. In his Indian Itineraries, *he desired of Ninicroft Sachem of the Narraganset Indians, leave to Preach to his People ; Ninicroft bid him go and make the English good first, and*

Enthusiasm in the *Roman Catholick* Missionaries is encouraged by their Church and States ; it prompts them (some as Merit, some as Penance) to endure all manner of Hardships towards promoting, not only their Religion, but also their Trade and national Interest with the *Indians*. Religious Superstitions, by falling in with the Weak and *Enthusiastick* natural Propensities of Mankind, are very powerful ; but in Time ought to be rectified, as Reason gets the better of these human Infirmities. As strong Reasoning is not accommodated to the Bulk of Mankind, Credulity or Revelation is a more easy Possession of the Mind ; without Revelation a Man is quite at a loss, from whence he came, for what Purpose he exists, and where he is to go when he ceases to live : There is a strong Propensity in human Nature to Religion ; some abandoned Politicians make a wrong Use of this, to promote their wicked Designs, Ambitions, and Interests.

chid Mr. Mayhew † for hindering him from his Business and Labour; in another Place Mr. Mayhew writes, The Mohog Indians told him, that they did believe in GOD, and worship him, but as several Nations had their distinct Ways of Worship, they had theirs, which they thought a good Way. The Indians were entirely wanting in any set Form of religious devotional Worship.

Seeing the Religion Missionaries neglect the Conversion of the Indians, and take no further Care than with relation to their Sallaries or Livings, and of being stationed in the most oppulent Towns which have no more Communication with the Savage Indians, than the City || of London has; the respective Governments upon the Continent of America ought to contrive some Method of civilizing the Indians, which will be attended with many considerable Advantages. 1. Our own TRANQUILITY. 2. Our Indian Skin and Fur Trade; 3. By rendering them serviceable to us in our Agriculture and Navigation; thus a too great Importation of Foreigners may be avoided. In Pennsylvania has been a vast Importation of Palatines, Saltburghers, and other Foreigners; by a late Letter from a Gentleman of Philadelphia, a Man of Veracity, Penetration, and Authority in the Province of Pennsylvania, I am informed; this I publish with relation to those Gentlemen, who seem inadvertently to insist upon the introducing of Floods of Foreigners among us:

† This Saying of Ninicroft's was very applicable to Mr. Wh—ld, a late vagrant dramattick Enthusiast in North America; H—ly of the Oratory, so called in London, an Ecclesiastical Mountebank; and such like Impostors ought to be animadverted upon, they are a Scandal and Reproach to the Christian Religion.

|| As to the Conversion of Indians they make it a Sine-cure, or only a Name or free Gift, and may be enjoyed any where to the same Advantage. As an Historian upon the Place of Observatian, I could not avoid (without Suspicion of Partiality) representing these Misapplications in a true and proper Light, being a publick Affair; I do not meddle with the personal Character of any Missionary, if the Bishop's Commissary has any Authority, it is his Office and Care; I avoid being officious.

That

That the Germans in all Probability, allowing for Progress of Time, will be possessed of the chiefest and most valuable of our Lands; they by their Industry and penurious Way of living, get Rich where others Starve: The Irish were settled this Side of Sefquahanna River many Years before the Dutch (meaning the high Dutch or Germans) came among us, and wherever they had a good Plantation, the Dutch bought it from them; at present the Irish Families are but here and there on this Side of said River; they move to the Westward of the River; the Dutch follow them, and by offering high Prices for their Lands, the Irish quit, and go further, the Dutch by their superior Industry and Frugality may out the British People from the Province; This Province by Importation of Foreigners, does at present, in fencible Men, very near equal all the English or British Militia, in the English or British Continent of America; in Case of a French or Dutch War, these Dutch or German Foreigners by herding or settling together, retaining and propagating the Language and Differences in religious Worship; upon a Discontent or Disaffection (better we never had one foreign Family settled among us) may become not only a useless, but a pernicious Body.

The Missionaries from the Society in London, for propagating the Gospel, &c. call all Dissenters, the Separation: Mr. Hobart, † a late noted Congregational Writer, says, this Society and their Missionaries are Episcopal Separatists; both Sides are notoriously in the Error. William George, D. D. Dean of Lincoln, in his late Sermon before the Society for propagating the Gospel, &c. says, “Circumstances in Worship, in their Nature variable, are left to be determined by the Discretion of those, whose Business it is to see that all Things be done decently and in Order.”

There

† Mr. Hobart (perhaps from Party Prejudice) a Gentleman of Learning and Application, has fallen into a very gross Mistake, viz. That the Church of England is a Separation in New-England. Before the

There are in *Great-Britain* three incorporated pious Societies * for propagating Christian Knowledge. I shall here give some Account of them, with relation to the *British North America* Settlements.

I. Anno 1659, The Parliament of *England*, encouraged the Propagation of the Gospel among the *Indians* in *New-England* and Parts adjacent; and enacted a Corporation, consisting of a President, Treasurer, and 14 Assistants, called, *The President and Society for propagating the Gospel in New-England and Parts adjacent*; that the Commissioners for the united Colonies of *New-England* for the Time being, shall have Power to dispose of said Monies of the Corporation. By a Collection in Virtue of an Act of Parliament, in all the Parishes of *England*, was collected a considerable Sum, which purchased a considerable Land Estate. Upon the *Restoration*, their Charter was deemed void, and Col. *Beddingsfield* a Roman Catholick military Officer, who had sold Lands to this Society,

the Union of the two Kingdoms of *Great-Britain* 1707, the Ecclesiastical Constitution of the *English American* Plantations, was (*Roman Catholicks* excepted) a general Toleration of all Christian Professions without any Preference. In the Treaty for this Union, it was naturally agreed by the Commissioners, and afterwards confirmed in Perpetuity, by Acts of both Parliaments; viz. that the Church of *England* was to be deemed the established Church, with the established Toleration, in all the formerly *English* Colonies, by this Expression, and Territories thereto (to *England*) belonging. I can not account for the Reverend Mr. *Hobart's* Lapse into that Sophistical School-Boy Evasion, that the Territories thereto belonging, is meant of the *Jersey* Islands only, but not of the Plantations; the Act of Uniformity, 1558, I. ELIZ. is out of the Question, because at that Time we had no Plantations, therefore I shall not adduce it. In the strict Act of Uniformity 14 Carol. II; there is no Addition of Territories thereto belonging, (the *Jersey* Islands, at that Time belonged to *England*) all the Charter and Proprietary Grants had a Clause of a general Liberty of Conscience (*Roman Catholicks* excepted) in their Colonies to encourage Settlers of all Sectaries; because an exclusive Uniformity occasions much Distraction and Confusion among the good Christians of several Denominations, and might have been an Obstruction to the Settlements.

* See Vol. I. P. 231.

was advised to seize them as being an illegal Purchase, and under Value. The Members of the Society solicited K. Charles II. for a new Charter, which they obtained, dated February 7. 14 Carol. II; ordaining that for ever hereafter, within the Kingdom of *England*, there shall be a Society or Company, for Propagation of the Gospel in *New-England and the Parts adjacent in America*: The first nominated Members were of the highest Rank and Stations at Court; their Successors to be chosen by the Society, but never to exceed the Number of 45. In Chancery they recovered Mr. *Beddingfield's* Land. *Robert Boyle*, Esq; was appointed the first Governor; upon his Decease, *Robert Thompson* was elected; and upon his Death Sir *William Ashurst* of *London* Alderman. The present Governor is Sir *Samuel Clark* Baronet, who succeeds his Father Sir *Robert Clark* Baronet. The whole Revenue of the Corporation is £. 500 to £. 600 *Sterl. per Ann.* at present they exhibit small but well placed Sallaries to several Missionaries *English* and *Indians*; and appoint Commissioners in *New-England* to manage this Charity. There was a Benefaction of the good and honourable *Robert Boyle* Esq; of £. 90 *Sterl. per Ann.* to this Corporation; another of Dr. *Daniel Williams* a dissenting Minister of *London*; he left to the Corporation the Reversion of a real Estate upwards of £. 100 *Sterl. per Ann.* which fell to them 1746; the Clause of his Will concerning it is,

“ I give to Mr. *Joseph Thompson* and the rest of the Society for *New-England*, my Estate in *Essex*, called, *Tolsbant, Becknam Mannor*, or by any other Name, which I bought of Mrs. *Hannah Fox*, alias *Bradley*, with all the Profits and Advantages, belonging to me after the Death of the said *Fox*, now *Bradley*, as long as the said Society or Corporation shall continue; upon Condition, That £. 60 *per Ann.* shall be allowed between two well qualified Persons, as to Piety and Prudence, to be nominated successively by my Trustees, to Preach as Itenerants in
the

the *English* Plantations in the *West-Indies*, and for the good of what *Pagans* and *Blacks* lye neglected there. And the Remainder to be paid Yearly to the *College of Cambridge* in *New-England*, or such as are usually employed to manage the Blessed Work of converting the poor *Indians* there ; to promote which, I design this Part of my Gift. But if my Trustees be hindred from nominating the said *Itinerants*, under Pretence of any Statute in *New-England*, or elsewhere, I give the said £. 60 per *Ann.* to the said *College* in *New-England*, to encourage and make them capable to get constantly some learned Professor out of *Europe* to reside there, and shall be of their own Nomination, in Concurrence with the Ministers of the Town of *Boston*, in the said *New-England*.

And if the aforesaid Society or Corporation shall happen to be dissolved, or be deprived of their present Priviledge ; my Will is, and I hereby give the said *Mannor*, with all the Profits and Advantages, to the said Town of *Boston*, with the Ministers thereof, to benefit the said *College*, as above, and to promote the Conversion of the poor *Indians*."

II. The State of the *Society in Scotland* for propagating *Christian Knowledge*. This Society began 1700 ; by *Q. Anne's* Letters Patent 1709 they were incorporated : by Donations at present 1750, they are enabled to maintain 136 Schools, in which are educated above 7,000 Children of both Sexes ; and from its first Erection to this Time, it has been the means of instructing about 50,000 Children of both Sexes. This Society by a new Patent 1738 are allowed to instruct their Children in Husbandry and Handicrafts. — By their first Patent they were allowed to extend their Care to Places abroad, particularly to the *Indians* on the Borders of *New-York*, *New-Jersies*, and *Pensylvania* ; the *New-England* Society were supposed to have the Missionary Charge of *New-England*. They have contributed to a *College* lately erected in the *New-Jersies*.

III. June 16, 1701. K. WILLIAM incorporated a Society with perpetual Succession, by the Name of *The Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts*, to be accountable annually to the Lord high Chancellor, Lord chief Justice of the King's Bench, and Lord chief Justice of the Common Pleas. Every Year some new Members are admitted, to assist the Society with their good Counsels and Subscriptions; the present Members are about 230.

The Missions with the respective Sallaries at this Time, are

NEWFOUNDLAND		£.		£.
<i>Trinity-Bay</i>		50	<i>Fairfield</i>	50
<i>St. John's</i>		50	<i>New-London</i>	60
<i>School-Master</i>		10	<i>Groton School</i>	5
			<i>Newtown</i>	50
MASSACHUSETTS-BAY			<i>Simsbury</i>	30
<i>Boston</i>		70	<i>Norwalk</i>	20
<i>Newbury</i>		60	<i>Darby</i>	20
<i>Marblehead</i>		60	<i>New-Eng. Itinerant</i>	70
<i>Salem</i>		40		
<i>Braintree</i>		60	NEW-YORK	
<i>Scituate</i>		40	<i>New-Chester</i>	50
<i>Hopkinton</i>		60	<i>School-Master</i>	10
			<i>New-York School-Master</i>	15
NEW-HAMPSHIRE			<i>Jamaica</i>	50
<i>Portsm. and Kittery</i>		75	<i>Hampstead</i>	50
			<i>Catechist</i>	10
RHODE-ISLAND			<i>School-Master</i>	10
<i>Newport, & Catechist</i>		80	<i>New-Rochel</i>	50
<i>Narraganset and</i>			<i>Rye</i>	50
<i>Warwick</i>		100	<i>School-Master</i>	15
<i>Providence</i>		60	<i>Oyster Bay School-Master</i>	10
<i>School-Master</i>		10	<i>Brook-haven</i>	50
<i>Bristol</i>		60	<i>Staten Island</i>	50
			<i>School-Master</i>	15
CONNECTICUT			<i>New Windsor</i>	30
<i>Stratford</i>		70		<i>Albany</i>
<i>Catechist</i>		10		
<i>School-Master</i>		15		

	£.		£.
<i>Albany & Mohawke</i>	50		
<hr/>		<hr/>	
NEW-JERSEY		NORTH-CAROLINA	
<i>Elizabeth Town</i>	70	<i>Itinerant N. District</i>	50
Catechist	10	<i>S. District</i>	50
<i>Amboy</i>	60	<hr/>	
<i>Burlington</i>	60	SOUTH-CAROLINA	
<i>Monmouth County</i>	60	<i>St. Thomas</i>	30
<i>Salem</i>	60	<i>St. Andrews</i>	50
<i>Shrewsbury School</i>	10	<i>St. Georges</i>	30
<i>Newark</i>	50	<i>St. Pauls</i>	30
<hr/>		<i>St. Hellens</i>	30
PENNSYLVANIA		<i>St. Johns</i>	30
<i>New-Castle</i>	70	<i>St. James</i>	30
<i>Lewis</i>	60	<i>St. Bartholomew</i>	30
<i>Apaquiminick</i>	60	<i>Prince Frederick</i>	30
<i>Chester</i>	60	<i>Christ's Church</i>	30
<i>School-Master</i>	10	<hr/>	
<i>Oxford</i>	60	GEORGIA	
<i>Periquibame</i>	60	<i>Savannah</i>	50
<i>Kent County</i>		<hr/>	
<i>Itinerant of Pen-</i>		BAHAMAS	
<i>sylvania & Jersey</i>	50	<i>Providence</i>	60

Sallaries to Missionaries, Catechists, School-Masters, and Officers of the Society, are an annual Expence of about £. 3540 Sterl ; part of the Fund for this, is yearly, by Benefactions, Legacies, and Entrances (at five Guineas each) of new Members

£. 1600

Yearly Payments of Subscribers 600

Rents of Lands and dividends in the Stocks 317

Ten Pounds Sterling in Books are allowed to each Missionary as a Library ; and five Pounds in devotional Books and Tracts to be distributed, such as Bibles, Common-Prayers, whole Duty of Man, &c.

This Society have the Direction of two other separate charitable Funds. 1. The Negroe Fund, which

at

at present may amount to £. 3,000 Sterl. principal in old S. S. Annuities; their yearly Donations are very inconsiderable. There are two Missionaries as Catechists of Negroes, one at *New-York* £. 50 Sterl. per Ann. another at *Philadelphia* at £. 50 Sterl. per Ann. 2. The *Barbadoes* Estate, which is appropriated to particular Uses mentioned in General *Codrington's* Will; such as, A Catechist to the Negroes in the Societies Plantations in *Barbadoes*, £. 70 Sterl. Sundries for a College in *Barbadoes* called *Codrington's* College, a School-Master, an Usher, a Professor of Philosophy and Mathematicks, &c.

Towards the new Settlement of *Nova-Scotia*, the Society resolve to send over six Missionaries and six School-Masters, to prevent the new Settlers being perverted to *Popery*, by the present *French* Popish Settlers. Our new Settlers have not the least Communication with the *French* Settlers; and perhaps in the Town of *Hallifax* and *Garrison*, there are no professed Papists to be found; A parochial Minister, with the Chaplains belonging to the Troops, and the Congregational Minister from *New-England* for the Use of the *New-England* Emigrants, may be sufficient.

The Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts is a very good, pious, and most laudable Design; but the Execution thereof in *British North America* is much faulted. †

i. Any

† It is a profane Saying of some; *He who meddles with the Clergy, puts his Hand into a Nest of Wasps or Hornets*: but as this Society in their yearly Abstracts, request that People in *America*, who upon the Spot have Opportunities of observing what relates to the Execution of this pious Christian Exhibition, may represent: As it falls in the Course of this *American* History, without being reckoned officious or presuming, I may be allowed to make these Remarks. — In short, the Civilizing and Christianizing of the *Heathens*, which with us are the *Aboriginal American Indians*, and the importd *Negroe Slaves*, seems naturally to be the principal Care of Missionaries; the *Quakers* observe, that good Sallaries called *Living*s, in a sort of *Sine-cure*, is the principal Concern of the Missionaries; Itinerancies and Conversions of the *Heathen*, is too laborious, and does not answer their Intention.

I. Any indifferent Man could not avoid imagining, that by *propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts*, was meant, the Conversion of *Natives* of such Parts as the Royal Charters and Proprietary Grants of our Plantations, enjoin the Civilizing and Conversion of the *Indians* by *Doctrine* and *Example*. It is astonishing to hear some of these Missionaries and their Friends, indiscreetly affirm, that this was no Part of the Design, because not expressed in *strong Terms* in their CHARTER. King WILLIAM the Granter of the Charter, can not be imagined to have meant, that the Expulsion or *elbowing out sober Orthodox Dissenters* was the principal Intention thereof, though at present, their chief Practice; there is not one Missionary (the *Albany* and *Mohawk* Missionary excepted) that takes the least Notice of the *Indians*; the Society, sensible of this Neglect, in their latest Mission, that of Mr. *Price* for *Hopkinton* about 30 Miles inland from *Boston*, he is particularly instructed, to endeavour the Propagation of the Christian Religion among the neighbouring *Indians*.

The Practice of the present Missionaries, is to obtain a Mission to our most civilized and richest Towns where are no *Indians*, no want of an *Orthodox* Christian Ministry,

¶ Dr. *Lisle* Bishop of *St. Asaph*, in his Sermon *February 19, 1747, 8* before the Society, speaking of *Romish Portugal* Missionaries in *Asia* from a Society, called *de propaganda fide*, says, "They settle themselves in Nations which are Christians already, and under Pretence of converting the *Infidels*, which are among them; their chief Business seems to be, the perverting of Christians themselves from their ancient Faith, and to draw them over." N. B. No *Presbyterian* or *Congregationalist* could have wrote in stronger Terms, with regard to our present Missionaries.—As to the Conversion of the *Indians* not being their Care; we find it not so understood in the excellent Sermons preached before the Society from Time to Time; in many of their Anniversary Sermons, the Preacher says, that the direct Aim of the Society, is the Propagation of Christianity abroad, among the Barbarous Nations of *America*.—In such Parts of the World, as have not yet been enlightned by the Gospel, or are in Danger of having this Light extinguished.

In the Charter from the Parliament of *England 1659*, The first President of the Corporation was Judge *Steel*, and the first Treasurer was Mr. *Henry Asburst*, which should have been mentioned before.

and

and no *Roman Catholicks*, the three principal Intentions of their Mission : they seem absurdly to value themselves upon the Diversion (I do not say Perversion) of the *Presbyterians* and *Congregationalists* : All Men have a laudable Veneration for the Religion of their *Ancestors*, and the Prejudices of Education are hardly to be overcome, Why then should a Person who peaceably follows the *Orthodox* allowed or tolerated Way of his *Forefathers*, be over-persuaded to relinquish it, considering that by an interceding Wavering, the Man may be overfet and sink into *Infidelity* ? They seem to value themselves more upon this, than upon the Conversion of a *Heathen* to our Civil national Interest, and to Christianity, or the Reformation of a *Roman Catholick*, as is much wanted in *Maryland* ; or preserving the *British* Extract from running into Infidelity, as in *North-Carolina*.

2. In their *Charter* it is said, That in several of the Colonies and Factories beyond the Seas, the Provision is very mean in some, and in many others none at all for the Maintenance of *Orthodox* Ministers ; therefore the Society is established for the Management of such Charities as shall be received for this Use. So it is, their Missionaries are not stationed in such *poor out Towns*, but in the most *oppulent, best Civilized* and *Christian Towns* of the Provinces ; that is in all the *Metropolis* Towns of the Colonies, and other rich and flourishing Towns, *well able to support, and in fact do support* *Orthodox* Ministers.

In all our Colonies (*Rhode-Island* excepted) there is a parochial Provision for an *Orthodox* Gospel Ministry : Dr. *Bray*, a very zealous Promoter of this Society, writes, That in the Colonies of *Massachusetts* and *Connecticut*, there was no need at all of Missionaries.

In the latter Years of Queen *Anne's* Administration, perhaps, the Design of this Charity was perverted from the original Design of converting the *Heathens*, preserving of Religion among our out Plantations, not able to maintain a Gospel Ministry, and preventing a *Popish Influence* :

it was converted to a *Design of withdrawing the tolerated sober religious Dissenters to a Conformity with the* (then) *High Church*; * a *Manuduction* to Popery, and the Introduction of a *Popish Pretender* to the Crown: but as by the happy Succession of the present Protestant Family, all hopes of this Kind are vanished; it is in vain and will answer no End, for any Party of Men to foment Divisions among *good Christians*. I have a very great Regard for all *good Ministers* of the Christian Gospel, and have no private or particular Resentment against *any Missionary*; but as an impartial Historian, I could not avoid relating Matters of Fact for the Information of Persons concerned, who by Reason of Distance and other Business, can not be otherways informed.

In the Charter, the Propagation of the Church of *England* is not mentioned; the Expressions are general. † “An *Orthodox Clergy*, — Propagation of the Christian “Religion or Gospel in foreign Parts.” therefore the *Missionaries* ought to be *Men of Moderation*, that is of general Charity and Benevolence, considering also that many *Dissenters* have contributed to this *Charity*, and are worthy Members of the *Society*. Fiery *Zealots* || are a Detriment to the Design of the *Society*.

By

* *Whigs* and *Tories* or High-Church originally were only Diversities of Sentiments concerning the *Hierarchy* or Government of the Church: afterwards by designing Men, they were used to Influence political Affairs; the Popish and Jacobitely inclined ranged themselves with the *Tories* or *High-Church*; the true Protestant sober moderate *Revolutioners*, jealous of a *French Influence*, were called *Whigs*.

† Because at that Time all *Orthodox Protestant* Ways of Worship, were equally Tolerated. In their Abstract published Feb. 1749, 50. p. 43. concerning *Connecticut*, (it is the same in all the Charter and Proprietary Grants of Colonies) it is said, “that by Charter there is a general Toleration of Christians of all Denominations, except *Papists*, without an Establishment of any one sort.”

|| *Zealots* of all Denominations, as it is observed, if among the common People, are of the meanest Knowledge, that is, they are the weakest of Men, and the weaker Sex or Women in general; if among Politicians, they are of the deepest wicked Designs. I can not avoid instancing the Administration in the last Years of Queen

By gross Impositions upon the worthy and laudable Society, their Charity and Christian Benevolence is egregiously perverted. I shall mention a few Instances. 1. In the large and not well civilized Province of *North-Carolina*, that Country being poor and unhealthful, Missionaries were not fond of being sent thither, though for many Years they had no Gospel Minister of any Denomination amongst them, and did degenerate apace towards *Heathenism* || ; when at the same Time the well Civilized and Christianized Colonies of *New-England* were crowded with *Missionaries*. Lately two Missionaries (no

Anne's Reign, they passed an Act for Building fifty additional Churches in *London*. In all Countries where *Liberty of Conscience* is amicably tolerated (that is without an *Idle Cursing* and *Damning*, from their Pulpits, all tolerated Dissenters,) the established Church will *silently* and *gradually* swallow up all *Sectaries*, the young People or rising Generation will chuse to be in the fashionable or established Way ; their Elders, ambitious of Posts and Honours, will *conform* ; this is a natural Conversion to the Church established. Many Missionaries settled among soper Orthodox Dissenters, by their immoderate indiscreet Zeal for their own Way ; instead of smoothing by *brotherly Love* ; by a Diabolical Rancour estrange them from the established Church : I gave one Instance of this, Vol. I. p. 228. concerning a Missionary advancing the Invalidity of all Baptisms administred by Persons not Episcopally ordained. I shall here adduce another Instance, from a Missionary some Years since, occasionally preaching in the King's Chapel of *Boston*, said, that he would rather chuse to Err with the Church as it was 200 Years ago (Times of *High Popery*) than &c ; in a subsequent Sermon by the ingenious and worthy Mr. *Harris*, King's Chaplain, he was Chastiz'd.

|| Not many Years since, some loose Clergymen of the neighbouring Province of *VIRGINIA*, at Times, in a Frolick, made a Tour in *North Carolina*, and christened People of all Ages at — per Head, and made a profitable Trip of it, as they expressed.

Mr. *Hall*, lately appointed Missionary for the *North* District writes, that *Anno* 1749, he Baptized 1282 Persons. Mr. *Moir* of the South District, can not give an exact Account of all the Persons he hath Baptized in his Journeys, for want of a Person to count them (See Abstract for 1749, p. 48.) who have, he thinks, sometimes amounted to more than 100 Persons in one Day. These two Missionaries were with some Difficulty obtained by the Sollicitation of the present Governor of *North-Carolina* ; he wrote, " That they had no Ministers or Teachers of any Denomination, and without some due Care be taken, the very Footsteps of Religion will in a short Time be wore out there.

(more)

more) have been sent to *North-Carolina*; One to Itinerate South Side of Neuse River, the other North Side of that River. 2. One Clause in their Charter is “ for the Instruction of those who are in Danger of being perverted “ by *Roman Priests* and *Jesuits* to their Superstition;” this is in no Respect the Case in the Colonies of *New-England*, the most crouded with these Missionaries. *Maryland* is our only Continent Colony, affected with *Popery*, and where the Parochial Ministers seem not to attend their Conversion or Reformation; thus the *Pa-pists* and *Disloyal* are indulged or overlookt, and one would imagine that the principal Design has been to pervert the *Protestant loyal Dissenters*, considering that the Missionaries with the largest Sallaries are generally stationed in the very Loyal, the best Civilized and most oppulent Towns of the Colonies, who are *well able* and *in fact do* sufficiently support a *Protestant Orthodox Gospel Ministry*. I shall only instance the Town of *Boston*, the Place of my Residence, the *Metropolis* of all the *British American Colonies*; in *Boston* are many Congregations of *sober good Orthodox Christians* of several Denominations, particularly two Congregations of the Church of *England*, their Rectors very good Men and well endowed by their respective Congregations, besides a King’s Chaplain, so called, with a Sallary of £. 100 Sterl. *per Ann.* from *Great-Britain*; a *Superbe* costly Church equal to many * Cathedral,

* *Extract from the Boston Independent Advertiser, No. 85.*

Last Friday being the 11th Day of August 1749, the N. E. Corner Stone of the King’s Chapel in this Town, now re-building, was Consecrated and laid with great Ecclesiastical Pomp and Solemnity, and at about 11 the Procession began from the Province House. — First, His Ex—l—cy our Go——or with the Rev. Mr. C—r at his Right Hand and the Rev. Mr. Br—k—ell at his Left Hand preceeded, then the Church Wardens, and Vestry, followed by about twenty-five Couple of the principal Friends of the Church; when the Procession came to the Church-Yard, his Ex—l—cy, supported by two Chaplains, descended the Trench where the Stone which was dedicated to GOD, was laying at the North-East Corner. — On this Stone the Go——or knocked three or four Times with a Mason’s Trowel, (just the Number

of

Cathedrals, is now a Building by the Church of *England* Men: yet, notwithstanding, this most excellent and laudable Charity is misapplied * by stationing in *Boston* a superfluous Missionary at the Charge of £. 70 Sterl per Ann. besides the Allowance from his Congregation. The Bishop of *St. David's* in his Sermon before the

of Raps Arch-Bishop *Laud* gave to the Door of *St. Catharine's* Creed Church at his memorable Consecration of it) some devout Expressions were then dropt by the Chaplain. The Go——or then *ascended the Ladder with the two Clergymen*; and this Part of the Ceremony being ended, his Ex——cy and the rest of the Company in the same Manner they walk'd from the Province-House, enter'd the King's Chappel, where was a Sermon very properly adapted to such an Occasion, delivered by the Rev. Mr. C——r from the 2d Chapter of *Nehemiah* and the 20th Verse, those Words of the Verse, *The God of Heaven, he will prosper us, therefore we his Servants, will arise and build—* The Words that follow the Text are — *But you have no Portion, nor Right, nor Memorial in Jerusalem.* A Hymn of Praise concluded the Solemnity — The Latin Inscription upon the Corner Stone is as follows,

*Quod felix faustumq; sit
Ecclesiæ et Reipublicæ
Hunc Lapidem DEO sacrum,
Regiæ Capellæ
Apud Bostonium Massachusettensium
Restauratæ atque auctæ fundamentum
Posuit, Gulielmus Shirley;
Provinciæ Præfectus
August 11 mo Anno Salutis 1749.*

Some *Zoilus* in Contrast, has adduced a Couplet from our English Poet Mr. *Pope*.

*Who builds a Church to God, and not to Fame,
Will never mark the Marble with his Name.*

* Well may the Society complain of their Funds being insufficient. I do not say, that such Misapplications may in Part be the Occasion, that last Year, the Benefactions and Legacies amounted to no more than £. 731 Sterl. whereas formerly they amounted from 2000 to £. 3000 Sterl. per Ann. even in Years where they had no Royal Briefs; if the Number of Missionaries are lessened, see Abstract of 1749, and properly stationed, there will be no Reason for Complaint; I heartily wish this good Society may go on and Prosper, and not be imposed upon by their Missionaries; it is not at present Rich enough to bestow *Sine Cures*.

Society in *Feb.* 1749, 50, in a few Words expresses the original Design of the Society, “ an Opportunity is presented both among the plain and simple *Indians*, and among the unhappy *Negro Slaves* — an utter Extinction (meaning in *North Carolina*) of Christianity was no absurd or groundless Apprehension. † *Connecticut*

† Considering the slow Advances which the *Protestant Religion*, and a *Spirit of Industry* had made among the common People of *Ireland*, and Parochial Ministers or Clergy not answering ; by Charter *Feb.* 6. 1731, a Society was incorporated for erecting *Protestant working Schools* in several Parts of *Ireland*, the Popish Children to be kept apart from their Popish Parents, and subsisted in *Viſtuals* and *Cloathing* : not to be admitted under 6 *Æt.* or above 10 *Æt.* from 1731 to 1748 have been admitted 885 Children, whereof 509 have been apprenticed. In Pursuance of this Charity, 1749 the Schools already opened were 30, in Building 11 ; more projected 3. The annual Expence of maintaining near 900 Children their present Compliment, including Salaries to Masters, Mistresses, and other incident Charges, is only £. 4435 *Sterl.* which effectually rescues so many of the rising Generation from Beggary, and Popery our Civil as well as Religious Locust or Caterpillar, consequently is an Accession to the Protestant Interest, and of Wealth to the Nation by their being skilled, and habituated to Labour. The annual Benefactions towards the Reading and Working Schools of the two incorporated Societies of *Scotland* and *Ireland* grow very fast ; the present Members of the *Irish* Society are about 900, the last Abstract (for 1749) of the Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts, hints, that they must be obliged to withdraw some of their Missionaries, if their Charity does not take a better Turn ; the Reason is natural, the good Effects of the Charity for Working Schools is conspicuous, that for Missionaries is not so ; this will more and more dispose People of a charitable Spirit, to vent their Charities rather upon *Schools* than upon *Missions*. This sort of a Society *de propaganda Fide*, has at present upwards of 70 Missions (including Catechists and School-Masters) in *North-America*, and is of about 50 Years Growth ; if it produce any Fruit it will be of the *Tardif* Kind, and perhaps not profitable ; their Accounts sent to the Society generally mention only the Numbers by them Baptized and admitted to the Lord's Supper ; which if administered by any Orthodox Minister is equally valid in the Opinion of the *Sober* and *Moderate* of the Church of *England* ; they do not enumerate the *Indians* by them converted, the *Roman Catholics* brought over to the Protestant Religion, *Methodists* or *Enthusiasts* reduced to a sober Mind, and the like, as if these were not in the Design of their Mission ; their chief Cure or Care seems to be a good easy living, and the occasioning of Divisions and Strife among tolerated Dissenters (I use the Expression *tolerated Dissenters*.) because by

Connecticut, a small Colony, the most prudent and industrious of all our Colonies, in which are no waste Lands remaining, supplied with Orthodox Ministers well qualified and well paid ; from *Misrepresentations* of neighbouring Missionaries, are crowded with the greatest Numbers of Missionaries in Proportion to their Extent ; and in the Society's last Abstract are accused of a PERSECUTING SPIRIT, because three or four mean Persons were prosecuted according to Law, for not paying their Township Rates, in which might have been included their Proportion towards the supporting of a Gospel Ministry as endowed by a legal Town-Meeting. So far is *New-England* at present from a persecuting Spirit, that in the Provinces of *Massachusetts* and *Connecticut*, upon a Representation Home of this Nature, there were Acts of Assembly made " That all such professed Mem-
 " bers of the Church of *England*, shall be entirely excused
 " from paying any Taxes towards the Settlement of any

Act of UNION the Church of *England* is beyond Dispute the established Way ; in the published Opinion of this Society, there is NO EXCLUSIVE PREFERENCE (as in Mercantile Affairs, there are Exclusive and not Exclusive Charters) and the withdrawing of wild Youth, from the Orthodox tolerated Way of their Fore-fathers, to a more fashionable and less rigorous Way occasions Divisions and Disaffections in Families : Upon the Decease of a Congregationalist Incumbent, in a new Choice, some in their Nature and Humours do not Concur, and in Resentment, perhaps by the Advice of a Missionary, go over to the Church of *England*.

I shall here by way of Amusement, intimate, that if this Society were to relinquish their present Charter, and be favoured with a new Charter, for propagating of Christian Knowledge, Working Schools, and other Articles of Industry : to each School there may be a Missionary Catechist, in Church of *England* Orders, of Moderation, and qualified in their Working as well as Devotional Business ; one or two Acres for the Site of the School, Lodgings, and other Conveniencies ; and some adjacent small Farm hired at an easy and long Lease, for the Improvement of the Boys in Husbandry, and for the Profit of the School : the Children to be instructed in the Principles of the Christian reformed Religion, Reading, Writing, Arithmatick, Husbandry, and Manufactures or Handicrafts. In *Ireland*, in some Schools the Master has the Profit of the Land or Farm cultivated by the Boys, in Lieu of his Salary, and 40*s.* per Ann. for the support of each Child.

" Minister

“ Minister or building any Meeting-House,” that the Taxes of Persons attending the Church of *England*, be paid to their Church of *England* Minister. By Acts 1728 and 1729, *Anabaptists* and *Quakers* are exempted from paying to the Parish or Township Ministry. I never heard of any persecuting Spirit in *Connecticut*, in this they are egregiously aspersed ; it is true, that a few Years since they made some Acts against some *frantick Preachers* and *Exhorters*, called *Methodists*, intruding (without Consent) into the Pulpits of established Ministers. In *Boston of Massachusetts* May 25. 1743, at an annual voluntary friendly Convention of the Congregational Ministers of the Province, they entred and afterwards Printed their Testimony against the *Methodists*, 1. for their Errors in Doctrine, *Antinomial* and *Familistical*. 2. following *Impulses* of a *distempered Imagination*, rather than the written Word of our Bible. 3. Allowing Persons of no Learning or Discretion to pray and teach in Publick. 4. Intruding into the Pulpits of settled Ministers, endeavouring to withdraw the Affections of People from their good and orderly Ministers. 5. Ordaining Ministers at large without any Parochial Charge. 6. Endeavouring to Excite in their weak Hearers, ungoverned Passions, *Extacies*, and unseemly Behaviour acting like *Bachantes*. 7. By calling poor People (whose Time is their only Estate) unseasonably from their Business and Labour, to a habit of Idleness and Vagrancy. I cannot say, that the Missionaries were very *strenuous* against these Irregularities with much Impropriety called *METHODISM*, because they might find some Interest in Separations amongst the dissenting Orthodox People, *divide et impera* : I find in several Accounts of some Missionaries sent Home from Time to Time, to the Society, (perhaps that they may have some Pretext of doing Business) Complaints of *Infidelity* and *Methodism*, prevailing in their Districts, at the same Time here upon the Spot, we are not much sensible of their reclaiming the one, or their opposing the other by Word or Writing.

I must again observe, that there was not any Pretext for sending Missionaries into the Province of *Massachusetts Bay of New England*: they had a *well regulated and well provided* for *Orthodox Clergy*, as appears by the Laws or Acts of Assembly *Anno 1692*, the first Year of the present New Charter; The Quarter Sessions are to take Care, that no Town be destitute of a Minister, that there be a suitable Provision for a Minister, and that any Person to be ordained, shall be recommended by three or more ordained Ministers. The Missionaries from the Society *de propaganda fide* of *Rome*, are instructed to endeavour to convert the Infidel and Heretical Parts of the World; Our Missionaries can not with any Propriety or Face, esteem the Orthodox tolerated Clergy of *New-England*, as Hereticks; because in the published Opinion of the Society, in our Plantations all Orthodox Clergy are upon the same Footing, that is, no *Preference* as to the Exercise or Practical Part of their Devotions; see the Society's Abstract in *February 1749, 50*. To juggle People from one Mode of Christianity to another may produce *Free-thinking* and *Libertinism*, where there are no essential Differences in Doctrine, but only in the variable Vestiments and Modes of Worship.

Some of the Missionaries in their Accounts sent Home, value themselves upon the bringing over some People to the Observance of the Festivals of the Church of *England*: these licenced *Idle frolicking Days* are a *Nuisance*, in settling of new Plantations, which require six labouring Days (in the Express Injunction of our fourth Commandment) in the Week. The last Account of the Charter Protestant Working Schools in *Ireland*, well observes, "that the Progress of these Schools, in its natural Course, must gradually abolish the great Number of *Popish Holy Days*, by Means of which some hundred thousand Working Hands are kept Idle, the Labour and Profit of them lost to the Publick — p. 41. This Damage is an astonishing Drawback from the Wealth and Strength of the Nation."

I shall conclude this Missionary Article with a few Observations. It is a lamentable Affair, that scarce any of our publick Charity Charters, are so contrived as to prevent *Misapplications*.

I. The Scheme proposed, Vol. II. p. 134. was the converting of the present *Idle Missions* into *County working Schools*, with a Church of *England* Missionary Catechist of Moderation, qualified in the working as well as devotional Articles: thus the Charge of our present 70 Missionaries will maintain and * educate about *one thousand* working Children; if the present Missions are continued, may the Missionaries be under the Inspection and Direction of a Committee of such Members of the Society as reside in *America*, or under a Missionary General, or under the Superintendency of the *Suffragan Bishop*, when such is appointed for *British North-America*; that the Missions may be ambulatory, that is † removable to Places where they are most wanted.

 II.

* The Project of initiating White and Indian Children into this Mode of the Church of *England* by Church of *England* working Schools, *Quo semel est imbuta recens*, would be more effectual than the present Missionary Method; the bringing over of Adults is more difficult, and when brought over they soon die, and their Influence is lost; in the incorporated charitable Societies of *Scotland* and *Ireland*, they only regard the rising Generation, where without any strained Allegory it may be called the *sowing of the Seeds of Christianity, Loyalty, and Industry*. The former too large Charity Endowments to Idle Clergy Missions, to Colleges, and to Charity Schools require to be qualified and reformed; that of working Schools has lately been attended with great Success and Benefit to the Countries; that is, Reading and Writing being acquired, the Boys are sent to Sea, to Husbandry, and other laborious Trades; the Girls to Spinning and other Services with some peculiar Restrictions. Sir *Richard Cox* in a late Piece concerning the Linnen Manufacture, Writes, "numerous
 " Holy days are the Bane of all Industry, and the Ruin of every Coun-
 " try where they are permitted: and indeed there are too many
 " allowed by Law."

† This Method has had a good Effect in *Scotland*. In *Scotland* the Pope has two Vicars Apostolical, one for the Lowlands, and the other

II. If the present incumbent Missionaries are indulged with their Livings or Salaries for their own natural Life; upon their Decease the respective Missions may cease (as a Mission is no Inheritance, it is no Hardship upon their Families) and be canton'd along our Inland Frontiers to keep *Morality* and *Christianity* among the poor new Settlers, and to convert the neighbouring *Indians* to *Civility* and some of our *Orthodox Professions* of Religion. *

III. As this is formed with the Design of a very extensive Charity, the supporting of Learned and Orthodox Ministers or Teachers, without being confined to the Mode of the Church of *England*; why may not this Charity be extended to Ministers of any Orthodox Perswasion, who will declare themselves willing to serve a *Mission* among the *Indians*, as also to the Orthodox Ministers of the poor out Towns? At present, it is confined towards promoting of *Uniformity* to the Discipline and Worship of the Church of *England*; not among the Heathen who never heard of Christianity, nor in poor out Townships, but among the *Sober-minded, Christian only educated, and loyally tolerated Protestant Dissenters*, in the most opulent and best civilized Townships. A strict exclusive Uniformity (a few *Lutherans* excepted) is practised only in *Papish* Sovereignities.

IV. Though the Members at present are about 230, any seven Members with the President or a Vice-Presi-

in the Highlands, with many inferior Missionaries; *Anno* 1740, these Popish Missionaries were twenty-five, *Anno* 1747, they dwindled away to eleven; the Presbyterian *Scots* Itinerant Missionaries are well subsisted by many large Benefactions and Subscriptions, the King allows £. 1000 Sterl. per Ann.

* Our young Missionaries may procure a perpetual Alliance and Commercial Advantages with the *Indians*, which the *Roman Catholick* Clergy can not do, because they are forbid to marry; I mean our Missionaries may *intermarry* with the Daughters of the *Sachems*, and other considerable *Indians*, and their Progeny will for ever be a certain *Cement* between us and the *Indians*.

dent may do Business ; thus four or five *Zealots*, such as the *High-church*, or Friends to a *soliciting Person*, may at Pleasure pervert this Charity ; this perhaps has been the Case for some Years, in appointing so many *Idle Missions*, and many who instead of promoting Charity (the *Nexus* of Humane Society) that is Love among Neighbours ; as Bigots or Religionists, they act the reverse.

V. The Missionaries in their Accounts sent to the Society, ought to keep strictly to the Truth, and not impose upon the World ; I shall mention two or three Instances. 1. The Story of the regular Discipline of *Catechumens* White and Black in *New-York*, is not known here, though in the Neighbourhood. 2. A Christian Congregation of more than 500 *Mohawk Indians* ; the whole Tribe does not exceed 160 Men living in a dispersed || Manner. 3. A Spirit of Persecution now in the Colony of *Connecticut* ; whereas there are sundry *Laws* * of many Years standing in that Colony, exempting Church of *England*, *Anabaptists* and *Quakers* from contributing towards building of Township Meeting-Houses, and from the support of Township Congregational Ministers.

VI. As the Society complain of the Insufficiency of their Funds certain and casual, to keep up the Salaries of their too much multiplied Missionaries ; they are become more circumspect and frugal, and instead of a full Living or Mission, considering that they confine their Mission to one Parish, they only make a small Addition of 20 to £. 30 Sterl. in the S. W. Parts of *Connecticut* Colony ; the Missions in *South-Carolina* are reduced from £. 50 to £. 30 Sterl. *per Ann* and perhaps in all large Sallary Missions, without any Injury done to the *Incumbent*, a Deduction may be made equal to the Allowance from the

|| This resembles the legendary Story of St. *Francis*, at one Time converting some Thousands of People in a Desert

* See the last Edition of *Connecticut* Law-Book, p 169, 170, 171.

Congregation : this will be a considerable Saving, and as the Parishes or Townships grow, their Allowance will efface the Missionary Allowance ; this will be a total Saving, and naturally answers that of the Design of the Charity to assist these Places that are not able to subsist a Gospel Ministry. †

I am now got into a Maze or Labyrinth ; to class the various Sectaries in Religious Affairs, is an intricate Labour : the *New-England Synod Anno 1637* condemned 82 Errors. I must in general observe, that, 1. As to the fearing or rather loving of GOD, the best Evidence is the working of Righteousness. 2. What is generally called Conscience, is *private* Opinion. 3. They who have no Remorse of Conscience, who do not believe in future Rewards and Punishments, and who do not provide for their Households or Posterity, are Infidels, or worse than Infidels. 4. They who assert that the Church is independant of the Civil Power, and Justification *by Faith* without *good Works* ; such Belief is worse than no Religion, being inconsistent with Political Society.

In concluding this Article of Missionaries, I must observe, that if what I have wrote is disagreeable to some, it is not from any personal Resentment ; several of the Missionaries are my friendly Acquaintances ; but *Amicus — Amicus — sed magis Amica Veritas*. The original Design of this Society, was most Humane and Pious ; more than 120,000 Bibles, Common Prayers, and other Books of Devotion, with an incredible Quantity of pious small Tracts have been dispersed in foreign Parts. They are by Charter allowed to purchase real Estate to the Value of £. 2000 Sterl. *per Ann.* and other Estate to any Value : to meet once a Month to transact Business, or oftner if need be ; but no Act to be valid, unless the Majority

† Can *Boston*, v. g. be said, not able to support a Gospel Ministry ? the Interest of the Money, which by Estimation the Church of *England* now a building may cost, is sufficient to maintain half a dozen Church of *England* Rectors at a comfortable Allowance.

of seven Members (a Quorum) with the President or a Vice-President concur. There is a Circumstance, which has not always been attended to by the Society; appointing of Missionaries, faulted as to Morality, Benevolence, and Moderation, called *High-flyers*, younger Sisters of *Popery*.

I shall class the Religion Opinions which have appeared in our Colonies under three general Heads, the meerly *speculative*, the *antiquated obsolete* or out of Fashion Opinions, and the Professions or Sectaries which at present subsist and are likely to continue.

1: Speculative private Opinions are of no Consequence in a State, until the Opinionists form themselves into separate large Society Meetings; I shall enumerate a few. The ANTINOMIANS * assert that the Laws of *Moses* are vacated,

* See Vol. I. p. 444.

This Error was become obsolete, and remained only with a very few ignorant or vicious People until lately broached here by the vagrant Mr. *W—ld*, an insignificant Person, of no general Learning, void of common Prudence; his Journals are a Rapfady of Scripture Texts, and of his own cant Expressions; in his Epistle to the Inhabitants of *Maryland* he writes, “considering what Usage your Slaves commonly meet with, I wondered they did not put an End to their own Lives or yours, rather than bear such Usage;” thus in a most execrable Manner he might have promoted *Felo de se* among the Slaves, and Insurrections against their Masters; the two great Inconveniencies which our Plantations are exposed to. I never could account (perhaps it was only frantick, and not to be accounted) for his repeated Vagrancies, or strolling over *England, Scotland, Ireland*, and our *American Colonies*: He was no Popish Missionary, because being young, he never had the Opportunities of being abroad in Popish Seminaries or Conventuals. He was no Itinerant Missionary (for some short Time he had a Mission for *Georgia*) of our Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts; because when he effectually acted one Part towards an *Uniformity* to the Church of *England*, by occasioning Separations and Animosities among the Orthodox Dissenters, at the same Time he found much Fault with the present Constitution of the Church of *England*: He was no Ministerial or Court Tool, as was the famous *Sacheverel* in the Jacobite Part of Queen *Anne’s* Reign, because the Government at present have no Occasion for such: He did not travel as a Naturalist or as an Historian for Observation, by the Perquisites of
Preaching

vacated, as being only temporary and local, that is national or Municipal, therefore not obligatory with Christian Nations ; that good Works do not *forward*, nor bad Works *hinder* Salvation.

In general, People ought to entertain a laudable religious Charity towards one another, seeing they worship the same GOD, though in different Modes : particularly, to make *Vestiments* and other *fanciful ecclesiastical Decorations* a Matter of *Controversy*, is very *absurd* ; † such indifferent trivial Circumstances may be adapted to the *Taste* of the *Vulgar* ; the *Greek* and *Armenian* Churches in the *Levant* preserve the Mode of their Religion by Pageantries. The *Jews* had a *Suberbe* magnificent Temple, a numerous Train of gaudy Officers, very expensive Sacrifices. Simplicity and Frugality in all Affairs of Life is at present thought to be most natural, and is generally practised, even in Religion these Things have suffered successive Reformations ; the Church of *England* is less expensive than that of *Rome*, the three licensed dissenting Worships in *England* are less expensive than the † Church

Preaching to defray his Charges ; because he had no Genius nor Application for such Studies. Here we may observe, what trivial Things may be great Incentives to Devotion, such as *Vociferation* (the Strength of his Arguments lay in his Lungs,) a vehement frequent Use of cant devotional Words, a dramatick Genius peculiarly adapted to act the *Enthusiast*, proper Vestiments or Dress and Action ; in dissenting Congregations he affected the Church of *England* Dress, and *Paul Rulens* preaching Posture in the Cartoons of *Hampton Court*. He and his Disciples seemed to be great Promoters of *Impulses*, *Extacies*, and *Wantonness* between the Sexes. Hypocritical Professions, *Vociferations*, and *Itinerancies* are devotional Quackery.

† *La Voltaire* in his Letters, writes, that the Disputes among the *Capucines*, concerning the Mode of their Sleeves and Cowl, were more than any among the Philosophers.

‡ It would be of great Benefit to our out Settlers if they could fall into some such Method, seeing the Society for propagating, &c. take no Care of them ; they are not able to build publick Places of Worship, and support a Gospel Ministry, and when they endeavour it, the Expence retards their Settlements ; a great Detriment to the Colonies in general.

of England, and the Quakers have reduced Religion to no Expence.

The FAMILISTS, || Family or House of Love, was of the Anabaptist Tribe in Germany, and suspected to be more addicted to carnal than to spiritual Love, they held all Pleasures and Dalliances among themselves lawful; they were much transported with Impulses and other frantick Notions; they perswaded themselves that they were the only Elect of God, and that all others were Reprobates, and that they might deceive any Person who was not of their Community, Magistrates not excepted, even with an Oath: They agreed with the Antinomians in many Articles.

The MUGLATONIANS * are extinct.

The GORTONIANS of Warwick in the Colony of Rhode-Island, were of so short Duration, they are not to be mentioned; see the Section of Rhode-Island.

The rigid BROWNISTS † are relaxed into Independants and Congregationalists.

The INDEPENDANTS in all our Colonies, have suffered some Reformation, and are at present called Congregationalists.

PURITANS were for reforming the Reformed Religions to greater absolute Purity; that Appellation is now obsolete.

SEAKERS waited for new Apostles to restore Christianity; these have quite disappeared.

|| The Father of this Family, was Henry Nicols, born at Munster in Westphalia, and had resided some Time in Holland, he first appeared about 1540, and pretended to be greater than Moses or CHRIST; as Moses had taught Mankind to Hope, Christ to Believe, he taught Love which is the greatest; and that he himself was not like John the Baptist a Fore-runner of Christ, but Christ was rather a Type of him, and that the Kingdom of Israel was to be established in the Time of his Ministry; what he wrote was mean and incoherent, full of vain Boasting and profane Applications of the Prophecies relating to Christ, to his own Person.

* See Summary Vol. I. p. 447.

† See Vol. I. p. 443.

REMONSTRANTS and CONTRA-REMONSTRANTS, * of Predestinarians and Free-will Men. The Remonstrants are also called *Arminians* : † It is not a Doctrine of any national Church or embodied Communion ; there are some Persons of this private Opinion, among all the Sectaries. Their distinguishing Tenets, are, *Universal Redemption*, an *Indemnity* or *Act of Grace* to all Mankind, who by a good Life accept thereof, being endued with a free Will to act at Liberty what is good or evil.

Concerning the Sectaries in our Colonies which now subsist, and are likely to continue.

I do not mean a Church History of *North-America* ; Bishop *Burnet* well observes, that Ecclesiastical Histories, are only Histories of the Vices of the Bishops and other Clergy.

Most Sectaries in Religion have been occasioned by vulgar People not capable of giving Allowances for the *Allegories*, *Fables*, and *Idioms* of Expression used in the *Levant*, from whence we had our Scriptural Books ; but taking them in a literal and *vernacular* Sense, whereas the Prophets generally used lofty figurative Expressions.

In our *North-America* Colonies there are none properly to be called *Separatists*, *Roman Catholicks* excepted (in *Maryland*, and by the Proprietary Charter of *Pensylvania*, *Roman Catholicks* are not excepted) but by the Act of *Union* (Territories thereto belonging) the Church of *England* is the established Church, though only nominal, in all our Colonies and Plantations : The Denomination

* See Vol. I. p. 227.

† So called from *Arminius* their Leader, he was some Time Professor of Divinity at *Leyden* in *Holland* : they were also called *Remonstrants*, from their remonstrating 1618 against some Articles of the Synod of *Dort* concerning Predestination, Election, Reprobation, and the like ; thus the Adherents to the Princes of *Germany*, who protested against some Proceedings at the Diet of *Spire* in *Germany* 1529, were called Protestants.

of *Whigs* and *Tories* † (*Deo gratias*) is lost : There is no general Church Government, ‖ by the Articles of Union, that of the Church of *England* is established in Perpetuity ; but hitherto in Favour to the good conscientious Dissenters of many Denominations, the Colonies are not quarter'd upon by the regular *ecclesiastick Troops* under the Direction of their proper Officers, Arch Bishops, Bishops, Deans, Arch-Deacons, Prebends, Cannons, and other subaltern Officers : the Church of *England* exercise no Jurisdiction (the Office of the Bishops Commissaries is only nominal) no more than the County Associations of Ministers in *Connecticut*, or the Voluntier Presbyters (in Imitation of the classical Kirk Jurisdictions of *Scotland*) in several of our Colonies.

I shall not here delineate or describe the Papistical Church of *Rome*, the Episcopal Church of *England*, and the Presbyterian Kirk of *Scotland*, they are generally well known.

The *Papists* are of no Note or Notice * excepting in

† *Tory*, originally was a Name given to the *wild Irish Popish Robbers*, and who favoured the Massacre of the Protestants in *Ireland* 1641, and afterwards applied to all enormous *High-flyers* of the Church. *Whig* was a ludicrous Name, first given to the Country Field Devotion Meetings, whose ordinary Drink was the *WHIC* or *Whey* of coagulated four Milk, and afterwards applied to those who were against the Court Interest in the Reigns of *Charles II.* and *James II.* and for the Court in the Reigns of King *William* and King *George*.

‖ Church Governments may be various, and all equally allowable by Prescription, as in the Civil Governments of various Nations there are *Monarchy, Aristocracy, Democracy,* and *Compositions* of these, which in general Alliancys, Treaties of Peace, and other Transactions among Sovereignties are equally admitted.

* Not many Years since in *Boston* were some Popish Emissaries ; but finding only some poor wild *Irish* Carters and Porters of the Persuasion, they soon relinquishd their Mission and disappeared.

As the Grants of *Maryland* and *Pensylvania* do actually tolerate the publick Exercise of the *Roman* Catholick Religion ; and as that Religion is pernicious to human Society in general ; and tends to subvert our present happy Constitution ; why may it not be suppressed as to publick Worship, by an Act of the *British* Parliament ? without giving any Umbrage to the other good Grants and Charters at Home, and in the Plantations.

Pensylvania and *Maryland*; in *Pensylvania* by their new Charter 1701 from the Proprietary and Governor *William Penn*, the Clause of Liberty of Conscience does not exclude *Roman Catholicks* “no Person who shall acknowledge one Almighty God, and live quietly under the Civil Government shall be in any ways molested.” In *Philadelphia* there is a publick *Popish* Chappel, frequented by a poor low Set of *Irish*, their Priests are always *England* or *Maryland* born, *Jesuits*, and generally of good Conduct and Behaviour; an *Irish Jesuit* is never sent. In *Maryland* are many *Roman Catholicks*, their original Proprietary was *Popish*; at present there may be ten or a dozen publick *Popish* Chappels, *Father Molineux* of *Port Tobacco* is their Director or Vicar.

LUTHERANS † are to be found only in the Provinces of *New-York* and *Pensylvania*. The *Lutherans* differ from the *Roman Catholicks* principally, 1. Communion in both Kinds Bread and Wine. 2. Divine Worship in the vulgar Tongue. 3. Indulging Priests or Ministers with Matrimonial Pleasures; some profane Persons might ludicrously have observed, that his Reformation was owing to his Indulgence of Wine and Women to the Fraternity of Clergy, as *K. Henry VIII.* Reformation in *England* was owing to some petticoat Affair; here we may observe, that from very trivial Matters, very great and good Revolutions have proceeded. In the City of *New-York* there is one *Lutheran* Church, and in the rest of the Provinces of *New-York* several dispersed *Lutherans* by the Importation of Foreigners from *Germany* in *Queen Anne's* Reign. In *Pensylvania*, the *Lutherans* have a Church in *Philadelphia*, and severals in the Country. There is one *Swedish Lutheran* Church near *Philadelphia*, one or two more in the Country near *New-Castle*; they are supplied

† *Luther* born 1483, at *Mansfeld* in *Germany*, became an *Augustin* Monk or Frier, reached against Indulgencies, &c. was excommunicated by the *Pope*; he with *Melancton* published first the *New Testament*, and afterward 1534 the whole Bible in the vulgar Tongue; he married 1524, died 1548, the Duke of *Saxony* was his Patron.

once in seven Years from *Sweden*, and generally with good Men.

PRESBYTERIANS, Church of *England*, and Congregationalists are the same in all essential Articles of Christian Doctrine, and their Laity are all of the same Faith ; the proper Distinctions are only with regard to their distinct Clergy in Forms of Church Government, Discipline, Modes of publick Worship, and Vestiments. The *Presbyterians* in our Colonies are of two sorts, 1. Those who follow the Manner of the Church of *Scotland* as established in *Scotland* by Act of Union : All Dissenters from the Church of *England*, (*Anabaptists*, *Quakers*, and *Moravians* excepted) South of *New-England* are called *Presbyterians*, the Congregationals not excepted ; thus the Dissenting Congregation in the City of *New-York* though under a Congregational Minister from *Boston*, is called *Presbyterian*. The *Scots Presbyterians* are modelled according to a Directory first agreed upon by an Assembly of Divines at *Westminster* in the Time of the civil War, and appointed by the General Assembly of the Kirk of *Scotland* 1647, they use no Liturgy. 2. These are properly called *Calvinists*, * and follow the Confession of *Heidelberg* (in the Palatinate of *Germany*) such are the Church of *Geneva*, several Churches in *Germany*, such are the Church of *Holland*, and the *Hugenots* of *France* ; they use not only a Liturgy or Common Prayer, but also an established Form of *Psalmody*. A Calvinist *French* Church subsisted many Years in *Boston*, and is lately dropt, there being no *French* new Comers, and the Children of the late Generations understand *English* better than *French*. There

* *Calvin* was born in *Picardy* in *France* 1509, a Man of general Learning, he began his Reformation at *Geneva*, died 1564, *Æt.* 56, he was a voluminous Writer ; his *Institutions* is a Master-Piece of elegant Roman Latin.

It is a common Mistake, that by *Calvinists* are understood *Predestinarians* ; before *Calvin's* Time there were many *Predestinarians*, the Mahometan *Predestinarians* are not *Calvinists* : some *Predestinarians* as well as Free will Men now called *Arminians*, being private Opinions, are to be found among all Sectaries.

are several *Calvinist Churches* in the Provinces of *New-York* and *Pensylvania*.

CONGREGATIONALISTS is the Religion Mode of *New-England*, (some Church of *England*, *Anabaptists* and *Quakers* excepted) the *Presbyterians* are only speculative, because by Act of Union they can have no Ecclesiastick Classial Jurisdiction in the Colonies, and therefore are only Congregational, but less rigid and narrow in Admission of Church Members, and in Discipline. The *New-England* Congregationals may be called *Independents* † reformed, as not exactly the same with the *Independents* one of the three licensed dissenting Professions in *England*, but formed according to a Platform (so they call it) of their own Scheming; this Platform was by a Resolve of the General Assembly recommended to the Churches, but never enacted.

At present, *Anno 1750*, The general Method of the *New-England* Congregationalists † is, when a Gospel Minister is wanted, the devout elderly Men of the Precinct, invite sundry Preachers to officiate, these are called Candidates; in the next Step, the Church Members or Communicants (all Males even the poorest, upon the Publick Charity, and Negroes) at an appointed Meeting, by a Majority, vote for one of these Candidates, and give him a formal Call; the following Step, is a general Meeting of the Men of the Congregation, who pay Ministerial Rates, and are qualified as Town Voters, to approve or disapprove of the above Choice; if any Difficulty happens, a Council of Delegates from the neighbouring Churches is called for Advice, but their Opinion is only of Advice, but not absolutely obligatory; this Council when they attend the Ordination, are called the

† The Name *Independent* is quite extinct in our *American Colonies*.

† In the second Session of a Synod appointed by the Civil Legislature at *Boston* in *May 1680*, a Platform and Confession of Faith was agreed upon, much the same with that of the *Independents* in *England*, *October 1658*, called the *Savoy Confession of Faith*.

See Vol. I. p. 438 &c. and other loose occasional hints.

Ordination Council. Upon any occasional Difference in a Church, a like Council of Advice is called, but not obligatory, and issues in a Vote of the Church Communicants or general Congregation.

The Congregationalists of *Connecticut* are regulated by a Platform or Confession of their own (scarce differing from that of *Massachusetts Bay*) presented to their General Assembly by the Ministers and other Delegates *Sep. 9. 1707*; the General Assembly or Legislature ordained, that all Churches || conforming thereto shall be deemed established by Law, but no Society or Church, who soderly dissent from said united Churches, shall be hindred from their Worship according to their Consciences.

There are several Congregational Churches who vary in some Trifles; instance the Rev. Mr. *Colman*, afterwards D. D. from one of the Universities of *Scotland*, though frequently in mixed Conversation he declared his Dissent from the Presbyterian Church Government; *Anno 1699* perhaps in Humour and Singularity, set up as a *Separatist* from the generally received Congregational Mode, and perhaps with a Design to allure some inclined to the Manner of the Church of *England*, to contribute towards his Church; his Separation was only in Trifles, *viz.* using the Lord's Prayer, reading of Lessons in the Bible, the Hatband and Rose of the Church of *England* Clergy, a freer Admission to the Sacraments of Baptism and the Lord's Supper; his Successor the Rev. *Samuel Cooper* is a good Man.

1722. There was a considerable falling off or *Seccessus* from the Congregational Mode by Mr. *Cutler* President of *Yale College* in *Connecticut*, and some of his former Pupils; in Consequence of their Scheme, they went to *En-*

|| In many Respects I admire the Prudence and Oeconomy of this Government, but here I can not avoid observing a seeming Inadvertency, and afterwards not rectified, because by Act of Union *May 1. 1707*, the Church of *England* exclusively was the only Church established by Law in all our Plantations; this Act perhaps was the occasion of Mr. *Hebart's* calling the Church of *England* Separatists.

gland

gland, obtained Episcopal Ordination, and the Benefit of Missionaries ; their *Godliness was great Gain*.

ANABAPTISTS. See Vol. I. p. 445. Their essential and distinguishing Doctrine is with relation to Baptism ; they baptize Adults only, and that by Immerfion or Dipping. This formerly was a very wild Sectary, and therefore run into many Subdivisions scarce to be enumerated : I am well informed that at present in *Pensylvania* there are 16 or 17 different Sorts of Anabaptists *English* and *German*. I shall Instance some of their Subdivisions. 1. *English* * a sober and generally good People, *German* Anabaptists a turbulent People : The *German* Anabaptists have no Meetings or publick Places of Worship in *Philadelphia*, but many in the Country, and generally refuse the Qualification Oath ; one of their Branchings are called *Menists*, they have no Meeting in *Philadelphia*, but are a numerous and wealthy People in the Country, and follow Farming ; their Distinction is wearing long Beards, and refusing Government Oaths. The *Dumplers* are a small Body of *Germans* about 50 Miles from *Philadelphia*, Men and Women professing Continency, live in separate Apartments. The Men wear a monkish Habit, without Breeches like *Capuchins*, but lighter Cloth ; as to Oaths they are the same with the *Quakers* and *Moraveans*, though an illiterate People, they have a very decent Chappel, and as Crafts Men, they are very ingenious ; upon a fine Stream they have a Grist Mill, a Saw Mill, a Paper Mill, an Oyl Mill, and a Mill for Pearle Barley, all under one Roof, which brings them in considerable Profit. There is one *English* Anabaptist Meeting in *Philadelphia*, and some in the Country. 2. First Day Baptists, their weekly holy Day is the Sunday as in use with all other Christians ; seventh Day Baptists, on the seventh Day or *Jewish* Sabbath they meet for

* Not long since the vagrant Mr. *W*—*d* occasioned a Separation in the *Boston* Anabaptist Church ; the Separatists are under the Cure or Care of a Leather-Breeches Maker, they are *Antimoralists*, and therefore pernicious in Society.

publick Worship, and abstain from common Labour, but Labour &c. on the Sunday or first Day of the Week, of those there is a Congregation in *Newport* and in *Westerly* of *Rhode-Island* Colony, and severals in the Country of *Pensylvania*. 3. The first Day Baptists are subdivided into those who use Singing † in their publick Worship as the generality of Christians do; and Baptists who do not admit of Singing in publick Worship, they alledge that there must be a great deal of Hypocrisy in promiscuous Singing, as it can not be imagined that every one of the Congregation is in the humour of Singing at the same Time.

QUAKERS, see Vol. I. p. 447. As they are not under the Confinement of Creeds, Confessions of Faith, Platforms, Cannons, Articles, Formulas, and the like, they can not possibly break loose into Sectary * Subdivisions; Their principal Doctrines are to be investigated from their Practice, (it is to be wished that it were so in all Professions of Religion) their Industry, Frugality, mutual Benevolence or Friendship. † The external Part of a Quaker's

† The Quakers, and not singing Baptists, are deservedly faulted, because singing of Psalms incites and heightens Devotion.

* Anno 1642 or 1644, in Time of the Civil Wars in *England*, *George Fox* of *Leicester Shire*. *Æt.* 25, set up for a religious Exhorter or Teacher; he exclaimed against the established Clergy, some of *Cromwell's* Soldiers became his Profelytes and would not fight, in course the Prisons were crouded. In *K. Charles II.* Administration they were frequently presented for refusing to pay Tythes, and for not taking Government Oaths. *Robert Barclay* of *Scotland* wrote an *Apology* for the *Quakers* 1675 and dedicated it to the King which abated that Persecution. *William Penn*, Son of Vice Admiral *Penn* became a Quaker *Æt.* 22, and with *Fox* went upon a Mission into foreign Countries, but from *Holland* they soon returned Home; this *Penn* was Proprietary and Governor of *Pensylvania*; he wrote two folio Volumes in favour of the Quakers.

Benjamin Holmes lately wrote in favour of Quakerism; his Book was first Published in *Amsterdam* 1723.

† I know of no Differences among them, only some are more demure, some less demure or precise in the antiquated Habit and Mode of Speech, that is, more *Jovial* and *Debonnaire*.

Quaker's Religion consists only in trivial Matters, the antiquated Modes of Speech *Thee, Thou, Thy, &c* ; and an antiquated Dress of a plain Coat without Plaits, or Buttons on the Pockets and Sleeves, Beaver like Hats with horizontal Brims as is *generally wore* by the Church of *England* Clergy : The pusilanimous Doctrine of not defending themselves by Force against an invading Enemy is very absurd : *PRO PATRIA is not only a Law of Nations, but of Nature.* They say that a regular Clergy with Benefices are Hirelings, and like Mercenary Troops, do Duty only for sake of their Pay, and not to be so much depended upon as the Militia or voluntary conscientious Exhorters.

Quakers hold all Swearing and paying Tythes unlawful ; they do not find fault with the various Forms of Civil Government, but give Obedience to any established Government ; all who have the Gift of the *Light within* them, Men or Women, are sufficiently ordained to Preach the Gospel without any Commission from a Church, or Assistance from human Learning ; all Praying and Preaching premeditated or extempore without the Spirit, are Superstitious Will-Worship and Idolatry ; they use neither *Baptism* nor the *Lord's Supper*.

Unjustly they are said not to regard the Scriptures, whereas in their Exhortations, Writings, and Defences of their Orthodoxy, no Sect use Scripture Phrases and Quotations † more than they do. Their Affirmation instead
of

Not only in the Neighbourhood, but by annual or periodical Itinerancies of their Speakers or Exhorters, but also of their most noted Men.

† I shall here give a few Instances of their establishing some of their Tenants by Scripture. 1. They seem to be generally *Arminian*, James 2. 20. *But wilt thou know O vain Man ! that Faith without Works is dead.* Acts 10. 34. *God is no Respector of Persons, he that fears God and works Righteousness is accepted of him.* 1 John 2. 2. *And he is the propitiation for our Sins, and not for us only, but for the Sins of the WHOLE World.* They can not believe that God has fore-ordained a certain Part of Mankind to Perish, and a certain Part to be saved ;
because

of an Oath, is not to be faulted, because it is equally binding, and falsifying is subjected to the same Penalty as Perjury; Government Oaths are become so common, they have almost lost their Solemnity. They use the same Subterfuge with our more illiterate Teachers and Exhorters, 1 Corinth. 1. 26. &c. *Not many Wise after the Flesh, not many Mighty, not many Noble are called; but God hath chosen the foolish Things of the World, to confound the Wise, &c.* Their silent waiting upon the Lord in their publick Places of Devotion, is faulted by many, but they say, at that Time, they have a divine Teacher in their own Heart. They believe a Resurrection of the Just and Unjust, and that God will give a Reward to every Man according to his Works, whether they be good or evil; but as to the Nature and Manner of the Resurrection they are silent, they only say, that it is not safe

because in such a Belief there is no need to take Care of Salvation or good Morals; this is execrably pernicious, and voids all Doctrines, Religious or Moral. 2. All Mankind have an innate divine Light, which if attended to, directs them into a Good and Holy Life, and averts them from Sin and Passions; *this is the Light, (John 1. 9.) which lighteth every Man that cometh into the World.* 3. Water Baptism is not essential to Christianity, it must be of the Spirit, Acts 11. 16. *John indeed baptized with Water, but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost; as Christ was born under the Law, he fulfilled the Law, and was circumcised: In Christ Jesus, neither Circumcision nor Uncircumcision availeth any Thing, but a New Creature: As they have Charity for those who use Water Baptism conscienciously, and who use Bread and Wine, so they ought to have Charity for us if we disuse them, because we believe they are ceased in point of Obligation.* 4. In Answer to 1 Tim. 2. 12. *But suffer not a Woman to teach, nor to usurp Authority over the Man, but to be in Silence; they adduce the Apostle Paul, Rom. 16. who advises to help these Women which laboured with him in the Gospel: in our Bible we are told of many Women that did Prophecy, Acts 2. 18. And on my Servants, and on my Handmaidens, I will pour out in these Days of my Spirit, and they shall Prophecy.* 5. As to their not bearing of Arms, Matth. 5. 44. *Love your Enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you.* 6. Their refusing of Government Oaths. James 5. 12. *But above all Things, my Brethren, Swear not, neither by Heaven, neither by the Earth, neither by any other Oath, but let your Yea be Yea, and your Nay, lest you fall into Condemnation.*

to be too inquisitive, how the Dead shall be raised, and with what Bodies. 1 *Corinth.* 15. 44. *There is a natural Body, and there is a spiritual Body*; the Apostle Paul saith, *Flesh and Blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God, neither doth Corruption inherit Incorruption.*

MORAVIANS. Some have transported themselves to *Pensylvania*. In a late Act of the *British* Parliament, 1749, in Favour of their Affirmation instead of an Oath, they are called *an Ancient Protestant Episcopal Church*; they call themselves *Unitas Fratrum* or *United BRETHREN*, as the Quakers with very good Propriety call themselves *Friends*.

The *Moravians* publish no Creed or Confession of Faith, and can be characterised only from their Manners and Preaching in a whining canting enthusiastical Strain; in Church Government they are *Episcopal*, but refuse taking of Oaths as do the *Menenists* in *Holland*, and the *English* Quakers; they refuse carrying of Arms, but willingly contribute towards the pecuniary Charge of a War, which Quakers refuse; they use Instrumental Musick in their Worship; In *Philadelphia* they have a Chapel with a small Organ, and in the Country at *Bethlehem* their grand Settlement about 50 or 60 Miles from *Philadelphia*, at their solemn Festivals, besides the Organ they use Violins, Hautbois, and French Horns; they possess 7000 or 8000 Acres of Land, and make considerable Settlements; they are very zealous towards converting the *Indians*, some *Indians* have joined their Society and live with them, they send Missionaries abroad almost every where, even to *Greenland* or *Davies Straits*; beginning of *June* 1749, there arrived in *Philadelphia* three Natives of *Greenland*, two young Men and a young Woman converted in their own Country by *Moravian* Missionaries; they came in a Ship belonging to the Society which had carried thither 2 Years since a ready fram'd Church †

† These high Latitudes produce no Timber or other Wood.

to be erected there ; these *Greenlanders* † in this Ship had visited the Brethren in several Parts of *Europe* in *England*, *Holland*, and *Germany*, and returned from *Pbiladelphia* in the same Ship to *Greenland* : The *Moravians* have a Mission at *Barbice* in *Surinam*, and two *Indian* Converts from thence, with the *Greenland* Converts, and some Converts of the *De la ware* *Indians* met at *Betlehem*.

1. The *Moravians* * have among them in *Pensylvania* some Men of Letters, Mr. *Spenenbergb* was a Professor of some Science in *Germany* at *Hall* ; but they chiefly consist of Handicrafts, by which they carry on their Improvements cheap. They encourage Marriage amongst their young People ; but to marry by casting of Lots to preserve an Equality among themselves, which they affect very much, is not natural. By late Act of Parliament they are indulged with an Affirmation instead of an Oath in these Words, “ J. A. B. do declare in the Presence of Almighty God, the Witness of the Truth I say” but if convicted of wilful, and false affirming, shall incur the same Pains and Penalties as are enacted by Law against wilful and corrupt Perjury ; but shall not by their Affirmation be qualified to give Evidence in criminal Cases (*Quakers* Affirmation is good both in Criminal and Civil Cases) and not to serve in Juries.

After the general Description of our Plantation *Settaries*, these in each Colony should have been enumetated ; but by Anticipation they are generally to be found, 1. Those of the four Colonies of *New-England* are at full

† Here we may transiently observe that at this casual Congress of *Indians* from Lat. 5. Lat. 40. and Lat. 65, their Hair, Eyes and Complexions were the same ; only the further North the Complexions were a small Matter Paler ; but their Languages were entirely distinct. The *Greenland* or *Davis's Strait's* Converts were clad in Seal Skins, Hair on, but in general were a nasty sort of Christians.

* So called from *Moravia*, a Country adjacent to *Bohemia* ; they seem to be a Sprout from the old Stock of the *Hussites* ; the *Hussites*, Disciples of *Hufs* and *Jerome* of *Bohemia* followed the Tenants of the *Waldenses* who appeared about 1310, and of *Wickliffe* an English *Lollard* middle of 14th Century.

length. 2. In the Province of *New-York*, besides the Church of *England*, there are the Mode of the Kirk of *Scotland*, *Dutch Calvinists*, and some *Lutherans* of the Confession of *Ausburgh* in *Suabia* of *Germany*. 3. In the *Fersies* there are the Church of *England* Missions, the *Scots Presbyterians* and *Quakers* rule the Roast. 4. Besides the Church of *England* Missionaries in the Country of *Pensylvania*, there is one *English* Church in *Philadelphia* a very large Congregation. In *Philadelphia* (and many in the Country) there are two *Presbyterian* Meetings, one called *New Light* of *Whitefield's* Institution, the other according to the *Scots Presbyterian* Mode; and besides at a great distance in the Country there is a Congregation of *Cameronians* or *Covenanters*, who renew the solemn League often, and deny all Submission to Magistrates from the Sovereign to the Constable, because at the Revolution the King by Law assumed to be Head of the Church, and contrary to their Covenant, in *England* established *Prelacy* instead of *Presbytery*. The *Quakers* have two large Meetings in *Philadelphia*, and a Meeting almost in every Township of the three first settled Counties; in the other three Counties they do not prevail; but every where preserve Power by their two *irresistable Maxims* of *Riches* and *Unity*; they have the Secret of keeping their young People up to these, and let them think and talk otherways as they please. 5. In *Maryland* there are several Parishes according to the Way of the Church of *England*, and the most beneficial of any in our Plantations, because as the Number of Taxables or Congregation increases, being taxed at so much Tobacco per Head, the Value of their Livings grows: whereas in *Virginia* the Parsons are fixed to a certain Sallary of 16,000 wt. of Tobacco *per Ann.* without any regard to the Increase of the Congregation: In *Maryland* are ten or a dozen publick *Roman Catholick* Chappels, many *Presbyterians*, and some *Quakers*. 6. In *Virginia* there are no Dissenters from the Church of *England*, a few *Quakers* excepted, their Clergy are not noted for their *Piety* and

and *Morality* or *exemplary Life*, and require Missionary Reformers more than the Congregationalists of *New-England*; it is said that many of them are a Scandal to the Profession of the Church of *England*. 7. In *North-Carolina* scarce any Religion; there are two Missionaries and a few Quakers. 8. In *South-Carolina* there are Church of *England* Missionaries, and the Progeny of some *Scots* Presbyterians. 9. In *Georgia* DE NIHILO NIHIL.

A few Miscellany Observations.

All Charities, excepting to poor Orphans, other impotent Poor, and Children of indigent Parents, are Charities ill applied; Charities towards converting People from one Mode of Religion to another, where both are consistent with Society, are not laudable.

By a general Naturalization, Foreigners may be imported to all our Colonies; but to be intermixed with the *British* Settlers, their publick Worship of any Denomination, and Schooling to be in *English*; * thus in a few Years, they will not differ from the *British* only in Family Names.

In *New England* the Congregationalists at first acted with too much Severity, which occasioned some Inhabitants of *Boston* to Petition K. Charles II. Anno 1679, for a Church of *England*, modestly called the King's *Chappel*, (thus it is with Ambassadors *Chappels*,) signifying not an established, but tolerated or priviledged Place of Worship.

The Clamours concerning the Persecution of Dissenters from the Congregational Way were very ill founded; for Instance 1725, The Assessors of *Tiverton* and *Dartmouth* were by a proper Warrant from the Province Treasurer committed to Jail for not Assessing the Township towards common Rates.

* A late Proposal in *Pensylvania* of erecting *German* Schools was most absurd.



SECTION XI.

Concerning the Colony of

Connecticut.

THIS is the last of the four Colonies formerly called, *the Dominions of New England*. It is a Plantation of industrious sagacious Husbandmen, notwithstanding that some of the meaner Sort are Villains, *corruptio Optimi pessima*, especially in not paying their just Debts to the Inhabitants or Dealers of the neighbouring Colonies; in all their Elections of Governor, Councillors, Representatives, Judges, and other publick Officers, by Custom, they generally prefer the most worthy. Their Eastern Townships have been tainted by the adjacent Paper-Money-making Colonies of *Massachusetts-Bay* and *Rhode-Island*, and followed that Fraud instead of going into the better Currency of their Western adjoining Province of *New-York*; The *Connecticut* Administration are at present sensible of this Error, and have reduced all their publick Fees and Fines to Proclamation Money.—I could not avoid this Preamble, by way of *Eulogy* upon the present Administration in their exemplary Jurisdiction. They have subsisted as a Government about ninety Years, and from Oeconomical Experience, have formed a Body of Laws lately revised and published *Anno 1750* in a small Folio of 258 Pages, of the most natural, equitable, plain and concise Laws for Plantations, hitherto extant.

This Colony at present is by Royal Charter, a Coalition of two distinct voluntary Societies, formed from

Articles

Articles by Subscription of many Planters, then called *Hartford* and *New-Haven* Colonies. That of *Hartford* was from an Emigration of some discontented Rigids of some Townships adjoining to *Boston* (See Vol. I. p. 444) they went West Southwardly, and planted the Lands now called *Springfield*, *Suffield*, *Enfield*, *Windsor*, *Hartford*, *Wethersfield*, &c; some of these were within the *Massachusetts* Jurisdiction: those who were without the Jurisdiction, by Subscription of Articles formed themselves after the Model of *Massachusetts-Bay* into a voluntary but not legal Jurisdiction, their first Election of Magistrates was 1636; 1637 People from *England* under the direction of Mr. *Eaton*, Mr. *Davenport* &c. purchased of the *Indians* and began another distinct voluntary Jurisdiction upon *Long-Island* Sound called the Colony of *New-Haven*, and continued one of the * united Colonies of *New-England* until the Restoration of K. *Charles II.* and was then with the said Colony of *Hartford* by Royal Charter incorporated into the present Colony of *Connecticut*.

John Winthrop, Son of *John Winthrop*, Governor of *Massachusetts-Bay*, as Agent from the Lords *Say* and *Brook*, arrived at Fort *Say-Brook* 1635, and was afterwards chosen Governor of *Hartford* Colony. Upon the Restoration of K. *Charles II.* he went home and obtained a Royal Charter incorporating *Hartford* and *New-Haven* Colonies into one united Colony; he was 14 Years Governor of this united Colony. †

* The united Colonies of *New-England* from 1643 to 1663 were *Massachusetts Bay*, *Plymouth*, *Hartford*, and *New-Haven*.

During the Confusions or Civil War in *England*, the Colonies in *America* were neglected, and acted at Pleasure.

† *John Winthrop*, formerly Governor of *Connecticut*, died in *Boston* April 5, 1676, Æt. 73, eldest Son of Mr. *Winthrop* Governor of *Massachusetts*, who died March 26, 1649.

He was much given to experimental Philosophy and Medicine; several of his *Recipe's* are still used by that Family in Charity to the Poor; some of his Pieces are to be found amongst the first *Philosophical Transactions* of the *London Royal Society*; he was a great Admirer of *Van Helmont*, and dealt much in *Antimonials*.

The first *volontaire* Governor of *Hartford* Colony was *Edward Hopkins*, born in *England* 1600, a *Turky* Merchant of *London*; he returned to *England*, was in several Offices there, and died in *London* 1657, Alternately with him *Mr. Hains* was chosen Governor. After them *George Willis*, *Thomas Wells*, and *John Webster* were chosen Governors.

Mr. Eaton, an East Country Merchant of *London*, one of the Patentees of *Massachusetts* Colony, with a parcel of Planters 1637 settled at *New-Haven*; after being for many successive Years Governor, he died 1657; to him succeeded *Francis Newman*, he continued three or four Years Governor and died. *Mr. Leet*, a Lawyer, succeeded and continued Governor until *Hartford* and *New-Haven* were by Royal Charter united into one Colony, and was their Deputy Governor under *Mr. Wintthrop* while he lived, and after *Mr. Wintthrop's* Death continued ten Years Governor till his own Death.

We should have mentioned that *Robert*, Earl of *Warwick*, having obtained a Grant 1630 from the Council of *Plymouth*, procured a Patent from *K. Charles I.* of Lands in *New-England* from *Narraganset* River, as the Sea Coast runs towards *Virginia* 40 Leagues, and East and West from Sea to Sea or to *Massachusetts* South Line; this was made over to *William Viscount Say* and *Seal*, *Robert Lord Brooks* and Company; they built a Fort at the Mouth of *Connecticut* River and called it *Say-Brook*; but finding no Profit to accrue, they sold it to the Settlers 1644.

The present Boundaries of *Connecticut* Colony are its North † Line upon *Massachusetts-Bay* Province of about 72 Miles, settled 1713; its * Easterly Line upon the Colony of *Rhode-Island* of about 45 Miles, settled 1728; its Southerly Line is upon *Long-Island* Sound, being a Sea

† See Vol. I. p. 416, by mistake it was said to have been confirmed by the King in Council.

* See Vol. II. p. 93.

Line of about 90 Miles in a direct W. Southerly Course from the Mouth of *Pakatuke* River to the Mouth of *Byram* River ; its Westerly Line as finally settled with *New-York*, and by a Deed of Surrender from the Colony of *Connecticut* to the King *May* 14, 1731, is as follows.

This West Line was regulated thus, beginning at 20 Miles East from *Courtland's* Point || of *Hudson's* River ; N. 12 d. 30 m. E. 52 and half Miles to a Continuation of the *Massachuset* and *Connecticut* divisional Line in N. Lat. 42 d. 2 m. * From the abovesaid Projection from *Courtland's* Point run S. 24 d. 30 m. East, 7 and 1 Quarter Miles, then W. S. W. 13 Miles 64 Rod, then S. S. E. Eight Miles to the Mouth of *Byram* River. A Line parallel with the first two Lines at the Distance of one Mile three Quarters of a Mile and twenty Rod Eastward is the present Boundary between *Connecticut* and *New-York*, and the Land comprehended by these parallel Lines is called the *Oblong* granted by *Connecticut* to *New-York* as an Equivalent for some Lands upon the *Sound*, settled by, 'but' not originally belonging to *Connecticut* ; this was confirmed by the King in Council. The *Oblong* contains about 69,000 Acres, whereof 50,000 Acres is in Dispute, the Property being claimed by *Eyles* and Company, also by *Hanly* and Company, † it remains a Place of Refuge for the Miscreants from *New-England* and *New-York*.

The partition Line between *New-York* and *Connecticut* as established *December* 1, 1664, run from the Mouth of *Memorancok* River (a little W. from *Byram* River) N. N. W. and was the ancient Easterly Bounds of *New-York* till *Nov.* 23. 1683, the Line was run nearly the same as it is now settled.

|| *Courtland's* Point is computed to be 40 Miles as the River runs from the City of *New-York*.

* This N. W. Corner of *Connecticut* Colony is 20 and 3 Qr. Miles from *Hudson's* River about 9 Miles above *Kingston*, 1 Mile below the Mouth of *Esopus* River, and about 50 Miles below *Albany*.

† See *New-York* Section.

Duke of *Hamilton's* Grant took in Part of the present Colony of *Connecticut*, this Grant was from *Narraganset-Bay* to *Connecticut* River, and back into the Country untill it met with *Massachusetts* South Line; but as this was never purchased of the Native *Indians*, and never settled, it may be deemed as obsolete; there have been some Attempts to revive this Claim, but never prosecuted.

The *Indians* almost extinct; they have a small Reserve upon the East Side of *Connecticut* River at *Pistol* Point in *Weathersfield*; a very small Parcel of *Nianticks* about 5 or 6 Miles West from *New-London*; there is an *Indian* Reserve of — Acres upon *New-London* River in the Northern Parts of that Township called *Mobegins*.

In *Connecticut* are eight convenient Shipping Ports for small Craft, but all Masters enter and clear at the Port of *New-London*, a good Harbour 5 Miles within Land, and deep Water, here they build large Ships, but their Timber is spongy, and not durable, it splits or rives well into Staves; small Vessels are built at *Sea-Brook*, *Killingsworth*, *New-Haven* or *Wallingsford* River, &c: In the Sound the Tide flows 6 to 8 Feet, the deep Water is upon the Long-Island Side.

Foreign Vessels Entred and Cleared in the Port of *New-London* from the 25th *March* 1748 to the 25th *March* 1749, scarce any Registred more than 80 Tuns, and generally are *West-India* Traders.

Entred Inwards.		Cleared Outwards.	
Brigantines	3	Brigantines	20
Sloops	30	Sloops	37
Scooners	4	Scooners	5
	—		—
	37		63

Here, as in all the other *British* Colonies, the Collector and other Custom House Officers, are by Warrant from the Commissioners of the Customs in Consequence of an Order from the Treasury; the Commissioners of the Treasury direct all Officers of the Revenue.

In *Connecticut* the Government is in the Hands of the Representative of the Freemen or People, * as was also the Property ; but at present no Colony or general Lands remain (to it is in *Rhode-Island*) excepting some Indian Reserves.

In the Reigns of *Charles II.* and *James II.* the Colony of *Connecticut* (as also of *Rhode-Island*) in the Case of their Charter, did not stand a Law Suit at Home, as did *Massachusetts-Bay*, but tacitly dropt their Charter or Jurisdiction, and upon the happy *Revolution* tacitly reasumed their Jurisdiction, which was deemed good, and subsists to this Day.

This Colony (before a Charter granted them, by the two distinct Appellations of *Hartford* and *New-Haven*) was two of the four associated Colonies of *New-England* ; *Old Massachusetts* and *Old Plymouth* were the other two ; the Quota of Charges of the two *Connecticut* Colonies of *Hartford* and *New-Haven* was equal to that of the Old Colony of *Massachusetts Bay*.

As to their *Wars* or rather Bickerings with the *Canada French* and their *Indians*, as also with our intermixed *Indians* in their Insurrections, they were in common with *Massachusetts-Bay* Colony and Province ; we refer to the Section concerning *Massachusetts-Bay*. What happen'd Prior to the *Connecticut* Royal Charter, See Vol. I. p. 189 ; their Share in the reducing of *Port-Royal* now

* Our Colonies are of various Natures. 1. In some the Government and Property are in the Crown ; *South-Carolina*, *North-Carolina* except in the Property of the Earl of *Greenville's* one eighth Share ; *Virginia*, excepting the Property of the North Neck which belongs to Lord *Fairfax* ; *New-York*, *New-Hampshire*, *Nova-Scotia* ; and *Newfoundland*. 2. In some, both Government and Property are in the Proprietaries, *Maryland*, and *Pensylvania*. 3. In some, the Government and Property is in the Representatives of the People, *Connecticut* and *Rhode Island*. 4. In others, the Government is in the King, but the Property is in the Representatives of the People, as in *Massachusetts-Bay*. 5. Government in the King, and Property, in a certain Body of Proprietors, as in *New-Jerseys*. 6. *Georgia* may be said not digested.

Annapolis 1710, See Vol. I. p. 308; their Share in the *Isham Expedition* 1711 (the Nation was at that Time, and by Management frequently the Dupe of the Ministry) against *Canada*, see Vol. I. p. 312. their Quota in that unaccountably rash but by divine Providence extraordinary successful Expedition against *Louisbourg of Cape-Breton*, see Vol. I. p. 350: the Affair of the projected but abortive Expedition 1746 against *Canada*, see Vol. I. p. 315.

Abstract of the *Connecticut* CHARTER.

Connecticut Colony was incorporated, April 23. 1662, by Charter of K. Charles II, from the humble Petition of 19 Gentlemen principal Proprietors in said Colony, partly by Purchase for valuable Considerations, and partly gained by a Conquest; and living remote from other English Plantations; these Gentlemen's Names are — John Winthrop, Henry Clarke, Nathan Gold, Henry Wolcott, John Ogden, John Clarke, John Mason, Matthew Allyn, Richard Treat, John Talcott, Thomas Welles, Anthony Hawkins, Samuel Willis, John Tapping, Richard Lord, Daniel Clarke, Obadiah Brown, John Deming, Matthew Chamfield, with all others who shall be made free of the Company, are incorporated by the Name of THE GOVERNOR AND COMPANY OF THE ENGLISH COLONY OF CONNECTICUT IN NEW-ENGLAND IN AMERICA, with perpetual Succession; to purchase Land and Chattels, and them to Lease or alien as Corporations in England may do, with a common Seal; and there shall be elected out of the Freemen one Governor, one Deputy Governor, and twelve Assistants, viz. the first Governor John Winthrop, first Deputy Governor John Mason, the first twelve Assistants Samuel Wyllis, Matthew Allyn, Nathan Gold, Henry Clarke, Richard Treat, John Ogden, John Tapping, John Talcott, Thomas Welles, Henry Wolcott, Richard Lord, and Daniel Clarke; the Governor may at any time call an Assembly; to have two annual Assemblies, viz. second Thursday

in October, and second Thursday of May, to consist of the Assistants and Deputies, not exceeding two from one Place, chosen by the Freemen of each Place to be a General Assembly, whereof the Governor and Deputy Governor, and six of the Assistants at least to be seven; this General Assembly may change the Times of their Meeting and Elections, to admit Freemen, and constitute such Officers as they should think fit; and once every Year on the second Thursday of May, the Governor, Deputy-Governor, Assistants, and other Officers shall be in said General Court newly chosen for the Year ensuing, and to take their respective Corporal Oaths for the due Performance of their Offices before two Assistants; the first nominated Governor to take his Oath before a Master in Chancery. The Inhabitants to have a Power to import Inhabitants and Goods into the Colony, paying the usual Duties. All our Subjects Inhabitants born there, or at Sea, coming to or going from thence, to be deemed natural-born Subjects. The General Assembly to erect Judicatories, and to make reasonable Laws, not contrary to the Laws of England, and to settle Forms of Magistracy and Magistrates, and to impose lawful Fines and other Penalties; and in general, that our said People may be so religiously, peaceably, and civilly governed; as their good Life and orderly Conversation, may win and invite the Natives of the Country to the Knowledge and Obedience of the only true God and Saviour of Mankind; This with "the Adventurers free Profession," is the only and principal End of this Plantation. A Power Martial to raise Forces for their own Defence to kill or otherways destroy by all fitting Ways any who attempts the Detriment of the Colony, and upon Occasion to use Law Martial; and upon just Causes to invade and destroy the Natives or other Enemies of said Colony. Liberty is reserved to all his Majesty's Subjects to Fish, to build Wharfs and Stages upon waste Lands—This Colony is bounded East by the Narraganset River, commonly called Narraganset Bay, where the said River falleth into the Sea; and on the North by the Line of the Massachusetts Plantation, and on the South by the Sea; and from the said

Narra-

Narraganset-Bay on the East to the South-Sea on the West Part. To be holden in free and common Soccage as of our Mannor of East Greenwich, paying only the fifth Part of all the Oar of Gold and Silver that may be discovered there.

By Writ of Privy-Seal,

HOWARD.

Their present enacting Style is, *Be it enacted by the Governor, Council and Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the Authority of the same.*

The present Counties and Towns are,

HARTFORD County.	* Canaan
Hartford	* Kent
Windfor	
Weathersfield	
Middletown	NEW-HAVEN County
Farmington	Milford
Symsbury	Guilford
Haddam	Branford
East Haddam	Wallingford
Colchester	Darby
Hebron	Waterbury
Glaffenbury	New Milford
Bolton	Durham
Willington	* Sharon
* Stafford	* Salisbury
Toland	
Litchfield	NEW-LONDON County.
* Harwinton	New London
* Hartland	Norwich
* Winchester	Saybrook
* New Hartford	Stonington
* Torrington	Killingworth
* Bark-Hampsted	Lyme
* Colebrook	Groton
* Goshen	Preston
* Norfolk	
* Cornwall	FAIRFIELD County.
	Fairfield
	Stratford
	Nor-

Norwalk	Plainfield
Stanford	Canterbury
Greenwich	Mansfield
Woodbury	Coventry
Danbury	Pomphret
New Town	* Morthlake
Ridgefield	Killingley
* New Fairfield	Ashford
<hr/>	
WINDHAM County.	Voluntown
Windham	* Union
Lebanon	Being in all about a hundred Representatives.

Every Township sends two Representatives excepting those mark't * which are new or poor Townships, pay no Colony Rates, and consequently send no Representatives to the General Assembly or Legislature: *Haddam* and *East Haddam* send only one Representative each.

The Freemen of each Town shall in *September* meet to chuse Representatives for the General Assembly, and twenty Persons in Nomination for the next *May* general Election. In *April* the twelve Assistants to be chosen by the Freemen of each Town out of the twenty nominated Persons, to be sent Seal'd up to the General Assembly, with the Votes for the Governor, Deputy Governor, Secretary and Treasurer; as also Votes for the Representatives for the *May* Assembly called *Proxies*, returned by the Constable of each Town.

The Assistants and the Representatives are paid out of the Colony Treasury.

Annually two general Courts, the first at *Hartford*, called the Court of Election second Thursday in *May*, where the Freemen shall Elect a Governor, Deputy Governor, twelve Assistants, Treasurer and Secretary, the second at *New Haven* second Thursday in *October*: In the General Court shall consist the Power of making Laws, granting Levies, disposing of Colony Lands, erecting of Judicatories and Officers, granting Release in Criminal

minal or Capital Cafes, difolving and proroguing of themfelves. The Governor, Deputy Governor, or Secretary may call a General Court upon Emergencies. No Member of the General Court during its Seflions, to be arrefted, except for Treafon or Felony. Every Town may fend one or two Deputies. Previous to all other Bufinefs, the Houfe of Representatives or Deputies are to chufe a Speaker and Clerk. They are the only Judges concerning their own Election. Every Day's Abfence, Fine 10*f* to be paid to the Colony Treafurer. In an Equivote the Governor in the upper Houfe, and Speaker in the lower Houfe, fhall have a cafting Vote.

Courts of Judicature.

All Cafes exceeding the Value of 40*f* fhall be determined by a Jury of twelve Men in common Law.

Annually in *January* at a Town-Meeting there fhall be chofen Jury-Men to ferve in the feveral Courts, Qualification 50*f* at leaft Free-hold rated in the general Lift; the Names of the Jury-Men fo chofen fhall be put in a Box with a Lock, and when any Number of Jury-Men are Summoned to ferve at any Court, the Town Conftable fhall at Random draw fo many out of the Box, as is required from that Town; any Juror fo drawn, but not appearing at the Court, Penalty 10*f*; and Deficiencies in Juries to be filled *de Talibus Circumftantibus*. The Number of Jury-Men to be annually chofen in each Town.

In HARTFORD County.		NEW-HAVEN County.	
Hartford	20	New-Haven	20
Wethersfield	20	Milford	12
Windfor	20	Wallingford	15
Farmington	20	Branford	10
Midletown	20	Guilford	12
Symfury	12	Durham	6
Glaflenbury	10	Darby	6
Hebron	10	Waterbury	6
	<hr/>		<hr/>
	132		87

NEW-LONDON County.		New-Town	
New-London	15	Ridgefield	6
Norwich	15	Greenwich	10
Preston	15		<hr/>
Stonington	15		112
Groton	15		<hr/>
Lyme	15	WINDHAM County.	
Say-Brook	15	Windham	12
Killingworth	15	Lebanon	12
	<hr/>	Coventry	12
120		Plainfield	12
		Canterbury	12
FAIRFIELD County.		Pomfret	12
Fairfield	20	Volentown	12
Stratford	20	Ashford	12
Norwalk	20	Mansfield	12
Stanford	12		<hr/>
Danbury	12		108

N. B. I can not account, why *Hadham* and *East-Had-*
dam, *Colchester*, *Bolton*, *Willington*, *Toland*, and *Litchfield*
in the County of *Hartford*; *New-Milford*, and *Durham*
in the County of *New-Haven*; *Woodbury* in the County
of *Fairfield*; and *Killingley* in the County of *Windham*,
who send Representatives to the General Court or Assem-
bly, do not send Jurors to the Courts below.

All Judges and Justices are appointed by the General
Assembly, and commissioned by the Governor with the
Province Seal; the Governor, Deputy Governor, and
Assistants are Justices *ex Officio*.

As to the Courts, where though the Case may be of
considerable Value, no Jury is required; there is

1. The Court of Probates.
2. Court of Vice-Admiralty are the same Officers as
for *New York*.
3. Justiciary Court of Admiralty, some of the Judges
are from *New-York*.

There shall be a Superior Court of Judicature, ambulatory from County to County ; this Court to consist of one chief Judge and four other Judges (whereof three a Quorum) and shall have Cognizance of all Pleas of the Crown that relates to Life, Limb, or Banishment ; of Divorce ; of all Pleas, Real, Personal, or Mixt ; the same to try by a Jury or otherways proceed to Judgment, and award Execution. This Court to be held in each County twice annually. The chief Judge, or in his Absence, any three of the Judges may call a special Court upon extraordinary Occasions. Any one Judge may open and adjourn the Court, and where no Judge presents, the Sheriff may adjourn the Court to next Day. The Judges to appoint and Swear their own Clerk.

An Inferior Court of Judicature to be held in each County twice a Year, by a Judge with two or more Justices of the Quorum commissioned for that Purpose ; to determine by a Jury or otherways all Civil Causes Real, Personal, or Mixt, as also all criminal Matters, not extending to Life, Limb, Banishment, or Divorce. Have Power to levy a County Tax.

A special County Court may be called upon any extraordinary Occasion, and may adjourn themselves to any distant Time, to appoint and swear their own Clerks and County Treasurer. Every chief Judge or President, or Moderator in any Civil Court shall have a casting Vote.

A Court of Probate consisting of one Judge and a Clerk by him to be appointed, to be held in each of the following Districts, called the District of *Hartford, New-haven, New-London, Fairfield, Windham, Plainfield, Guilford, Woodbury, Stamford, East Haddam, Litchfield, Danbury, and Norwich*. In difficult Cases may call in two or three Justices of the Quorum. Any Person agrieved may Appeal and Review to the next Superior Court of the County.

The *Judges of Probates* to enquire after all Escheats, and give Notice to the Colony Treasurer, who is to make Sale by publick Vendue of all Escheats for the Benefit
of

of the Colony ; but if afterward any just Title of an Heir appear, it shall upon reasonable Terms be restored.

Executors after two Months Probate, neglecting to Register an Inventory of the Deceased's Estate, shall forfeit £. 5 per Month. Executors refusing to accept, Administration shall be granted to the next of Kin, or principal Creditors. Executors neglecting to prove a Will after 30 Days, shall forfeit £. 5 per Month. Administration upon Intestate Estates, to the Widow or next of Kin at the Discretion of the Judge of Probates. The Distribution of Intestate Estates to be, one third of the personal Estate to the Widow for ever, and her Dower of one third of the real Estate for Life, the Remainder to be equally divided among the Children, but the eldest Son to have a double Share ; and if all Daughters they shall inherit as Copartners ; the Division of the Estate to be by three sufficient Freeholders upon Oath appointed by the Judge of Probates. The Portion of any Child dying before of Age or Married, shall be divided among the Survivors. No Representatives to be admitted among Collaterals after Brothers and Sisters Children. Where no legal Representatives, the Widow shall be allowed one Moiety of the personal Estate for ever, and one third of real Estate for Life. All Sales of Lands made by Administrators shall be void.

Marriages ; No Person to be Married unless published in some Congregation, or publickly posted up eight Days before such Marriage. No Person to join People in Marriage, besides a Justice in the County or an ordained Minister of the Parish where the Parties dwell. Any Justice or Minister marrying Persons without Publication, and Certificate of the Consent of the Parents or Guardians, Penalty £. 20. Any Man endeavouring to obtain the Affections of a Maid, without Liberty of Courtship from the Parents or Guardians, for the first Offence £. 5 &c. — Degrees of Kindred forbidden Marriage, are according to the Levitical Law, and such Marriages are declared to be nul and void,

void, and to sit upon the Gallows with a Rope about their Neck, and Stripes not exceeding forty, and to wear the Letter I on their Arm or Back. If any Persons within said Degrees do Marry or Cohabit, or Persons cohabiting after Divorce; Penalty as Adultery; excepting Cases of Absence, as the Law directs, where the Superior Court may grant Liberty to marry again.

A Man found a Bed with another Man's Wife, both to be Whipt not exceeding 30 Stripes. Men or Women wearing contrary Apparels, Fine not exceeding five Pound.

The Age of Consent for Marriage is to the Man 14 *Æt.* to the Woman 12 *Æt.* No Person unmarried shall keep House of himself, without Consent of the Town, Penalty 20 *s* per Week. Contracts of Persons under Parents, Guardians, or Masters are not valid. The Select Men, and Overseers of the Poor, with the assent of the next Justices, may bind out poor idle Children, Boys to 21 *Æt.* Girls to 18 *Æt.*

The Dower for Widows where no Jointure was made before Marriage, is one third of the personal Estate without Limitation, and one third of the Income of the real Estate for Life, but to keep it in good Repair.

All Persons of right Understanding *Æt.* 21. or upwards though excommunicated; by Deed or Will if 17 *Æt.* and upwards, may dispose of personal Estate. The Age for choice of Guardians shall be 14 *Æt.* for Males, and 12 *Æt.* for Females.

Where Parents or Masters neglect Children under their Care, the Select Men may bind them out Boys to 21 *Æt.* Girls to 18 *Æt.*

Ideots, Impotent and Distracted, shall be under the Direction of the County Courts, to be provided for by the following Degrees of Kindred. Father or Mother, Grand Father or Grand-Mother, Children or Grand-Children, if able. The Estates of such (if any) by a proper Order may be sold for their Maintenance. Where no sufficient Relations or Estate does appear, they shall be supported

ported at the Charge of the Town where they live. The Select-Men are to appoint them Guardians.

Idle Persons and Drunkards, by Warrant to be brought before a Justice ; the Goods of such Persons shall be under the Management of the Select-Men, who may sell all or part (not real, without an Order of the General Assembly) of their Estates, and on Deficiency, dispose of their Person to Service for a certain Time, to pay their just Debts. May appeal from the Select-Men to the County Court. All such Persons are disabled from making of Contracts.

In this Colony is no particular Court of Chancery ; in some Cases the General Court act as a Court of Chancery or Equity.

Justiciary Courts of Oyer and Terminer, called Assizes and General Goal Delivery, is the same with the Superior Court.

The Court of Vice-Admiralty, the same Judge and other Officers of that Court, which serve for the Province of *New-York*, serve also for the Colony of *Connecticut*.

The Justiciary Court of Admiralty for Trial of Crimes committed at Sea consists of Judges, some from the Colony of *Connecticut*, and some from the Province of *New-York*, pursuant to the Instructions from Home.

A Justice may determine in any Case not exceeding 40 *s* if Land is not concerned ; if the Judges find that the Jury have not attended to the Evidence, they may cause them to return to a second and third Consideration, but no more. The Judges to determine in Cases of Law, where the Jury brings in a *Non Lique*t or special Verdict, viz. *If the Law be so in such a Point, then we find for the Plaintiff, but if the Law be otherways, then we find for the Defendant.* May appeal from a Justice to the County Court, and from thence may review to the next County Court, or appeal to the next Superior Court ; from the Review to the second County Court, may appeal to the next Superior Court, but without any Review
in

in the Superior Court ; but if from the first County Court he appeal to the Superior Court, he is admitted to review in the next Superior Court. In a Debt upon Bond, Bill, or Note for a Value not exceeding 40 *s* no Appeal to be allowed, and if not exceeding £. 10 no Appeal is allowed from a County Court.

No Appeals are allowed to the King in Council. Some have gone home by way of Complaint at a considerable Charge, but no Relief, excepting in the Case of *John Wintrop*, Esq; who procured a Declaration of the King in Council, “ That their Law concerning dividing Land Inheritance of an Intestate was contrary to the Law of *England*, and void” : but in subsequent Cases this Colony have no Regard to the Declaration.

The general Assembly hear Writs of Error against Proceedings of the Superior Court ; and in some Instances act as a Court of Chancery.

Where any other Court exceeds their Jurisdiction, the Judges of the Superior Court may grant a Prohibition with the same Power, as the King’s Bench in *England*.

Sheriffs to be appointed by the Governor and Council called *Assistants*, giving Security ; in Case of *Riots* or great Opposition in his Office, may raise the Militia of the County, and to be under his Command.

Each County appoints one King’s Attorney.

In Cases of Account, the Court may appoint three Auditors.

In Cases of Abatement of a Writ, the Plaintiff upon his paying to the Defendant his Costs to that Time, may amend the Defect and proceed. No Writ shall abate for a circumstantial Mistake.

In all Actions before a Justice, six Days Warning is required ; before a County or Superior Court twelve Days.

Any Defendant upon Default, paying down to the adverse Party Costs, may be admitted to the Tryal.

All Titles of Lands to be tried in the County where the Land lies.

No Person to be kept in Prison, where sufficient Estate does

does appear; where no Estate appears, the Debtor shall satisfy the Debt by Service.

Fees. For attending the General Court, *per diem*, to an Assistant 6*s* to a Representative 4*s* and 4*d* per Mile, travelling out; Chief Justice of Superior Court 12*s*; Assistant Judges 9*s*; County Courts Chief Judge 7*s*; Justices of the Quorum 5*s*; Licence to a Tavern Keeper 3*s*; acknowledging any Instrument 6*d*; to the Secretary for the Colony Seal 1*s*; to the General Assembly for every Petition £. 1: Attorney's Fees, Superior Court 8*s*; Inferior or County Court 4*s*; Goalers Fees, Commitment and Discharge 2*s*; for dieting each Prisoner per Week 2*s*; to a County Surveyor of Lands and for his Horse, besides Expences 4*s* *per diem*. N. B. These Fees seem to be in Bills of the Emission equal to three and half Old Ten. of *New England* common Currency.

Publick Houses of Entertainment for each Town to be nominated in *January* annually by the Magistrates, Select-Men, Constables and Grand Jury-Men, be approved of by the next County Court, and licensed by them: the House-Keeper not to suffer Sons not of Age, or Servants to sit Tipling, Fine 6*s*; Strangers and Foreigners excepted, none to keep Company in Publick Houses Evening next following the Lord's Day, or Days of Fast; any Person found in a Tavern (some Exceptions) the Night before and the Night after the Lord's Day, or after Nine o'Clock in any other Night, Fine 3*s*; By a special Warrant, Houses may be broke open in searching after Persons in Taverns; Inhabitants not to sit in a Tavern drinking above one Hour at a time, excepting upon extraordinary Occasions, Fine 6*s*; Tavern Hunters to be posted up at the Tavern Doors with a Prohibition of entertaining them upon Penalty of £. 3; no Tavern-Keeper to bring an Action for Drink, sold after two Days; none but licensed Houses to sell strong Liquor in Quantities exceeding one Quart if Wine or Spirits, or one Gallon of any other Liquor, Fine £. 3 first Offence, £. 6 second Offence, and so doubled every Offence,

Offence ; if not able to pay, to be Whipt not less than 10, and not exceeding 15 Stripes every Offence.

In *Connecticut* (and all over *New-England* every constituted Township is a CORPORATION ;) the Qualification for a Voter or Freeman is 21 Æt. and upwards, with a Freehold rated in the common List at 50 *s*, or personal Estate rated at £. 40 besides his Poll or Person. Township Meetings or Assemblies may make prudential Laws or Orders, penalty of Transgression not to exceed 20 *s*. Township Officers to be chosen annually in *December*, viz. Select-Men not exceeding seven, Listers (Assessors) not exceeding nine, &c. all Elections to be by a major Part of the qualified Voters. Town Clerks to Register Marriages, Births, and Burials.

No Person to be admitted an Inhabitant of a Town, but by Consent of the Select-Men ; no Stranger to reside exceeding — Days without Liberty from the Select-Men, and the Entertainer finable. A Stranger continuing after being warned out, Fine 10 *s* per Week, or Whipt not exceeding ten Stripes. One Year's Residence qualifies a Person for an Inhabitant. A Stranger entertained above four Days, the Entertainer shall be at the Charge if taken sick. Vagrants to be ordered from Constable to Constable back to the Place they came from ; if they return, shall be *toties quoties* Whipt not exceeding ten Stripes.

Annually first Monday of *March* the Proprietorships not constituted into Townships, are to meet and chuse a Moderator, Clerk, Treasurer, and a Committee to manage Affairs in the Intervals of their General Meetings. By a major Vote computed by Interest they are to be chosen, and may levy Taxes as may be needed. Sufficient Partition Fences to be five Foot if Rails or Wooden Fences, Stone Fence four Feet high ; or Hedges, Brooks, Ditches, Creeks, Rivers in the Judgment of the Fence-Viewers, equivalent thereto. No Person to feed his Cattle in his Neighbour's Land, as if common Field, without leave from 10th *April* to 10th *October*.

Taxes consist in the Articles of Rates, Impost, and Excise.

Rates comprehends the Pol-Tax. Every Person annually, at or before *September* 10, to give in a List of his Polls and ratable Estate: those Lists to be returned to the General Court in *October*: Persons to be four-folded who leave out Part of their Estate, or who give in no Estate; the Listers may relieve People overcharged, may appeal to a Justice and of the Select-Men of the Town.— Every Male Person from 16 to 70 *Æt.* to be set in the List at £. 18 (Governor, Deputy Governor, Assistants, Ministers of the Gospel, President and Tutors of the *Collegiate* School, Students there, School-Masters and infirm Persons are excused) every Ox at £. 4; each Steer, Cow or Heifer of 3 Years and upwards at £. 3; Steer or Heifer of 2 Years at 40*s*.; each Steer or Heifer of one Year 20*s*. Each Horse or Mare of 3 Years old and upwards at £. 3; of two Years old 40*s*. of one Year old 20*s*. Every Swine one Year old and upwards 20*s*. Each dwelling House with adjoining Land 20*s*. per Acre; plow and mowing Land in some Counties 15*s*. in others 10*s*. in others 7*s* 6*d*. per Acre; boggy mowing Meadow Land 5*s*. per Acre; all upland Pasture or Mowing 8*s*. per Acre. Peculiars to be assessed by the nearest Town. Vessels at 15*s*. per Tun. The President of *Yale College*, and all Ministers of the Gospel, their Estates in the Towns where they live are exempted. All allowed Attornies at the Law, £. 50 their Faculty; and others higher in Proportion to their Business. All Traders &c. to be rated for their Faculties at the Discretion of the Listers.

Rates. In our *American* Colonies, in assessing of Rates, real Estate is generally valued at seven Years Income, which is favourable. In *Great-Britain* Lands are sold at 20 to 30 Years Purchase.

In *Connecticut* 1*d.* Rate, produces £. 4000 to £. 5000 Currency.

IMPOST. There is a high Duty upon the Exportation of all Timber and Lumber to the neighbouring Govern-

ments of *Massachusetts, New-York, Rhode-Island, and New-Hampshire*; this is designed in Lieu of a Prohibition, that after some Years the Colony may not be destitute of those Materials. The Impost upon Rum is per Gallon *1d.* if imported directly from the *West-Indies* or Sugar Islands, and *2d.* from all other Parts; a Draw-back is allowed upon its Exportation.

All foreign trading Vessels not owned in the Colony at Clearing, to pay ——— Powder Money to the Naval Officer.

The Governor with Advice of the Council, upon Occasion, by Proclamation may for a Time prohibit the Exportation of Grain and other Provisions; Delinquents forfeit these Goods by an Order obtained from a special County Court.

Excise *3d* per Gallon on all Wines and distilled Liquors; this is applied to defray County Charges. The County Courts to appoint Receivers of the Excise, Fees *2s* in the Pound. Receivers may agree with the Publick Houses by the Year.

The Act regulating Maritime Affairs extends from P. 147 to P. 152, in 27 Sections in their Law Book; does not contain any Thing peculiar.

By the Act for forming and regulating the Militia. The Governor to be Capt. General, the Deputy Governor Lieut. General: the Military Companies of the several Townships to be formed into 13 Regiments of Foot, and to each Regiment of Foot, one Troop of Horse of 64 Men, Officers included. The Field Officers of each Regiment, Colonel, Lieut. Col. and Major to be appointed by the General Assembly and commissioned by the Governor. Once in four Years to be called together for Regimental Exercise. All Male Persons from 16 to 50 *Æt.* to attend Military Musters, excepting Indians and Negroes, Secretary, Justices, Church Officers, Members of the Collegiate School, allowed Physicians and Surgeons, Representatives, School-Masters, Attornies at Law, a Mil-
ler

ler to each Grift Mill, Ferry Men, constant Herdsmen, constant Mariners, Sheriffs, Constables, and impotent Persons. All Militia listed Soldiers to be provided, besides his Accoutrements, with one Pound of good Powder, four Pound of Bullets, and twelve Flints. In each Company of 64 Soldiers besides Officers, there shall be a Capt. a Lieut. Ensign, and four Sergeants; where 32 Soldiers, there shall be a Lieut. Ensign, and two Sergeants; where but 24 Soldiers there shall be two Sergeants. The Companies to be Trained four Times a Year, every Soldier for not Appearance to pay 3 s.

The Arms and Ammunition of all Persons in the Government to be viewed on the first Monday of *May* Annually. Each trooping Horse freed from Rates and Impresses. Disorders on Training Days, may be punished by laying Neck and Heel, riding the Wooden Horse, or 15 s. The Fines to be applied for Colours, Drummers, Halberts, Banners, Trumpets, Trumpeters, and other Charges of the Company. The Colony to provide a Magazine of Powder and Shot, and the Select-Men of each Town to provide Military Stores for their Towns.

The Select-Men may appoint Watches and Wards in their respective Towns.

Any Persons may form themselves into Artillery Companies so called, for promoting of Military Exercises.

Deserters from the King's Service Sea or Land, Fine £. 20 and half a Year's Imprisonment.

The Training Militia of this Colony may consist of about 15,000 Men. 1740 at a great Struggle in the Election of a Governor, there were about 4,000 Freemen Voters. †

No

† In the House of Representatives of *Massachusetts-Bay*, in their Journal *June 3, 1748*, they declare that *Connecticut* is two Thirds as big (meaning in Persons and Estates, but not in Extent of Territory, *Plymouth* and Province of *Main* included) as the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*. With Submission, I find *Connecticut* not half so big in Numbers and Estates as *Massachusetts-Bay*. At Times by the prudent Administration

No Impresses of Persons or Cattle, but by Warrant, with a reasonable Allowance for Service, and for Damages if any happen.

Their Produce, Manufactures, Trade and Navigation.

Connecticut uses scarce any foreign Trade; lately they send some small Craft to the *West-India* Islands; they vent their Produce in the neighbouring *Continent* Colonies, viz. Wheat, Indian Corn, Beaver, Pork, Butter, Horses, and Flax. For some Years they have been endeavouring to raise Hemp and Flax; Flax may succeed, but Hemp seems to require a stronger Soil and warmer Climate, it thrives better further South, as in *Pensylvania*; that from the northern Parts, does not dress to

Administration of the Jurisdiction of *Connecticut* Colony, their Taxes were only £. 4000, to £. 5000 Currency per Ann. whereas the Polls and Rates of *Massachusetts*, were at the same Time per Ann. about £. 400,000 Currency.

1742, by the Valuation on *Massachusetts-Bay* were 41,000 White Males taxable for Polls; allowing for Concealments they may be estimated at 50,000 Fencibles; which multiplied by 4 according to Dr. *Halley's* Rules, makes 200,000, Men, Women, and Children; and in *Connecticut* about 100,000 People. In general the nearest Estimate that can be made of the People in *New-England*, is

<i>Massachusetts-Bay</i>	200,000
<i>Connecticut</i>	100,000
<i>Rhode-Island</i>	30,000
<i>New-Hampshire</i>	24,000

354,000

One fourth Part of these are 90,000 fencible Men, one fifth is 70,000 fencible marching Men, sufficient to swallow up the *French* of *Canada*, and *Cape Breton* Islands at a few Meals or Encounters.

In political Ballances, the Number of Inhabitants is a grand Article. In *Great-Britain* and *Ireland* are about 10 Millions of People, in *France* about double that Number, in *Spain* about 5 Millions, according to the Duke de *Riperda's* Estimate, in the seven United Provinces called *Holland*, about 3 Millions; but the Produce of Trade called Money, sometimes supplies the Inferiority of fencible Men, thus the general Ballance of Trade being in Favour of *Holland*, it is become the Center of Exchange for all *Europe*.

kindly,

kindly, nor whiten so well. The *Russia* Hemp exported from the northern Parts of *Archangel, Narva, Revel, and Riga* is brought down from the southern Parts of *Russia*.

Wool, Hemp, Flax and Iron are the general Materials of all our Manufactures. The raising and manufacturing of Hemp, Flax, or any other *Herba* into Cordage, Cauras, and other Linnen is a general and great Advantage without any Detriment to our Mother Country; it may be some Disadvantage to our Traders to *Russia, Germany, and Holland*; but private Lucration ought to give way to a publick Good. The Linnen Business employs variety of People, pulling the Flax, watering of it, breaking, swinging, hackling, spinning, weaving, &c.

Some Years since, the Government of *Connecticut*, established a Corporation for Commerce, called *the New-London Society*, but in the fraudulent Humour of these Times, contrary to the Design of their Institution, they soon began to *Manufacture printed Society Notes* to be imposed as a Currency: The Government in their wonted Prudence declared it a *Nusance*; these Bills were forbid a Currency, and called in at the Charge of the Society.

In all Countries the Inhabitants may be reduced to three Classes. 1. Villinage or *Coatters*. 2. *Yeomanry* or Farmers who improve their own Freeholds; and 3. *Gentry* who live by the Rents of their Estates farmed to others; the second sort is generally our Case.

Irish Potatoes or *Solanum Esculentum tuberasum*. C. B. P. is much planted in *New England*, thrives well, and is of good Use; Varieties here, are the rough Coat, red Coat, flat White, and long White: my Taste prefers the rough Coat.

* There is Copper Ore in *Simsbury Hills*, about a dozen Miles

* I learnt from Mr. *Baden*, as was hinted before, an ingenious Miner and Essager sent from *London*, a few Years since by a Company of Gentlemen, to explore *New-England* for Metallick Ores and Minerals; he found, 1. Bog and Rock Iron Ore in plenty, but not profitable. 2. Some Lead Ore, but so intermixed with Rock and Spar, as not to
turn

Miles West of *Connecticut* River ; it has been wrought, but did not turn to Account ; at present it lies dormant.

For their Wheat and Indian Corn ; see else where, as also for their Merchantable salt Pork.

Ship building and Staves are their chief Lumber Export.

† Wool not sufficient for the Home Consumption of the Colony.

A very considerable Produce in the Colony of *Connecticut* is a Seminary of Learning, or *Schola Illustris*, called a *Collegiate* College, and when Professors in several Sciences

turn to any Account. 1. In *Simsbury* near *Connecticut* River, there were three different Companies wrought for Copper Ore ; Mr. *Belcher* and *Caswell*, they also erected a smelting House in *Boston*, those turned to no Account, and the Affair dropt ; 2. Some associated Merchants of *Boston*, got a Lease of some adjacent Copper Mine Lands, they carried it on with Vigour, and sent Quantities of their Ore to *England*, the Company found the Scheme turn to no Advantage, and desisted. 3. A Company of *Bites*, rented some adjoining Lands ; they pretended to find some *Shoades*, a good Symptom for Veins ; they put some of these pretended rich *Shoades* aboard of a small Sloop ; this Sloop perhaps by Contrivance sunk in *Connecticut* River ; the Owners did not find it advisable to weigh the Ore, lest the Fallacy of the *Shoades* might be discovered. *Schaylers* rich Copper Mines in the *Ferfies* are not much wrought, the Owners keep them deposited as old Gold. There are some Symptoms of Copper Ore in *Attleborough*, but not explored. In *Attleborough* there is a Magnatick Iron Ore, it yields a red shot Iron, not good. See Vol. I. p. 540. In *Attleborough* Gore is some Copper Ore, but so intermixed with the Iron Rock Ore, as to render both unprofitable.

Mr. *Baden* found some Allom Slate or Stone ; but no vitriol Stone or *Pyrites*, such as is found both Sides of River *Thames* in *England*, along the *Kentish* and *Essex* Shores ; no salt Springs ; we have *Rudle*, which serves to mark Sheep and may serve as a Ground Colour for Priming, as *Spanish Brown*, and *Black Lead* in *Brimfield*, these are not Metallick Ores, but *Boles* or *Terras* ; of Okers there are none of any Value, some yellow Oker.

In *New-England*, they do not forge Bar-Iron sufficient for their Home Consumption, by Bloomeries and Refineries ; they import from *England*, *New-York*, *Ferfies*, *Pensylvania* and *Maryland*.

† *England* is always jealous of our exporting Sheeps Wool to foreign Market, but it may be depended upon, that our *New-England* Wool is not sufficient for Home Consumption ; and we Import many Woolens from *Great-Britain*. Some Years since, but not at present, some was shipt from *Nantucket* to *France*, very small Quantities.

are

are endowed, it will be called an Univerfity ; this Plant is vigorous and thriving, under the Cultivation of the preſent Prefident, the worthy Reverend Mr. *Clap*.

Some Account of Connecticut College, called Yale College in New-Haven.

Anno 1636 The General Affembly of *Maſſachuſetts-Bay* (ſee Vol. I. p. 543.) granted ſome Money towards erecting a College or *Collegiate School* in *Cambridge* near *Boston* ; the People of *Connecticut* contributed ſome ſmall Matter ; and after ſome Years, becauſe of the Diſtance and Charge, their Miniſters and ſome in Civil Authority preſented 1701, a Memorial to the General Affembly, deſiring that a *Collegiate School* might be erected and endowed, and propoſed 10 Miniſters of 40 Æt. and upwards, as Trustees for ordering the ſame ; Survivors to ſupply Vacancies, ſeven to be a Quorum: accordingly a Charter * for this Purpoſe was granted *October* 1701, to appoint Officers, make Laws, but not repugnant to the Laws of the Civil Government, to give Degrees, poſſeſs Lands not exceeding the yearly Value of £. 500, and other Eſtate, and to receive yearly out of the publick Treasury, £. 100 Currency † ; *Saybrook* was reſolved upon as a proper Place, and the Trustees choſe Mr. *Pierſon* Miniſter of *Killingworth* for Rector, ‡ and untill a Place could be fitted up in *Seabrook*, the Scholars were to meet at the Rector's Houſe in *Killingworth*, where they continued till the Rector's Death, 1707. Mr. *Hemmingway*, ſince Miniſter of *Easthaven*, was the firſt Schollar and *Solus* about half a Year. Several of the Trustees gave Books out of their own Libraries to begin a Library for the College ; Mr. *Lynde* of *Saybrook* gave a Houſe and Land ; Major *James Fitch* of *Norwich* gave Land in

* This Charter was drawn up by Mr. Secretary *Addington* of *Maſſachuſetts Bay*.

† Equal at the Time to about £. 70 Sterl.

‡ The Rector and 10 Trustees conſtituted the Corporation.

Killingley, which were afterwards 1730 converted into 628 Acres in *Salisbury*. There was a general Contribution throughout the Colony.

Upon Rector *Pierſon's* Death, Mr. *Andrews* of *Milford* was choſen *pro tempore* untill they could procure a reſident Rector, and the Senior Claſs was removed to *Milford*, the others to *Saybrook* under the care of two Tutors ; they boarded at private Houſes, and went to School at their Tutors Chambers under the Inſpection of Mr. *Buckingham* of *Seabrook*, one of the Trustees, and continued in this State about 7 Years, in this ſpace of Time fundry Donations of valuable Books were made to the Library, particularly by Sir *John Davie* of *Groton* upon his Recovery of the family Honours and Eſtate in *England*. The greateſt Donation of Books was from the Generoſity and Procurement of *Jeremiah Dummer*, Eſq; Agent in *London*, Ann. 1714, he ſent over above 800 Volumes of valuable Books, whereof about 120 Volumes at his own Coſt, and the reſt by Procurements from Sir *Iſaac Newton*, Sir *Richard Blackmore*, Sir *Richard Steel*, Dr. *Burnet*, Dr. *Woodward*, Dr. *Halley*, Dr. *Bentley*, Dr. *Kennet*, Dr. *Calamy*, Dr. *Edwards*, Mr. *Henry*, Mr. *Whiſton*, &c. Governor *Yale* of the *East-India* Company, ſent 300 Volumes : But a great Part of this valuable Library was loſt in a TUMULT upon the Removal of the Library from *Seabrook*.

There were Diviſions concerning a fixed Situation for the College, and in the mean while 1718, it was agreed that the Students might go where they ſaw cauſe to be inſtructed : the greater part went to *Wethersfield* under the Inſtruction of Mr. *Eliſha Williams*, afterwards Rector, ſome remained at *Saybrook* under the Tuition of Mr. *Hart* and Mr. *Ruſſel*.

1716. The Majority of the Trustees voted a convenient College and Rector's Houſe to be erected in *Newhaven*, which was effected accordingly, but with much Oppoſition and Confuſion from the Northern and Eastern Parts

of the Colony; * the Trustees notwithstanding held their first Commencement at *New-Haven* in September 1717.

The foresaid *Elibu Yale* Esq; an *East India* Merchant, from his Correspondence with Mr. *Saltonstall* Governor of *Connecticut*, bestowed in the whole, £. 100 Sterl. in three hundred Volumes of Books, and about £. 400 Sterl. in Effects, and by Will designed £. 500 Sterl. more, but this was never accomplished; 1718 Mr. *Dummer* sent more Books Value £. 30; and *Jabaleal Brenton*, Esq; of *Newport, Rhode-Island*, gave £. 50 Sterl. The College Building was raised *October* 3. 1717, 170 Feet long, 21 Feet wide, and 3 Stories high; cost about £. 1030 Sterl. contained above 50 Studies, besides the Hall, Library, and Kitchen. *September* 12, 1718, there was a splendid Commencement, and the Trustees gave it the Name of *Yale College*, and sent a Letter of Thanks to Mr. *Yale* for his Generosity to the Colony, and Letters of Thanks to Mr. *Dummer*, and General *Nicholson* for their Donations of Books. In *December* following, upon removing of the Books from *Saybrook*, there happened a Tumult, about 250 of the most valuable Books, and sundry Papers of Importance were conveyed away by unknown Hands and never could be recovered.

1719. The Trustees chose Mr. *Cutler*, Minister of *Stratford* to be a Resident Rector, and for his Accommodation a Rector's House was built 1722, cost by Subscription, £. 35, by Impost upon Rum £. 115, and some Part out of Mr. *Yale's* Donations by Sale of Lands £. 120 and by a general Contribution £. 55.

1722. At the Commencement he declared himself to be of the Church of *England*, and designed for *Episcopal Orders*, which by going to *England*, he obtained with a D.D. at present he is a *Missionary* in *Boston*. The College con-

* The Affair was referred to the General Assembly 1717, the upper and lower House differed, and the reference dropt. N. B. last Year there were Schollars residing at *New Haven* 13; at *Wethersfield* 14, at *Saybrook* only 4.

tinued without a Resident Rector four Years, the foresaid Mr. *Andrew* performed this Office at their Commencements.

1723. The general Assembly gave to the College an additional Explanatory Charter, † viz. that a Trustee might resign at Pleasure, that seven Trustees should be a Quorum and to act by a Majority, that a Minister of 30 Æt. might be chosen a Trustee, and that the Rector should be a Trustee *ex Officio*.

Mr. *Daniel Turner* of *London* sent them a Collection of valuable Books, 28 Volumes in Physick and Surgery; the College conferred upon him a *Diploma* of M. D.

1725. September 29, The Trustees chose Mr. *Elisba Williams* Minister of *Newington* Parish in *Wethersfield* as Rector, and upon giving his Consent to the Confession of Faith and Rules of Church Discipline agreed upon by the Churches of the Colony of *Connecticut*, he was installed Rector by the Trustees; he reformed the College very much, and advanced useful and polite Literature.

In *October*, 1732. The General Assembly granted to the College 1500 Acres of Land, being 300 Acres in each of the new Towns of *Norfolk*, *Canaan*, *Goshan*, *Cornwall*, and *Kent*: which after some Years may be valuable.

1732. The Rev. Dr. *George Barkley* Dean of *Derry*, now Bishop of *Cloyne* in *Ireland*, came over to found an *Episcopal College* in the Continent of *North-America*, or the *British West-India* Islands; he resided some Time at *Newport* of *Rhode-Island*, and purchased a Country Seat with about 96 Acres of Land. For certain Reasons, he gave over his Design of erecting an *Episcopal College*, and returned to *England*; although there was something peculiar in his Manner, he was a Gentleman of general Learning, and of a generous Disposition to propagate the same among Mankind; he was a good Judge of the World, and of all our Colonies and Seminaries of Learn-

† It is said to have been drawn up by Governor *Saltonstal*.

At the first founding of this College, it was ordered, that where no special Provision was made by the Trustees, the Laws of *Harvard College* in the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* should be their Rule.

ing; (the *Episcopal College of Williamsburg* in *Virginia* not excepted,) he gave the Preference to the *College of Connecticut*, a laudable Colony; he gave his Farm in *Rhode-Island* to this College, the Income to be *Premiums* from Time to Time for the best *Greek* and *Latin* Schollars in the Judgment of the President and Senior *Episcopal* Missionary of the Colony; this has been some Incitement to excel in the *Classicks*. He gave them a fine Collection of Books of near 1000 Volumes, whereof 260 were Folio's, £. 400 Sterl. Value. These Donations were made partly out of the Dean's own Estate, but principally out of the Monies put into his Hands for founding the *Episcopal College*.

Rector *Williams*, by reason of Indispositions *October* 31, 1739, resigned, returned to his own Estate in *Wethersfield*, and was employed in a Civil and Military Capacity. The Reverend, Learned, Worthy, and Mathematically Ingenious Mr. *Thomas Clap*, Minister of *Windham* succeeded; and in *April* 1740, gave his Assent to the *Seabrook* Articles 1708, of Faith and Discipline; he had been 14 Years Minister of *Windham*, he was installed Rector: His first Essay was to form a new Body of Laws, and to place the Books of the Library, in a proper distinct Order, to be with Facility come at; this Catalogue is printed.

1742. The General Assembly augmented the annual Grant to the College, whereby they were enabled to support three Tutors and a Rector (formerly one Tutor carried on two Classes) the President requires considerable Encouragement, as he is obliged to perform the Office of President, Professor of Divinity, Professor of *Mathematics*, and of a Tutor in ordinary.

1744. *Anthony Nougier* of *Fairfield*, by Will left to the College £. 27 Sterl. to be put to Interest.

The Assembly was petitioned by the Trustees, for a new and more perfect Charter, whereby the College was to be incorporated by the Name of the President and Fellows (not Trustees) of *Yale College* in *New-Haven*. This was approved of by the Name of an Act for the

more full and compleat Establishment of *Yale College*, &c., Dated *May 9, 1745*, it is ordained, 1. That † *Thomas Clap, Samuel Whitman, Jared Eliot, Ebenezer Williams, Jonathan Marsh, Samuel Cooke, Samuel Whittlesey, Joseph Noyes, Anthony Stoddard, Benjamin Lord and Daniel Wadsworth*, are a Body corporate and politick by the Name of THE PRESIDENT AND FELLOWS OF YALE COLLEGE IN NEW HAVEN, with Succession. 2. All former Donations to this Collegiate School, though in various Expressions, are confirmed and vested in the said President and Fellows, with Succession. 3. That the foresaid President and Fellows shall continue during Life, or until they resign, or are displaced. 4. There shall be a general Meeting of the President and Fellows annually second Wednesday of *September*, the Major Vote of the Members present shall be definitive; in Case of an Equivote, the President shall have a casting Vote: 5. The President and Fellows, six at least, concurring, may remove and appoint in their room a President and Fellows, a Clerk, a Treasurer, Tutors, Professors, Steward, and other necessary Servants. 6. That the President, Fellows, Tutors, Professors, and all other Officers, before they enter upon the Execution of their Office, shall publicly take the Oaths, and subscribe the Declaration appointed, 1 *Georgis I.* 7. The Corporation may appoint from Time to Time Regulations not repugnant to the Laws of *England* or of the Colony, but may be disallowed by the General Assembly. 8. The Corporation may confer Degrees as in other Colleges. 9. All Estates belonging to the College (if real, not exceeding the Value of £. 500 Sterl. per Ann.) all Members and resident Officers of the College, Tutors and Students, are exempted from Rates, Military Service,

† This is an ingenious Gentleman, Mathematically learned; at this Time 1750, contriving some Compendiums and other Improvements in *Astronomical Calculations*. Many of the Students (Students in College about 80) are expert in *Astronomical Calculations*, from the solid good Tuition and Instruction of the worthy Mr. *Clap*, a Credit to the Colony.

working upon the High Ways, &c. 10. A Grant of £. 100 Proclamation Money annually during the Pleasure of the Assembly.

1745. *Phillip Livingston* Esq; of the King's Council of *New York*, as he had four Sons educated in this College, gave £. 200 Currency, to begin a Foundation for a Professor of Divinity, to be called *Livingstonian* Professor of Divinity.

1746. Mr. *Samuel Lambert* of *New-London*, Merchant or Dealer, left some Lands to the College, but from some Intricacies in his Affairs, they turned to no great Account, excepting about 100 Acres in *Wallingford*, and 62 Acres in *New Haven*.

There were a great many smaller Donations from Time to Time, which in a Summary are not to be enumerated, and for the same Reasons I am obliged to omit the Lists, from the Foundation to this Time, of the successive Rectors or Presidents, Trustees, Treasurers and Tutors.

1748. Upon a Motion of the President, the General Assembly ordered a new College to be built at publick Colony Charge, 100 Feet long, and 40 Feet wide, 8 Rooms on a Floor, 3 Stories high, besides Garrets and Cellars.

The Regulations as to the Degrees of Batchellors and Masters are the same as in *Harvard College* of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, see Vol. II. p. 546.

This College at *New-Haven* thrives much; in *Sept.* 1749, there commenced 11 Masters and 23 Batchelors; at *Cambridge* in *Massachusetts-Bay*, *July* 1749, there commenced only 9 Masters and 22 Batchelors, though a College of much longer Standing, and in a large Government: at that Time it was observed by many, that every thing in the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* was upon the Decline, attributed to the bad late civil Administration.

Mountains and Rivers.

Connecticut is generally broken Land, that is, Hills and Dales, but well Watered. *Simsbury* or the *Copper Mine Hills* are their highest Lands, but not fertile, as it is said of all Metalick Ore Hills.

The noted Rivers and Runs of Water in *Connecticut* are, 1. Those which fall into *Thames River* or *New-London* long Creek. 2. *Connecticut* River with its Branches. 3. *Housatonick* River with its Branches, which at *Stratford* falls into *Long-Island* Sound. *Paukatuke* River which divides *Rhode-Island* Colony from *Connecticut* Colony, and *Byram* River which divides *Connecticut* Colony from the Province of *New-York* are of no Consideration. 4. Upon the *Long-Island* Sound is a range of Townships.

1. *Thames* River is a long navigable Creek of about 14 Miles deep, the Head of it is in *Norwich*; This is the Barcadier for all the Easterly Parts of *Connecticut*, and in Time may be the principal trading Place of the Colony; at present the Township of *Norwich* pays the highest Tax of any Township in the Colony, and consists of five or six Parishes. From *Connecticut* River to the Eastern Boundary of the Colony, is an extraordinary well watered Country, consisting of two principal Rivers and their Branchings, which fall into the bottom of this Creek in *Norwich*, these two Rivers are *Satucket* and higher *Wilemantick*, and *Quenebaug*. *Quenebaug* rises in *Brimfield*, passes through *Sturbridge*, and *Dudley* in the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, thence in the Colony of *Connecticut* it divides *Pomfret* from *Killingley*, *Canterbury* from *Plainfield*, and in *Norwich* falls into *Sakatuke* River which discharges into *Thames* River or Creek: This River from *Brimfield* of *Massachusetts-Bay*, in its Course in *Thomson* Parish of *Killingley* of *Connecticut* receives *French* River from *Leicester* and *Oxford*, and further in *Killingley* receives *five Mile* River, whereof *Honeycomb* Brook comes from *Douglass*, and *Muddy* Brook from *Woodstock*, next *Nathomy* Brook from

from *Pomfret*, *Mousashop* River from *Valington*, *Rouland's* Brook in *Canterbury*, and many other Runs of Water too minute to be mentioned : *Quenebaug* River falls into *Satucket* River a few Miles before it discharges into the said Creek. *Satucket* River where it originates in *Brimfield* is called *Willemantick* River, and in *Stafford* of *Connecticut* receives several small Runs of Water, it divides *Toland* from *Willington*, and *Coventry* from *Mansfield* ; in *Windbam* (where it is called *Windbam* River) it receives in its Western Side *Seagungamog* River and *Hope* River, on its Western Side it receives *Manchoag* River which had received *Fenton* River, and higher had received in *Ashford* *Bigelow* River, *Still* River and *Bungea* River from *Union* and *Woodstock* ; in *Norwich* it received *Quenebaug* River, as above.

2. *Connecticut* River with its Branches and Townships upon the River, its Branches are enumerated Vol. I. p. 459, &c. in the Section of *Massachusetts-Bay*.

2. *Housatonick*, *Westenbock*, or *Stratford* River, see Vol. I. p. 456:

4. Upon the *Long-Island* Sound is a delightful and profitable Range of good Townships, the Glory of all our *American* Plantations, *Stonington*, *Groton*, *New-London*, *Eyme*, *Saybrook*, *Killingsworth*, *Guilford*, *Brantford*, *New-Haven*, *Milford*, *Stratford*, *Fairfield*, *Norwalk*, *Stamford*, and *Greenwich*.

As the GOVERNORS are annually Elective, that is, very variable, I shall not mention such temporary Matters ; only observe, that the *Winthrop* Family has for many Years been the most noted in *New-England* : Mr. *Winthrop* was the first resident Governor of *Massachusetts-Bay* his Son *John Winthrop* Esq; procured the present Charter of *Connecticut* Colony, and was their Charter or first Governor, and afterwards their elective Governor for many

many Years ; this Man's Son *John* was successively Governor for many Years he died *Æt. 69. November 27. 1707*, was born in *Ipswich* of *New-England* 1638 ; *Gurdon Saltonstal*, a worthy Man, a Congregationalist Preacher was elected in his room, and was with good content successive Governor, elected for many Years till Death, *October 1724*, was succeeded by *Joseph Talcot*, Esq; &c.

Currencies, I refer to the *Appendix* ; at present only observe, that the £. 28,000 Sterl. Reimbursement, and Rates of seven Pence *per Annum* will cancel all their Paper Currency, in two or three Years. *

* In *New-England*, we are still in confusion as to our *Paper Currencies* ; Governor Sh—y's precipitate Scheme of 1749, has had a bad effect, nothing could be rasher excepting the *Cape-Breton* Expedition, where the Chance against us was vastly great, but beyond all humane Probability successful ; the unexpected Intervention of some *British* Men of War under the direction of Mr. *Warren* alleviates the Miraculousness of the Affair ; it pecculated and depopulated *New-England*, occasioned near one Milljon Sterling additional national Debt to the Kingdom of *Great-Britain*, and finally was restored to the *French* in a better State than *Statu quo*. Perhaps the *Ch—eto* Settlement in *Nova-Scotia* as a Barrier against the *Canada* and *Cape-Breton* *French* with their *Indians*, at present carried on with much vigour, may turn to the same bad Account as *G—gia* (which *GOD* forbid) said to be a Barrier against our Southern Enemies the *Spaniards*, and their *Indians*. *Mysteries of State* I do not pretend to explore or explain, *que supra nos non ad nos* ; the Soil adjacent to *Ch—eto* is so irrecoverably bad, it can never be a PLANTATION ; it may answer as a good fishing Village, or may as a place of Arms, be supported at a great Charge : I do not say this was a *political Amusement*, to divert People (by giving them something to play with in their Imaginations) from canvassing the Surrender of *Cape Breton* without any Equivalent to the *British* Nation, not so much as an explicit Confirmation of the Cession of *Nova-Scotia*, or *L'Accadie*.

That *New-England* is still in confusion, appears, 1, By the Assembly of *Massachusetts-Bay* being perhaps obliged to dispense with an Act of their own, confirmed by the King in Council, and to prolong the Time for canceling their Province Bills : The generality of the responsible Merchants of *Rhode-Island*, though they have always declared against multiplying of a depreciating Currency, in a Memorial to the General Assembly of *Rhode-Island*, say, though the Act *December*

I shall here insert Abstracts of some of their Laws, exemplary, natural, plain, and concise, adapted to Plantations.

In the late authoratative Revifal (1750) of their municipal Laws ; The introductory Law or Act, is, in the Manner of a *Magna Charta*, securing the general Privileges of his Majesty's Subjects in the Colony, in these Words, " *Be it enacted, &c.* That no Man's Life shall be taken away, no Man's Honour or good Name shall be stained, no Man's Person shall be arrested, restrained, banished, dismembred, or other ways punished ; no Man shall be deprived of his Wife and Children ; no Man's Goods or Estate shall be taken away from him, nor any ways indamaged under colour of Law, or countenance of Authority ; unless it be by Virtue or Equity of some express Law of the Colony warranting the same, established by the General Court, and sufficiently published. In Case of defect of such Laws in any particular Case, by some clear and plain Rule warranted by the Word of God.

All his Majesty's Subjects within this Colony, whether they be Inhabitants or not, shall enjoy the same Justice and Law, that is general for the Colony, in all Cases proper for civil Authority, and Courts of Judicature in the same ; and that without partiality or delay.

That no Man's Person shall be restrained or imprisoned.

1748 of *Massachusetts-Bay* for drawing in their publick Bills of Credit, was in a too violent and hasty Manner. 2. The Colony of *Rhode-Island* this Spring 1751, have emitted £. 100,000 Currency with a greater Interest and to be cancelled after ten Years ; this is a Step towards Reformation.

Connecticut continues honest. *New-Hampshire's* always inclinable to a depreciating fraudulent Paper Currency, from a difference between their Governor and House of Representatives, formerly mentioned Vol. II. p. 34, have had no legislative Capacity for some Time, and consequently incapable of augmenting their Paper Currency, much to the detriment of their Governor, who by consenting to such Emissions, might have obtained an addition to his Salary.

by any Authority whatsoever, before the Law hath sentenced him thereunto; if he can and will give or put in sufficient Security, Bail, or Mainprize for his Appearance and good Behaviour in the mean Time, unless it be for capital Crimes, contempt in open Court, or in such Cases where some exprefs Law doth allow or order the same.

No Person, except in his own Case, other than a qualified Attorney, is allowed to plead at the Bar: in Cases not exceeding £. 5, one Attorney only is allowed: in larger Cases, two Attornies and no more.

Each Town shall have a peculiar Brand for their Horses on the near or left Shoulder.

All Cask shall be of the *London* Assize, viz. Buts, 126 Gallons, Puncheons, 84 Gallons, Hogheads, 63 Gallons, Tierces, 42 Gallons, Barrels 31 and half Gallons.

Miller's Allowance for grinding per Bushel, three Quarts Indian Corn, two Quarts other Grain, one Quart Malt.

Every Town to have a Sealer of Weights and Measures.

In *Connecticut*, as generally among the Congregation- alists of *New-England*, according to the *Jewish* Manner, they begin and end the Lord's Day at the setting of the Sun.

Here are about 150 established Ministers called Presby- terians, Congregationalists, and Confociated; besides con- scientious Dissenters, said not to be established but toler- ated. In some Townships are many Parishes or Precincts.

In all our Colonies voluntary Associations (most of which may afterwards be confirmed or incorporated by Provincial or Colony Charters) towards *Accademies* and *Libraries*, ought to be encouraged.

The civilizing and christianizing of the *Indians* was one great and professed Condition in all our Royal Grants.

I do not endeavour a strict pedantick Narration; but though in a common Place Manner, I shall observe some Method.

Common Interest is 6 *per Cent per Ann.* letting of Cattle and Maritime Affairs excepted. In

In all our Plantations, Colonies, and Provinces; they abound with Civil and Military Titles of *Judges, Squires, Colonels, Majors, and Captains*; Gratifications for being of a Governor's Party, or by a pecuniary Interest.

By an Act of the Assembly of *Connecticut*, in building of Vessels, no Timbers or Plank to be allowed other than white Oak and rock Oak, except for the Deck and Ceiling.

In *New-England*, particularly in *Massachusetts-Bay*, it is not only the depreciating of the Currencies by enormous Paper Credit Emissions called Money, but the scarcity of Labourers from vast Expeditions unprofitable and ruinous to the Colonies. In Manufactures, our Labour is so dear, that we can not afford our Goods any where at Market, so cheap as other Plantations or Countries may. It is not scarcity of Provision or Depreciations only, but chiefly scarcity of Labourers and consequently advance of Labour: that in Bricks, where the Difference is only in Labour, about 40 Years since they were sold at one Piece of 8 per Thousand, at present they are sold at three Pieces of 8.

Concerning the TENURE OF LANDS. All Grants of Colony Lands by the General Assembly shall be according to the most free Tenure of *East Greenwich* in the County of *Kent* in *England*, conform to our Charter Grant. All Townships, and Farms to particular Persons, shall be from the General Assembly by Patent signed by the Governor and Secretary with the Colony Seal, Title of Lands to be tried in the County where the Lands lay. All Estates for Ministry, Schools, and charitable Uses are free from payment of Rates.

Three Freeholders appointed by the Court of Probates to divide real Estate among Legatees or Heirs of Intestates. No Indian Title without the approbation of the General Assembly to be pleadable. Proprietors having lost their Bounds, three Freeholders appointed and sworn by a Justice of the Peace, may set up and fix the Bounds, but
with

with Appeal. In devise of real Estate, Wills to be witnessed by three Persons in the presence of the Testators. Guardians to Minors with some Persons appointed by the Court of Probate may divide Lands with the surviving Partners. Lands held in Partnership to be divided by a Writ of Partition. Persons presuming to sell Indian Rights of Lands not confirmed by the General Court, Fine £. 50 and the Persons wronged by such Sales to recover treble Damages. All Grants and Divisions of Lands heretofore made by ancient Custom of Town-Meetings shall be good and valid though without consent of the Proprietors. Act, May 9, 1723. Hereafter undivided common Lands shall belong to the Proprietors exclusive of other Inhabitants, which Proprietors may have their own Meetings to manage such undivided Lands. Sales of Lands devised to be sold by Executors, shall be good and valid, though some of the Executors do not join in the Sale. Five Proprietors of undivided Lands may obtain a Meeting to be called by a Justice's Warrant. All Estates though accruing by Wife, formerly sold by the Husband alone, (Act, bears date Oct. 10, 1723) the Deeds shall be valid, but for the future no such Deed shall be valid without the Wive's consent by Hand and Seal. Proprietors of Land in common, may make Rates to defray necessary Charges. By an Act of Parliament 1732. In any Actions in the Plantations, when one of the Parties Plaintiff or Defendant resides in *Great-Britain*, Evidences to prove any Matter or Thing, may be taken in *Great-Britain* before any chief Magistrates where the Party resides, which certified and transmitted, shall be good as if done *viva voce* in open Court in the Plantations; and all Houses, Lands, Negroes, and other Hereditaments, as by the Laws of *England*, shall in the Plantations be liable to satisfy Debts: Where an Administrator makes it appear, that the deceased's personal Estate is not sufficient to satisfy the Debts, the Assembly may direct his real Estate to be sold towards paying of his Debts. Partition of Lands not to be valid till surveyed and recorded. No Deed of real

real Estate is compleat until it be signed, sealed, witnessed, acknowledged, and recorded.

No Lands to be bought of *Indians* without consent of the General Assembly. † No *Indian* to be sued for Debt. No Indenture for Service made by an *Indian*, shall be valid, unless acknowledged before Authority.

Debtors. Any Book Debt not accounted for with the original Debtor in seven Years, shall not be pleadable after the Debtor's Death.

Upon Execution issued, the Sheriff shall at the usual Place of the Debtor's Abode demand the Debt; upon Non-payment he shall levy the Execution upon the Moveables (necessary Apparel, Household Stuff, Tools, and Arms excepted) and set up a List of said Goods upon the Town Post, to be sold by Out-cry after 20 Days. In want of Goods and upon the Creditor's refusing Lands, the Debtor's Body may be seized. May levy Execution upon real Estate valued by Apprisers. All Executions are returnable in 60 Days, or to the next Court.

Debtors committed to Jail, swearing that they have not Estate to the value of *five Pounds*, shall be subsisted by the Creditors at a certain Rate. Debtors and Felons to be kept separate. The County Sheriffs to have the Custody of the Jails.

As to absent or absconding Debtors, if no Estate is to be found, the Debtor's Agent or usual Place of Abode may be served with a Writ; if no Debtor nor Agent appear, the Writ may be continued to next Court, and if need be to one Court further, and then Judgment to be rendred for the Plaintiff, and Execution granted upon the Debtor's Effects wherever found: Persons conceal-

† The Assembly 1722, confirmed a Purchase made 6 or 7 Years since from the *Mohagan Indians* upon the *Mohagan Hills* part of their reserved Lands, to Governor *Saltonstall*, Major *Livingston*, *Dinnie*, *Rogers*, and *Bradshaw*; this was constituted the North Parish of *New-London*.

ing the Goods of absconding or absent Debtors, are liable to satisfy the Debt sued for.

No Writ of Error shall be brought for the reversal of any Judgment after the space of three Years, and no Review upon a Writ of Error.

The Estates of deceased insolvent Debtors to be distributed in equal Proportions to the Creditors; Debts to the Government, Sickness, and general Charges being first paid; saving to the Widow (if any) her Household Goods and Dower during her Life, and upon her Death to be distributed among the Creditors. A certain Time allowed for receiving Claims, the Commissioners to be appointed by the Judge of Probates: Creditors not bringing in their Claims during that certain Time allowed, are forever excluded.

No Action to be brought for Bill, Bond, or Note, but within the space of seventeen Years. No Action of Trespass or Defamation (Fine for Defamation not to exceed *ten Pounds*) but within three Years.

Any Debtor in a Debt not exceeding £. 20 may confess Judgment before a single Justice.

Criminal Affairs. The Governor, Deputy Governor, or three Assistants may *reprieve* a condemned Malefactor to next General Court or Assembly.

The *Capital Crimes* are Conspiracy against the Colony, Rape, Bastiality, Sodomy, False-witness in Cases of Life and Death, wilful firing of Houses, disfiguring, or dismembering the private Parts, and wilful Murder, Blasphemy. Deism first Offence, incapacity of any Employment, second Offence outlawed.

All Complaints and *Presentments*, to be made within one Year after the Offence is committed, excepting in capital Crimes; dismembering is Banishment, and Theft exceeding *ten Shillings*.

All *Fines* imposed by the General Court or Assembly, and by the Superior Court, belong to the Colony Treasury; imposed by the County Court, belong to the County

County Treasury; imposed by an Assistant or Justice, belong to the Township Treasuries.

Tavern Offences, see the Paragraph of Excise.

A *Bill of Divorce* and Liberty to marry again, may be granted by the Superior Courts, in Cases of Adultery, fraudulent Contract, wilful Desertion for three Years, or seven Year's Absence not heard of.

Single Persons committing *Fornication*, to be fined 33*s*, or whipt not exceeding 10 Stripes; anti-nuptial Fornication only half Penalty.

Every Person playing at Dice, Cards, or Tables, Fine 20*s*.

Forgery. Three Days publick Pillory, double Damages to the injured Party, and incapable of being an Evidence in Law. The Form of their Oath is, *You swear by the Name of the Ever-living God*.

All kind of Delinquents to pay the Charge of Presentation, Guilty or not Guilty.

Perjury £. 20 Fine, and six Months Imprisonment, if unable to pay his Fine, shall sit in the Pillory with both Ears nailed, and incapable of giving Evidence.

Lord's Day, Penalties; neglecting of the Publick Worship, working or playing on the Lord's Day 10*s*, rude Behaviour, disturbing the publick Worship, 40*s*, travelling, 20*s*, going abroad excepting to publick Worship, 5*s*, no Vessels to sail excepting upon extraordinary Occasions, 30*s*, and several other Particulars, refusing to pay shall be publickly Whipt.

Theft, to forfeit threefold, and a discretionary Fine, not exceeding 40*s*, and if the value amount to 20*s*, and upwards, shall also be whipt not exceeding ten Stripes; if the Offender can not pay, the Person may be sold for a certain Term of Years Service: Penalty for receiving or concealing stolen Goods, is the same; buying Goods of Slaves, Penalty is treble Value, Service or Whipping.

Riots :

Riots : * Three or more Persons assembled together, to do an unlawful Act ; if they obstruct the Proclamation in reading, or do not disperse after Proclamation made by a proper Officer, shall be punished by Fine not exceeding £. 10 for each Person, and Imprisonment not exceeding six Months, or by whipping not exceeding 40 Stripes : If any Rioter is killed or hurt by any Person of the Posse, such Person is indemnified. The Prosecution must be within 12 Months. The Sheriff if need be, may raise the Militia in his Aid.

Man slaughter (without premeditated Malice) but Wilful ; Penalty, Forfeiture of Goods, burnt in the Hand with Letter M, Whipt, and disabled from being Evidence in Law.

Lascivious Carriage may be punished at Discretion by

* About 30 Years since, there was a *Riot Act* made in *New-Hampshire*.

In the Province of *Massachusetts Bay*, the violent, hasty, and rash Manner of calling in all their publick Credit Bills in the space of one Year by Act of Assembly, which had been gradually emitted in the Course of 50 Years, was found impracticable, and was like to have produced a general Tumult : This occasioned the making of a *Riot Act* February 14, 1750, 1, to be in Force for three Years, viz. Where any Persons to the number of 12, armed with Clubs, or other Weapons, or any number of Persons consisting of Men, armed or not armed, shall be unlawfully riotously assembled ; any Justice of Peace, Field Officer, or Captain of the Militia, Sheriff, under Sheriff, or Constable, shall make Proclamation to disperse ; if they do not disperse within an Hour, every such Officer with Assistance, may carry them before a Justice, and if in resisting any Person is hurt, or killed, the Officers and Assistants are indemnified : Persons not dispersing in the space of one Hour, shall forfeit to the King all his Lands and Chattels, or such Part thereof at the discretion of the Justice for the Use of the Province, and be Whipt 39 Stripes, one Year's Imprisonment, and receive the same number of Stripes once every three Months during his Imprisonment. Demolishing Houses the same Punishment or Penalty. This Act to be read every general Sessions of the Peace, and Anniversary Meeting of each Town ; no Prosecution after 12 Months ; the Judges may abate the whole or any part of the Whipping.

In the Colony of *Rhode-Island*, there are no *Riot Acts*, because, as generally supposed, they are *inconsistent* with their Constitution.

the County Court; by Fine, House of Correction, or Corporal Punishment.

Burglary or Robbery; Penalty is Branding, Ears cut off, and Whipping: Third Offence is Death.

Counterfeiting or altering publick Bills of Credit of this or of the neighbouring Colonies; Penalty, cutting off Ears, Branding, and Work-House for Life, Estates forfeited, and to be debarred of all Trade. Any Society presuming to emit Bills of Credit to be used in Trade to be punished as in Case of Counterfeiting; the Utterer to forfeit double the same.

Criminal Persons making their Escape from the Authority of other Provincial Governments to this Government, may be remanded back to the Place of Perpetration.

The Colony Acts relating to the *religious Observation* of the first Day of the Week, *Sunday*, Sabbath-Day or Lord's-Day, perhaps are too *puritanical*; they seem to droop gradually, I shall not revive them.

Any Person of the Age of Discretion (which is 14 *Æt.*) publishing a *Lye* to the Prejudice of the Common-wealth, or Damage of private Persons, to be fined, Stocks, or Whipping.

Apprentices and *Servants* *Æt.* 15 or upwards, absconding from their Master's Service, shall serve three Times of their Absence. Servants or Apprentices flying from the Cruelty of their Masters, may be protected by a Magistrate and discharged from their Service.

A Woman delivered of a Child, afterwards found Dead, if she can not prove, at least by one Witness, that such Child was born dead, the Mother shall be accounted guilty of Murder.

Any Slave or Indian striking a white Man, Penalty Whipping not exceeding 30 Stripes.

Penalty for Persons who resist, or abuse any King's Officer, Fine not exceeding £. 10.

Cursing or *Swearing*, Penalty 6*s* for the Stocks. Every

Houfholder to have at leaft one Bible, Orthodox Catechifm, and other Books of practical Godlinefs,

A *House of Correction* to be eftablifhed in each County, two Thirds of their Earnings towards their fupport, and one Third for other Charges.

Penalty for *selling ftrong Liquor* to an Indian 10*s* per Pint, Drunkennefs and Idlenefs are the general Vices of Indians. An Indian convicted of Drunkennefs Penalty 5*s* or 10 Lashes. All the Indians in a Township fhall be muftered once a Year, and the requifite Laws read to them, all Englifh Families taking Indian Children into their Families fhall teach them to read Englifh, and in- ftrudt them in the Principles of the Chriftian Religion; for every three Months neglect, a difcretionary Fine not exceeding 30*s*.

The Laws relating to the *Obfervation of Sabbath Day* and Regulation of publick Worfhip are fevere; and too many to be inferted here, thefe are under the Infpedtion of the Grand Jury, Tything Men, and Conftables.

Private Lotteries, and Wagers to vend Goods, forfeiture is the Value of the Goods.

Parifh Churches of the eftablifhed Religious (Prefbyterians, Congregationalifts, and confociated Minifters) are under the direcdion of the County Courts; tolerated Dif- fenters from thofe Profefions are left at large.

Any Indian, Molatto, or Negro travelling without a Pafs, may be feized as a Runaway.

Schools are well regulated and have a Colony Allow- ance. Every Ecclefiaftical Society of 70 Families or up- wards, fhall have a School for the Inftitution of Chil- dren to read and write. A Grammar School to every Head or County Town. One College or *Schola Illuftris* in the Colony.

There are fevere Penalties for *cutting down of Trees*, or *firing of Woods* and Lands, the accused, where there is no Proof, muft exculpate himfelf by Oath.

A DIGRESSION,

Concerning North-America Grain and Grazing, with a few occasional Remarks relating to natural History, especially as to the Seasons, Winds, and Weather, in a loose Miscellany common Place Manner.

Connecticut is a good Country as to Climate and Soil ; and is valuable for *Grain* and *Pasture*. Any Country is happy, where the meaner Inhabitants are plentifully and wholesomely fed ; warmly and decently clothed ; thus it is in *Connecticut*.

Upon the first Arrival of *Europeans* in *America*, the Indians Bread kind were only the *Mays* or Indian Corn of the *Cerealia* or Grain, and the *Phaseolus* or Kidney Beans called Indian or French Beans of the *Legumina* or Pulse Kind.* Besides they eat Earth-nuts of several Kinds, Berries of many Kinds, and Variety of Mast, † too numerous to be enumerated and described in a Summary. As also their hunting of sundry kinds of Quadrupeds or Beasts, Moose, Deer, &c. their fowling especially of Birds, Webfooted ; their catching of River, Pond, and Sea-Fish, especially of the *Testaceous*.

As the *Fruentum Indicum* or Indian Corn, was their principal Subsistence, though not spontaneous, but cultivated, I cannot avoid giving some particular Description and Account of it, hitherto it has not been minutely describ'd. It has with much Impropropriety been called *Fruentum Saracenicum* properly, *Fruentum Saracenicum* (from the *Saracens* Country in *Barbery*) is Buck Wheat, and at present is cultivated by the *Dutch* in the Govern-

* The Indians upon the Shore, used the *Pisum Maritimum spontaneum perenne humile repens* ; Beach Pease, Flowers end of *May* ; it resembles that of *Marison*. H. Ox. 2 43.

† *Masts* from *Masticare*, are several sorts of Forrest-nuts, Chestnut, Walnut, Hazle-nut and the like.

ment of *New-York* for hafty Pudding, and as Provender for Horfes.

It's most profitable Culture is in light sandy Land, with a small Intermixture of Loom, it requires sand Heat, such as is that of Pitch Pine or Huckle-berry Lands. Though a hungry Grain, it requires much and repeated Labour. It is first plowed, than cross plowed, next harrowed all smooth, then furrowed and cross furrowed; at proper Distances of about 4 Feet at the Intersections in hollows are dropt five or six Seed Grains (a Peck sows or plants one Acre) and by the Hoe covered with Earth the end of *April* and beginning of *May*; soon after its first Appearance, it is plowed two furrows length ways between each row of Grain, and by the Hoe the Weeds are bro't towards the Grain; this is called the first Weeding; after some Time it is cross plowed two furrows between each planted row, and by the Hoe the Earth and Weeds, are brought to the Corn, this is called half-hilling; next it is plowed length-ways, as before, two furrows, and by the Hoe the Earth is brought to the Roots, and forms a Hill to prevent the Winds eradicating of it; sometimes it is hoed a fourth Time: In middle of *August* the Grain becomes mellow fit for roasting, a sort of Delicacy in the Sugar-Islands, called Mutton: It emits its Coma, plume, or Blooms end of *June*; then they cut off the top of the Stalks, that the Grain may receive the more Nourishment. † A wet Summer makes it run too much into Stalks and Leaves, which starves the Ears. End of *September* and beginning of *October* the Ears are Hand gathered, the tops are very agreeable to Cattle for Fodder.

† Here the *Farina fecundans* of Vegetables seems to be evinced: This Plume or Flower if cut off before its Maturity the *Mays* bears no Ear or Grain. In *New-England* where the Grain is of various Colours (white, yellow, reds of several Shades, blues of several Shades, Marbled, and Mixtures of these in the same Ears) the Grains planted of various Colours, and in the neighbourhood receive Alterations in their Colours or Shades by the various Impregnations: this is observable also in other Vegetables, Beats, Carrots, &c.

The Ears have 8, 10, 12, 14 Rows of Grain, the more Rows, the better is the Grain ; some say there has been 18 Rows, but none under 8 Rows.

Indian Corn does not weigh so heavy as *New-England* Wheat ; their Indian Corn at a Medium is in Weight 45 lb. their Wheat 55 lb. per Bushel. The *Virginia* Indian Corn is white and flat, yeilding a better or whiter Meal ; the *New-England* Corn is of a pale yellow, smaller, but thicker, and answers better in fatning of Beeves, Hogs, and other Stork ; *Virginia* Corn is planted at greater Distances, being of a greater Growth, and is all white ; in *New-England* and *Canada* it is generally of a pale yellow, does not bear so many Ears as that of *Virginia*, it is of a lesser Habit and quicker Growth. The Indian Corn of *New-England* at a Medium produces 25 Bushels per Acre, and ripens in a shorter Time || (this a Providence in Nature, because their hot Seasons are shorter) the *Virginia* Seed in *New-England* does not ripen into Grain as requiring a longer Growth than the *New-England* Seasons do allow. The *West-India* or Sugar Islands have *per Ann.* two Crops of Indian Corn planted *May* and *September* : in our Continent we have only one Crop planted in *May*. Capt. *Hill* of *Douglafs* by way of Experiment planted Indian Corn, middle of *June*, it was ripe middle of *August* in a hot Season. End of *April* they begin to plow, Indian Corn Harvest is beginning of *October* ; when it begins to be in the Ear, Rain or Drizzle occasions a Smut.

The PHASEOLUS ; which we call Indian Beans or French Beans, because the French from the *Canada* Indians, were the first in propagating them. * It is the *Phaseolus*

|| Thus in *Lapland* and the Northern Parts of *Sweden*, Barley from sowing, ripens two Weeks sooner than at *Stockholm* ; and in *New-England*, Indian Corn ripens in a fewer Days from planting or sowing than in *Virginia*.

* When English Pease, (*Pisum majus flore fructu albo.* C. B. P.) sell at three, these Indian Beans sell in Proportion at two, they are more

seolus Indicus fructu tumidiore minore niveas et versicolor. Morison, *Tab.* 4. Sect. 2. They are generally white, and there is an indefinite Number of simple Colours and Varigations or Marblings.

In *New-England* (some Parts of *Connecticut* excepted) the general Subsistence of the poorer People (which contributes much towards their *Endemial Pforick* Disorders) is Salt Pork and Indian Beans, with Bread of Indian Corn Meal, and Pottage of this Meal with Milk for Breakfast and Supper.

For the varieties of *Phaseolus* called Indian Beans, *Calavances* and *Bonavist*, see Vol. I. p. 122, and the Sections further South..

Connecticut Wheat is full of Cockle †. 20 Bushels per Acre is a good Crop. It is said, in *Canada* they sow no Winter Grain. *New-England* Wheat is subject to Blast; some think that it proceeds from the *Farina fœcundans* of adjacent Barberry Bushes. †

Our best Wheat is from *Virginia* and *Maryland*, next best is from *Pensylvania* 55 lb. to 60 lb. per Bushel, and casts whiter than the *English* Wheat; the further North the Flower casts the darker; *Nova-Scotia* Wheat casts almost as dark as Rye. Some Years since in a scarcity of Wheat in *New-England*, some was imported from *England*, from the long Westward Passages it became musty, cast dark, and did not answer.

In *New-England* the Allowance to a Baker of Ship-

more Colicky than Pease: The Tribe of the *Phaseolus* is very large, some Years since, *Peter Coelart* in *Holland*, cultivated above 100 distinct Species. The Cow-itch, as we pronounce it, is the Cow-hege of *Zura* in the *East-Indies*: *Phaseolus jeliquis hirsutis, pilis pungentibus.*

† *Lychnis segetum major.* C. B. P.

‡ *Barberis Latissimo folio Canadensis.* H. R. P. it is plenty all over *North-America*, it is of a larger Habit, than that of *Europe*, is 10 to 12 Feet high, it is used as Hedges, but spreads too much into Suckers. There is a Law in *Connecticut*, p. 13 for destroying these Bushes, as they are "thought to be very hurtful by occasioning, or at least the increasing the blasting of *English* Grain."

Biscuit is 3 Bushels and quarter Wheat for 112 lb. Wt. of Biscuit, besides—*per* Ct. Wt. for Baking.

Herrings * have formerly been taken Notice of.

In *New-England* some Oxen of 18 Ct. Wt. and Hogs of 25 Score have been killed; *Connecticut* Salt Pork is the best of *America*, they finish the fatning of their Hogs with Indian Meal.

In *New-England* their Barley is a hungry lean Grain, and affords no good Malt Liquor; Moloffes is the principal Ingredient in all their Buvrage. Their Barley of 4 Rows called French Barley is not so good as that of 2 Rows called English Barley. Their Oats are lean, chaffy, and of a dark Colour.

In *New-England* they sow their Winter Grain 3d and 4th Weeks of *August*.

In *New-England*, after gathering in their common Grain, Flax, &c. the first natural Appearance of indigenous Plants is *Panicum non cristatum spica multiplici*, *Ambrosia*, and *Virga aurea annua Virginiana Zanoni*. Near *Boston* and other great Towns, some Field Plants which accidentally have been imported from *Europe*, spread much, and are a great Nufance in Pastures, such as *Ranunculus pratensis repens hirsutus*, C. B. P. Butter Cups, *Bellis major*. I. B. the greater wild white Daisy, *Dens Leonis*. Ger. Dandelyon &c, at present they have spread Inland from *Boston*, about 30 Miles.

Great-Britain and *New-England*, though differing about 10 d. in Lat. seem to be of the same Temperature: *New-England* is some what colder in Winter and warmer in Summer, from the vast Land Continent N. W. of it,

* Upon the Coast of *Great-Britain*, the Herring Fishery begins a little before Midsummer; they emerge or make their first Appearance off *Crane Head* in *Braffa Sound* N. Lat. 61 and half d. from thence gradually proceed South to *Dogger-Bank*, where that Summer Fishery ends: The Winter Fishery begins off *Yarmouth*, and continues about 70 Days, they proceed Southward and are caught in Plenty about the *Thames* Mouth until the latter end of *January*.

which

which receives and communicates continually (therefore with Intenfeness,) by the lambent Air these different Temperatures of the Seasons. N. W. is our general or natural Wind. 1. After Storms or Perturbations of our ambient Air from any Point of the Compass, being expended, the Wind settles N. W. 2. All our Spring and Summer Sea Breezes, return to the N. W. 3. In middle of *February* 1731, 2 called the cold Tuesday (the most intense insupportable Cold I ever felt) the Wind was at N. W. It is not easily accounted for, that in different Countries though the Temperature of the Air be nearly the same, the natural Growth of Plants differs much, *v. g.* the *Bills* minor or lesser wild *Daisy*, a native of *Great-Britain*, abound there from 50 d. to 60 d. of Lat. but will not grow in *North-America*. All of the *Cucurbitaceous* Kind, Pompions &c. (Mr. *H—y* an ecclesiastical Mountebank, in his Farces called *Oratory*, calls the *New-England* People *Pompionites*) by cultivation without the Force of Hot Beds grow well, but in *Great-Britain* requires Force.

In a new Country there may be a Tax upon improved Lands, as a Fund for *Præmiums* to encourage the clearing and planting of Wilderness Lands for the first Year, the second and third Year are the next profitable for Produce, and requires no Bounty, and afterwards especially in *New-England* it ought to be smoothed and lay for Pasturage.

In *New-England*, two Acres Cow-pen Land may raise about a Tun of Hemp, but is soon exhausted.

Locusts, called *Grashoppers*, and a Species of *Caterpillers*, some Years are very noxious to our Pastures; in the Summer 1749, a small *Locust*, with a droughth destroy'd our Herbage; they generally prevail *June* and *July*.

Lands in *New-England* which yeild at a Medium 20 Ct. Wt. of Hay are the best, if 40 Ct. Wt. the Hay is rank and sower; some fresh Meadows, if mowed more than once, yield greater Quantities. In mowing Lands an uniformity of Grass ought to be attended to and endeavoured, because some Grasses ripen soon, and are upon the

the decline before others attain a Perfection fit for mowing. End of *June* and beginning of *July* the height of upland or English Hay Harvest is over ; third and fourth Weeks of *August* they mow their Salt-Meadow Hay. Salt-Hay is from Salt or Spring-Tide Marshes ; fresh Hay is the natural Growth of inland Marshes ; English or upland Hay, is the Herbage imported from *Europe*. † *New-England* Crops or Produce are very uncertain, for Instance of Hay, in the Spring 1750, it sold for £. 4 *New-England* Currency, in the Spring 1751 it sells for 15 *s* per Ct. Wt. Two Acres, if good, is a Cow Land.

Cyder is a considerable Produce for Consumption and Exportation ; when distilled, it does not yeild above one twelfth Spirit ; end of *August* they begin to make a mean sort of Cyder from the Windfalls.

Turneps sowed in any Latitude thrive, even in *Davis's*-*Straits* or *West-Greenland* ; our best *New-England* Turneps are from new Lands N. E. from *Boston*.

Some Remarks relating to the natural History of New-England.

The Seasons from Year to Year are better determined by some Passenger Birds and Fish, than by the blossoming of Trees, and flowering of some inferior Vegetables ; for Instance, *Swallows* constantly arrive from the Southward in the second Week of *April* with a Latitude of only two or three Days ; *Peaches* sometimes blossom beginning of *April*, in some Years not till beginning of *May*, a Latitude of 30 Days. *Anno* 1735, last Day of *December*, 1st and 2d of *January*, fell about 20 Inches of light Snow, Wind N. W. Northerly, followed by a very hard Frost, and *Peaches* did not begin to blossom

† In hot Countries they make no Hay ; it dries too quick, dry roas and turns to Dust. In some Parts of *North-America*, the Winters are too long and cold, and in other Parts too hot for Grass, consequently can afford no Quantity of Proviander for Cattle, and will never be Beef Countries.

till *May 7*. *Anno 1719*, the beginning of Winter was very severe; Peaches did not blossom the Spring following.

End of *Autumn* and beginning of Winter, if dry, follows a mild Winter; but if falling Weather, Rain, or Snow (freezing inland is a Basis for Snow to lodge and chill the Winds from N. to W.) produces hard freezing in our Plantations, which are to leeward. *1731, 2 Feb. 14 and 15*, *Tinctura sacra* froze, the coldest Weather I ever felt, after a flight of Hail and Snow, the Wind from S. came suddenly to the N. W. *1732, April 5*, Wind N. E. Northerly falls about 14 Inches Snow, soon dissolved, a great Storm at Sea; *1751, April 6*, all Day a heavy fleaky Snow, but soon dissolved. Travelling in *Connecticut* from *Pensylvania*, *1716 June 26*, Finger cold, Roads froze, Ice thick as a Crown-Piece, Indian Corn beginning to Bloom is hurt. *

Mackarel † set in second Week of *May*, lean, and seem to eat muddy. Some are caught all Summer; there is a second Setting in for *Autumn*, fat and delicious eating; they are a N. Lat. Fish, and are not to be found South of *New-England*; beginning of *July* for a short Time they disappear or will not take the Bait.

Herrings (a bad kind) set in middle of *May*, they seem to be whimsical or variable as to their Ground.

Frogs seem to be dormant, as are *Snakes* in the Winter or very cold Season; we have three Species of *Frogs*, Ra-

* The Northerly and N. E. Snows, as being from the Sea, are softer and milder, than those from the North-Westerly Land-Continent. Great Snows lodged in the Woods Westward, covered from the dissolving influence of the Sun, by their chill retard our Springs; it is a vulgar Error, that the Snows lodged upon the Ice of our Western great Lakes is the occasion; from the Observations of a curious Gentleman an Officer belonging to the four Independant Companies stationed in the Province of *New-York*, who commanded the Garrison at *Oswego* upon the Lake *Ontario* about three Years, I find that the great Lakes are never frozen over, and consequently can not lodge Snow.

† *Hook Mackarel* for a Market are preferable to those caught by *Seines* which bruize one another.

na viridis arborea, the Green-Tree Frog; the *Rana terrestris et aquatica*; the *Rana maxima Americana aquatica*, the Bull Frog.

1719, 20. *January* 7. the coldest of Days, Wind at N. W, Snow laying about one Foot deep; *Charles-Town* Ferry (Tide runs 4 or 5 knots) froze over in 24 Hours passable on the Ice (no Weather it is said, so cold, since Winter 1697) continued extreme cold to the 14th. This Year the Peaches did not blossom.

Wild Gease fly to the Southward middle of *September*, and return beginning of *March*; a wild Goose may yield half lb. Feathers; six Brants yeild 1 lb. Feathers. Cuckows return beginning of *April*. †

In the Winter Season, we have from 15 to 20 Days at Times, a Frost so severe, as, in Chambers to freeze the Ink.

In Maritime Places, as are all our *North-America* Colonies, the Weather is variable, according as the Wind blows from the Sea or inland; in Islands it is more constant, because all Winds do come from the Sea; as also inland Countries, as is *Canada*, their Winds are all from the Land, and consequently of the same Nature.

The *New-England* Winters generally set in end of *October* and beginning of *November*, and are over middle of *March*; the extreme Frosts are from *Christmas* to middle of *February*; the very hot Weather is in the first Weeks of *July*.

Early Winters are generally severe and long. 1732, The Rivers froze up middle of *November*, and continued froze until end of *March*, many Cattle die for want of Provinder.

Mr. *Thomas Robie*, a Fellow in *Cambridge* College of *New-England*, an ingenious accurate observer, comparing

† In *Europe* the *Cuckows*, Passenger Birds, arrive generally beginning of *April*, therefore the first Day of *April* is called *Fools Day*; this Bird is so foolish as not to have any exclusive Nest; hence filley married Men whose Wives are not exclusive but common, are called *Cuckold*, *Koekoek*, or *Cocu*.

with Mr. *Derham's* Observations at *Upminster* in *England*, found that Winds continuing long in one Quarter, especially if strong, were nearly the same in both Places, allowing some Days for their Passage from one Place to the other.

Salmon are a high Latitude Fish, they are not to be found South of *New England*; the further South the later they set in, and continue a shorter Time; for Instance, in *Connecticut* River they set in beginning of *May* and continue only about three Weeks; in *Merrimack* River they set in beginning of *April*, to spawn, and lie in the deep cold Brooks until *September* and *October*, then silently (so as not to be observed) and with dispatch, they return to the Sea; in *Chebuoto*, *Cape-Breton* and *Newfoundland* they continue the greatest Part of the Year. The People living upon the Banks of *Merrimack* River in *Massachusetts-Bay* of *New-England*, observe, that several Species of Fish, particularly *Salmon*, *Shade* and *Alewives* are not so plenty in the Seasons as formerly; perhaps from disturbances or some other disgust, as it happens with *Herrings* in the several Friths of *Scotland*.

Smelts a high Latitude Fish, set in to *Boston* Wharfs middle of *September* and take the Hook; beginning of *February* they go up to Spawn in the Freshes; no *Smelts* South of *New-England*; *Tom-Cod* goes up to Spawn end of *November*.

We reckon it a good Passage for trading Vessels, from *New-England* to *London* in 4 Weeks, and from *London* to *New-England* in 6 Weeks.

In *New-England* generally the falling Weather is from N. E. to S. E. in Winter, if the Wind is N. of E. Snow: if S. of E. Rain. The N. E. Storms are of the greatest Continuance, the S. E. Storms are the most violent. 1716, 17, *February* 20 to 22, Wind at N. E. Northerly, fell a very deep Snow upwards of 3 Feet upon a level. N. W. freezing Wind backing to the S. W. if reverberated, proves the most intense cold Weather; thus chymical reverberated Heats are the strongest.

Trees

Trees generally loose their Leaves middle of *October*. The Button Tree or *Platanus Occidentalis*, is of a fine Parabolick Form fit for Avenues, but its verdure is of short Continuance, and the Tree is not long lived; it is not full in Leaf till middle of *May*, and its Leaves begin to fade end of *July*.

Our great Rains are in *August* about two Months after the Summer *Solstice*, and our great Snows in *February* two Months after the Winter *Solstice*; the greatest Snow in my Remembrance was 1716, 17, third Week of *February*.

In *falling Weather*, Wind, the further North from the East, the finer and dryer is the Snow; the further South from the East, the more fleaky and humed is the Snow; when the Wind comes South of the S. E, it turns to Rain.

The *Winds* from the W. S. W. to the N. N. W. are dry Winds, fit for dry curing of Salt-Fish; further North, they are damp and soft as coming from the Ocean; further South are from the hot Latitudes, and Sun-burn the Fish.

Early *Springs* accelerate the Buds and Blossoms of Trees, and frequently a subsequent Easterly Chill, Blasts or Pinches them; but are advantageous for Hay, because a late Spring is too soon succeeded by the Summer, and the Grass before it becomes thick, runs into Stalks, Straw, or Stubble, and Seed: Indian Corn requires early Springs, because if too late it is in danger of *Autumnal* Frosts.

In *extreme freezing Weather* the insensible Perspiration or Vapours from the Harbour, House-Pumps, &c. becomes a sensible Perspiration, being by the cold condensed in Form of Smoak.

1732, 3, The *Winter* was very severe and long with Gusts of Wind, 50 to 60 Vessels bound to *New-England* could not hover upon the Coast to wait a favourable Spurt of Wind and Weather for pushing in; but were obliged to bear away to *Bermudas*, *South-Carolina*, and the *West-India* Islands; Peaches were not generally in Blossom

Blossom till middle of *May*; these Effects of a severe Winter did not reach *South-Carolina*.

Oats, Barley and Rice, are ripe middle of *July*.

No *Herrings* (*Alewives*, the same Species) appear South of *Great-Britain*, and none South of *New-England*, which makes a difference of 10 d. in Lat. but not in Temperature, therefore the Temperature must be nearly the same, though differing in Latitude, this is also observable in *Salmon*.

We have *natural Pacers of Horses*, which at a Cow run, (a Gate which they acquire by Pasturing, when Colts, with the Cows) will Pace three Miles in seven Minutes.

1719, *October 14*, *Hard Frost* as if Mid-winter, *Robins* disappear. This Winter I walked round *Boston Peninsula* at a quick Pace upon the Ice, without all the Wharfs, in one Hour seven Minutes.

End of *February* arrive *wild Geese, Brants and Teal*.

Our *intense hot Days* are with the Wind from S. to W. S. W; from N. to E. N. E. is our *most chilly* Weather. The dry Winds are from W. to N. N. W. all other Winds carry more or less damp, this is manifest in the drying of Salt Cod-fish. Our dry Winds with continuance are from the Continent N. N. W. to W. S. W. our falling Weather, is from the Ocean, Wind N. N. E. to E. S. E. the other Winds are variable and partake of both. From middle of *October* to middle of *April* requires Chamber-Fires. Long Winters are bad for Neat Cattle, because without Sufficiency of Grass or Hay, subsisting only by Grain, they loose their Cud. Our Seasons as to Temper of the Weather may be reckoned, Winter from the Winter *Soltstice* to the Spring *Equinox*, Spring from said *Equinox* to Summer *Soltstice*, Summer from said *Soltstice* to *Autumn Equinox*, and *Autumn* from thence to *Winter Soltstice*.

End of *August* the Symptoms of approaching Winter begin to appear, we call it the Fall (*Autumn*) of the Year, the Leaves of *Maple* turn red, the Leaves of *Birch* turn yellow. The *Alnus* or *Alder* holds its Leaf, and the verdure

ture of its Leaf the longest, it is a *Conifer*, the *Betulo*, though a *Conifer*, looses its Leaf soon. Some *Asters* are the latest of our Wilderness Flowers. We have scarce any Winter flowering Shrubs. *August* sometimes is a very hot Month; 1719, *August* 15, so hot that some Men and Cattle die in travelling the Road (the succeeding Winter was very cold and long) some Boys faint away at School, strong Wind S. W. Southerly, dusky Morning.

In some very severe Winters such as 1732, Lumps of Ice settle upon the Oyster Banks, and kill the Oysters.

When Tides set in higher than usual for the Season and Time of the Moon, it is a sign of Easterly Winds at Sea, and Vessels from *Europe* have short Passages.

Early Winters are generally severe and long.

The *New England* Earthquake of *November* 5, 1732, an undulatory Motion was felt the same Day and Hour at *Montreal* in *Canada*, but more violent; this was not so violent as that of 1727. *October* 29, 10 and half in the Night, a vibrating Motion was felt at *Barbadoes* the proceeding Day.

In hot Countries, the Birds have gay Plumage, and sing but little; their Flowers have beautiful Mixtures of Colours, but little or no Fragrancy. In hot Countries no good Wines, extreme Heats or Colds, do not agree with Wines.

Where there is a hollow Sea, Land is at a great distance: certain kinds of Fish and Fowl are Symptoms of Land.

The *Quality of Lands* in *New-England* is known by the Produce; in the best Lands are Chestnuts and Walnuts, next is Beech and white Oak, lower is Fir, then Pitch Pines, then Whortles or Huckle-berry Plains, lastly, some marshy Shrubs, low and imperfect, being the lowest Degree of *Suffrutex* Vegetation.

We have a few Winter *Birds of Passage*, which arrive in *Autumn* when the Summer Passenger Birds depart, and go off in the Spring when the Summer Passage Birds return, v. g. the Snow Bird or *Passer nivalis*. Some Passen-

gers remain only a few Days, some a few Weeks, others for some Months.

In *New-England* are some pretty little *Quadrupedes*, *Putorious Americanus Striatus*, the Pol Cat or Skunk, *Sciuri* or Squirrels of several kinds, the black, the gray Fox Squirrel, the striated ground Squirrel, the flying Squirrel, the Ferret Squirrel, &c. I seem to forget that a Place is reserved in the Appendix for some Things relating to natural History. †

Goose-berries, Rasp-berries, and Straw-berries are spontaneous in all our *North-America* Settlements.

The clearing and cultivating of Wilderness Lands, is a very laborious and tedious Affair.

Between the *Tropicks*, Winds are generally Easterly, called Trade Winds; from the *Tropicks* to the high Latitudes, they are variable, but mostly Westerly, being an Eddy of the Trade Winds: In the North high Latitudes the Winds are froze N. E. to N. W. ||

The

† My Summary Design does not allow of *Botanick* Excursions, I shall only observe, 1. that in the Country near *Boston*, I have collected and describ'd about eleven hundred indigenous Species of Plants, perhaps a few of them might be casually imported from *Europe*. *Ray* in his *Synopsis of British Plants*, enumerates about 1400 distinct Species. *Tournefort* in his *Histoire des Plantes des environs de Paris*, enumerates and describes about 1037 Species. 2. *New-England*, perhaps all *North-America*, seems mostly to abound with Plants, *flore composito*, *flore Apetalo*, *Capillares*, *Musci*, *Lichenes* and *Musbroms*. Between the *Tropicks*, they are generally *Anomalous monopetalous and Polypetalous*, not reduceable to our *European Tribes*, and require a *Botanical Addition* of more Tribes; *Tournefort* in his Appendix and Corollary has no new Genius of *verticillatæ Umbellifiræ*, *Cariophylei*, and very few of the *Papilionacei*. 3. The *Marine* Plants seem to be the same all over the Earth, perhaps from the Communications of the Seas: the *Maritime* Plants differ much. 4. The further South, the *Timber* and other Wood rives better into *Staves* and the like, but does not yield much crooked Timber, being spongy; in the intermediate Latitudes, from the alternate variable hot and cold Weather, it is not durable; in very hot Countries their Wood is hard and ponderous.

|| Our intense Heats are many Weeks after the Summer *Solstice*, in the first half of *July*; our intense Colds are in *January*; thus it is

in

The great Import of Moloffes into *New-England*, hinders the cultivation and malting of Barley and other Grain; therefore ought to be charged with a high Duty, equivalent to a Prohibition.

Hunting and other Sports of the Field are little used in *America*.

The Discovery and subsequent Possession of *American* Lands, gave the *English* an exclusive Right against all other People, the native Indians excepted. Grants of Lands to particular Persons, or to Companies and Corporations by the Crown; notwithstanding of other Purchasers from the Indians, fixes the Tenure of these Lands in the Crown, by some small Quit-rent. The Indians of the N. E. Parts of *America*, seem to be the least improved of human Kind; they are Strangers to Religion, Policy, and Arts.

In *New-England*, Idleness prevails too much; they observe religiously that Article in the fourth Commandment, *rested the seventh Day*, but neglect a very essential Article, *six Days shalt thou Labour*; when Wages are high and Provisions cheap, they do not labour half their Time.

Wild Pigeons, *Palumbus torquatus migratorius*, see Vol. I. p. 126. in their Passage Northward, began to appear in *New-England* end of *February* and beginning of *March*, but not in large Numbers, because they travel more inland for the Benefit of last *Autumn* Berries of several sorts in the Wilderness; they return in their Passage Southward, in larger Quantities, end of *August*; and some Years since have been sold at 4d. Currency per dozen,

in all *Phænomena* of Nature where there is a Reciprocation of Causes and Effects; the intenseness of the Effects are sometime after the efficient Causes have passed their height; the *Oscillation* of the Ocean in Tides, the Tides are not the highest until the third or fourth Tide after new and full Moon; in Summer the hottest Time of the Day is about 2 or 3 Hours P. M. and in Winter the coldest Time of the Day is generally about the same Hours; our cold Weather is protracted into the Spring Season of the Year, and occasions short Springs, our warm Weather is protracted also and occasions long *Autumn* Weather.

they at that Season keep towards the Plantations for the benefit of their Harvest. They are of great Advantage in their Seasons towards victualling our Plantations; the Country People feed some of them (they are caught alive in Nets or Snares) for some Time with Indian Corn, and brought to Market, and are good delicate eating; Cuming Seed or its Oil, are found by Experience the best Lure to induce the Pigeons to their Nets. The Spring Flights 1751 were very large, like Thunder Shower Clouds, but soon over.

Cuckows, as above, came in 4th Week of *March*, and beginning of *April*; *Black Birds* arrive from the Southward about the same Time with the *Swallows*, 2d Week of *April*.

Mackarel. See above.

Brants arrive middle of *February*, very lean and of short Continuance, they return in *Autumn* fat, and in *October* proceed Southward.

Catesby, a late assiduous Naturalist, enumerates 113 distinct Species of Birds from 30 to 45 d. N. Lat. in *North America*, and observes, that Animals, particularly Birds, diminish in number of Species as we rise the Degrees of Northern Latitudes. He observed about 18 sorts of *Serpents*; whereof only 4 are of the Viper kind, and of these the Rattle-snake, *Viper caudifona Americana*, is the most pernicious.

A frosty *Winter* produces a dry *Summer*; a mild *Winter* produces a wet *Summer*.

Rains and Fogs are more common on the Shore and in Soundings than in deep Water at Sea.

In *Canada* the *Winds* are more uniform and intensely Cold than in *New-England*, because the bleak damp Easterly Winds from the Ocean do not reach so far; the *Canada Springs* are sometimes more early than the Springs in *New-England*; in *Canada* the *Snows* fall early before the *Frosts* enter the Ground deep, therefore so soon as the *Snows* dissolve, the *Sun* sooner enters the Ground, than in a frozen Soil.

Forrests cover and retain the Snow long in the Spring, and occasion late Springs by their chill; when cleared, we shall have better Seasons.

In a Miscellany or loose Article, I may be allowed to insert any Thing for Information or Amusement, if not too foreign to the proposed Subject. 1. Our Indians formerly accounted by single *Wampum*, by Strings of *Wampum*, and by Belts of *Wampum*; in the same Manner as the *English* account by the Denominations of *Pence*, *Shillings*, and *Pounds*. 2. An *Indian Preacher*, *novement* or naturally in the Introduction to his Sermon, said, *Brethren, little I know, and little I shall say*; though generally the less a Preacher knows, the more tedious are his Sermons. And in the old Manner of Jingle, said, God does not require of us to part with our Sons, as he did of *Abraham* of old, but to part with our Sins. 3. Clergy, though by some, said to be of human Institution, are designed as of good Use to persuade People into Civility and good Manners, and seem to be essential to Society; but their bad Examples of Immorality and passionate condemning of all who do not follow their not essential Mode or Whims, renders them more hurtful than beneficial to Society.





SECTION XII.

Concerning the Province of
New-York.

TO deduce this Colony and any other of the *British* Colonies in *America*, *ab origine*, as it were, with their progressive Improvements and Vicissitudes, see *Vol. I. Sect. 2. Article 3.* giving some Account of the Discoveries and first Settlements in *America* from *Europe*: — and *Sect. 4.* General Remarks concerning the *British* Colonies in *America*, — and particularly P. 204. concerning *New-Netherlands*, comprehending the present *British* Provinces of *New-York*, *New-Jersies*, and some Part of *Pensylvania*, in a Summary, References are more proper and consonant, than Recapitulations.

As *New-Jersies*, and part of *Pensylvania* were formerly with *New-York*, called the *Dutch* Colony of *New-Netherlands*, or *Nova-Belgia*; I cannot here avoid by Anticipation mentioning some Things concerning them.

In those Times all the Country from *Maryland* to *New-England* was called *Nova-Belgia* or *New-Netherlands*.

King *James I.* by Letters Patent *April 10, 1606*, in one Patent incorporated two distinct Companies or Colonies. 1. The first Colony to *Sir Thomas Gates*, *Sir George Summers*, *Richard Hackluit* Prebend at *Westminster*, and *Edward Maria Wingfield*, Esq; Adventurers of the City of *London* with their Associates; from 34 d. to 41 d. of Northern

Northern Latitude, including all the Lands within an hundred Miles directly over against the Sea Coast, and back into the main Land one hundred Miles from the Sea Coast, and each Plantation or Settlement to extend 100 Miles along the Sea Coast. 2. The second Colony to *Thomas Hanham, Raleigh Gilbert, William Parker, and George Popham, Esqrs;* of the Town of *Plymouth*, with their Associates; liberty to begin their first Plantation and Seat, at any Place upon the Coast of *Virginia*, where they should think fit, between the Degrees of 38 and 45 of Northern Latitude; with the like Liberties and Bounds as the first Colony; provided they did Seat within an hundred Miles of them.

What relates to *Virginia* is referred to the Section of *Virginia*. Anno 1610, My Lord *Delaware* was sent Governor to *Virginia* by the *South Virginia Company*; falling in with the Land about two Degrees to the Northward of the Capes of *Virginia*, discovered a fine large Bay, in Compliment to his Lordship, called *Delaware Bay*.

The *Swedes* and *Finns* seem to have been the first Occupiers of some Parts of that large Country, afterwards called by the *Dutch*, NEW-NETHERLANDS, they made Settlements both Sides of *Delaware River*, and began several Towns and Forts, *Elsenburgh, Casmier*, now called *New-Castle, &c.* The *Dutch* traded thither and soon became more powerful and rich than the *Swedes*, the *Swedes* and *Finns* followed Husbandry only, and being in constant Fears from their neighbouring numerous *Indians*, put themselves under Protection of the *Dutch* 1655, and *John Kizeing* the *Swedish* Governor, made a formal Surrender of that Country to *Peter Stuivesant* Governor for the States of *Holland*. Where-upon all that Tract of Land in *North-America* from the Latitude of about 38 d. to the Latitude of about 41 d. in *Connecticut*, was called *New-Netherland* by all People, except the *English*, who still claimed it as Part of *New-England*; in fact, Governor *Argol* of *Virginia* had several Bickerings with the *Dutch*, particularly 1618 in the Bay of *Delaware*, and with others elsewhere,

elsewhere, in the Affair of the *English* exclusive Trade and Property in those Parts ; but in the Scene of the doleful civil Wars in *England* under various Forms of Administrations, finding intricate Labour enough at home, neglected the *American* Plantations ; and their neighbouring *European* Settlements at full Ease were much increased to our Prejudice. The Progeny of the Banditti *Swedes*, who first settled *Delaware* River, still live in a separate Manner, they have at Times Preachers and Books of Devotion from *Swedes*, but do not hold their Lands of the *Penns* ; because the Royal Grant to *Penn* exempts Lands then settled by any Christians ; but they are as to Jurisdiction under the Government of *Pennsylvania*.

New-York, and *New-Jersies* at first were traded to, and some Settlement made there, by the *English* and *Dutch* : The *Dutch* placed a Governor there, of which the Court of *England* complained to the States of *Holland*, the States disowned it, and said, that it was only a private undertaking of an *Amsterdam West-India* Company, and K. *James* I. commissioned *Edward Langdon* as Governor, and called the Country *New-Albion*, the *Dutch* submitted to the *English* Government : During the Civil Troubles in *England* in the Administrations of K. *Charles* I, and of the Republican Party, the *Dutch* again established a Government there, till it was reduced by *England* 1664. When this Reduction was upon the Anvil, K. *Charles* II. made a previous Grant of that Country, called by the *Dutch*, *NEW-NETHERLANDS*, *March* 12, 1663, 4 of Property and Government to his Brother the Duke of *York*. Duke of *York*, *June* 24, 1664 made a Grant of that Portion now called *New-Jersey*, (so called, in Compliment to Sir *George Carteret* a *Jersey-Man*) jointly to Lord *Berkley* of *Straton*, and to Sir *George Carteret* Vice Chamberlain, and of the Privy Council ; a further Account of this belongs to the Section of *New-Jersies*.

K. *Charles* II. *Anno* 1664, fitted out an Expedition for the Reduction or Recovery of *New-Netherlands*, so called by

by the *Dutch*, consisting of a Squadron of Ships commanded by Sir *Robert Carr*, and some Land Forces aboard under the Command of Col. *Richard Nicols*. Upon their Arrival at *New-Amsterdam*, since called *New-York*, the *Dutch* after some Shew of Resistance, but much terrified, upon the offers of Protection for their Persons and Properties, and liberty to remove with all their Effects, if they saw fit; submitted to the *English*; Articles were drawn up, signed and exchanged in September 1664, the *English* possessed of *New-Amsterdam*; called it *New-York*: In a short Time there after, the *English* Squadron entred *De la Ware* Bay and River, and all the Settlements there, followed the Example of the *Dutch* Capital *New-Amsterdam*; and Possession of all *New-Netherlands* was taken for and in the name of the Duke of *York*, to whom *K. Charles* his Brother had previously given it by a Royal Patent; and all manner of Jurisdiction, as well Civil as Military, was exercised through out the whole Country, excepting in the *Ferries*, which the Duke of *York* had disposed of to *Barkley* and *Carteret*, by the sole Appointment of the Duke and his Deputies.

By the third Article of the Peace of *Breda* signed July 21, 1667, between *England* and the *United Provinces*, the *English* were to remain in Possession of that whole Country, in Exchange for the Country of *Surinam*, which the *Dutch* had taken from the *English*. *K. Charles* in the beginning of 1672, having declared War against the *United Provinces*, the *Dutch* sent a Squadron of Ships to *New-York*, which they soon reduced with the rest of the Country; but by a Peace concluded at *Westminster*, February 9, 1673, in the sixth Article it was again restored to *England* in general Terms, "that whatsoever Countries, Islands, Towns, Ports, Castles or Forts have or shall be taken on both Sides, since the Time that the late unhappy War broke out, either in *Europe* or elsewhere, shall be restored to the former Lord and Proprietor, in the same Condition they shall be in when the Peace itself shall be proclaimed; after which Time there shall

shall be no Spoil nor Plunder of the Inhabitants, no Demolition of Fortifications, nor carrying away of Guns, Powder, or other military Stores which belonged to any Castle or Fort at the Time when it was taken.”

This Tract of Land, as it had been taken and possess'd by a foreign Power, though afterward delivered or surrendered back by Treaty, to obviate or remove all Disputes concerning the Validity of former Grants, K. Charles was advis'd to make a new Grant of that Country to his Brother the Duke of York by Letters Patents, bearing date, June 29, 1674.

Let us now proceed more particularly to the Province of *New-York*, the Subject of this Section.

Anno 1664, K. Charles II, appointed Commissioners to settle the Boundaries of the several Colonies: * From Misinformation they settled the Line between *New-York* and *Connecticut* by a N. N. W. Line, as is mentioned in our Vol. II. P. 161; they were made to believe that this N. N. W. Line would leave 20 Miles to *New-York* on the East Side of *Hudson's River*; whereas it soon cross'd *Hudson's River*, and left many of the Dutch Settlements upon *Hudson's River*, to the Colonies of *Massachusetts-Bay*, and *Connecticut*, but these Colonies never took Possession thereof. This Line is upon Record in *New-York* and *Connecticut*.

The Partition Line of *New-York* with *Connecticut* was run February 24, 1684, by Commissioners of both Colonies, and signed at the Town of *Milford* in *Connecticut* by Col. *Thomas Dongan* Governor of *New-York*, and by *Robert Treat* Esq; Governor of *Connecticut*, and confirmed by King *William* in Council, March 28, 1700; but as this Line was not well mark't, distinguished, or ascertained, especially as to the Equivalent Lands; not long since, by both Parties, it was finally run, well mark't out,

* We formerly mentioned, their settling of the Boundaries between the Colonies of *Massachusetts-Bay* and *Rhode-Island*.

and ascertained, and confirmed by the King in Council, as is related in our Vol. II. P. 161, in the Section of *Connecticut*.

As to the *Eastern Boundary of the Province of New-York*; *New York* hint at claiming so far East as *Connecticut River*, because 1. by ancient *Dutch Maps* published before the *English Royal Grants* of the Colonies of *Massachusetts-Bay* and *Connecticut*, the *Dutch* had actually a Fort at the Mouth of *Connecticut River*, as appears by Records. † 2. That Part of *New-Netherlands* in the Duke of *York's Grant*, is described, “and also all that Island or Islands, commonly called by the several Name or Names of *Mattowacks* or *Long-Island*, scituate, laying and being towards the West of *Cape-Cod* and the narrow *Highbansets*, abutting upon the Main Land between the two Rivers, there called and known by the several Names of *Connecticut* and *Hudson's Rivers*, and all the Lands from the West Side of *Connecticut River* to the East Side of *Delaware-Bay*.” 3. This Island, now called *Long-Island*, remains with the Province of *New-York* by a mutual Tacit consent of both Colonies. In answer to these Allegations, it is obvious, 1. That the Line lately settled between *New-York* and *Connecticut*, and confirmed or ratified by the King in Council is at 20 Miles East of *Hudson's River*, and cuts off all their Claims of this Nature upon *Connecticut*. 2. By the like parity of Reason, and precedent, the *New-York Claim* to that Part of *Massachusetts-Bay*, which lies West of *Connecticut River* is cut off; Moreover, the *Dutch* never traded or settled so high upon *Connecticut River*. 3. Therefore in equity, *New-York* is bounded North of *Connecticut* N W. Corner, by a Line parallel to and at 20 Miles distance East of

† The Children of *William Brown Esq;* of *Salem* in *New-England*, are great Grand Children of a Grand Daughter of *Mynbeer Provoost*, at that Time Governor of this Fort.

Hudson's River, to overagainst the great Crook, * Elbow, or Great Falls of *Hudson's* River, and thence in a due North Line to the S. Boundary Line of the *French* *Canada* Country; || this Line with other disputable Claims

* Great Crooks of Boundary Rivers not well discovered and described at the Times of granting and bounding Colonies, are now construed as a Termination of such Lines; thus it was lately by Determination of the King in Council with respect to the Line between the Provinces of *Massachusetts-Bay* and *New-Hampshire* at *Pantucket Falls* of *Merrimack* River, see Vol. I. P. 423.

|| The various Disputes between the Courts of *Great-Britain* and *France* (I must once and again beg Pardon for meddling in State Affairs or *arcana Imperij*, by chance they fall in my way, and in some Manner I scramble over them) concerning the national Properties and Jurisdictions of some disputable Countries in *America*, which perhaps might have been settled in the late *definitive* (so called) *Treaty of Aix la Chapelle* more expeditiously and with better effect, considering 1. that by meer dint of good Fortune, Providence seem'd to be of our Side, and gave us Possession of *Louisbourg* at the Mouth or Entrance of *St. Laurence* or *Canada* Great River, the *French* *Dunkirk* of *North America*. 2. By our natural Superiority at Sea, we had entirely obstructed the *French* Plantation *American* Trade, which might have induced or forced the *French* to make us some favourable Concessions; than by tedious and generally ineffective subsequent Treaties by Commissaries, which frequently terminate only in a Neutrality till next general Rupture, or in some mutual Concessions by way of Equivalents detrimental to that Side who may have lately received the Law; thus for Instance, if the Court of *Great-Britain* at this Juncture should quit Claim, the *Neutral Islands* in the *West-Indies* to the *French*, as an Equivalent for some Concessions to be made in *Nova-Scotia* by the Court of *France* to the *British*.

At present 1751, the *French* with a considerable Military Force, make a Stand on the North Side of *Chiconego* Bay and River in about 45 d. 25 m. The parallel of 45 d. is the Northern Extent of K. *James I.* Grant 1606 to the *North Virginia* Company, this is perhaps the Foundation of the *French* Claim. If the Partition Line with *France* or *Canada* is to be settled at 45 d. North. Lat. continued, it will fall in with *St. Laurence* or *Ontario* River, a little above *Montreal*; including the greatest Part of *Champlain* or *Corlaers* Lake with the formerly *Dutch* Country adjoining. If the South Limits of *Canada* are thus settled, *New-York* West Line will begin at this Termination and pass along *Ontario* River to *Ontario* Lake, along *Ontario* Lake, and its communicating Run of Water to *Lake Erie*; till it meets with *Pensylvania* North Line.

is now in Agitation at *Paris* by *British* and *French* Commissaries.

Unless there be some general, but definitive Articles of Agreement, see Vol. I. P. 13, with the *French*, concerning Boundaries, we ought to have a continued Residence of *Commissionaries* at *Paris* or elsewhere ; if the present Commissaries are so happy as to settle the Boundary Lines, between *Canada* on the *French* Side, and *Nova-Scotia*, *New-England* and *New-York* on the *British* Side, there will still remain further Lines to be settled, of which I can give some Instances, which may occasion great Contention, the Symptoms whereof appear already ; but as these Things at present are in *Embryo*, I shall touch upon them only by way of Annotational Amusement. *

The

* There is a Tract of valuable Land West Southerly from *Pensylvania* : *Pensylvania* in the Grant extends 5 d. W. from *Delaware* River, and takes in a considerable Share of *Lake Erie*, and within which Bounds since the late Peace the *French* have erected a Fortification with a view of claiming that Country, as formerly they built a Fort at *Crown-Point*, to fix a Claim to the Country of *Lake Champlain* ; Our Indian Traders inform us, that below *Lake Erie*, upon the River *Ohio*, called by the *French* *La Belle Riviere*, and the great River *Ouabache* which jointly fall into the Grand River of *Mississippi*, are the most valuable Lands in all *America*, and extend 500 to 600 Miles in a level rich Soil. Luckily for us, the *French*, last War, not being capable of supplying the Indians of those Rivers with Goods sufficient, these *Indians* dealt with our Traders, and a number of them came to *Philadelphia* to treat with the *English* : hitherto they have faithfully observed their new Alliance, these *Indians* are called the *Twachetwaches*, a large Nation, much superior in Numbers to all our *Six Nations*, and independent of them. This gave the Government of *Canada* much uneasiness, that so considerable a Body of *Indians* with their Territory, Trade, and Inlet into the *Mississippi* should be lopt from them ; accordingly the Governor of *Canada* in the Autumn 1750, wrote to the Governors of *New-York* and *Pensylvania*, acquainting them, that our *Indian* Traders had incroached so far on their Territories by trading with their *Indians* ; that if they did not desist, he should be obliged to apprehend them, wherever they should be found within these Bounds ; accordingly in the Spring 1751, some *French* Parties with their *Indians*, seized three of our Traders and confined them in *Montreal* or *Quebeck* : The *Twachetwaches*, our late Allies, revented this, and immediately rendezvoused to the Number of 500 to

The North and South Boundaries in *North-America*; Dominions belonging or claimed by different Sovereignities, and of separate Colonies under the same Sovereign, are best determined by parallels of Latitude which may be supposed invariable; thus the Boundary of *Hudson's-Bay* Company by the Treaty of *Utretcht* is well fixed at 49 d. N. Lat; perhaps that of *Canada* with *Nova Scotia*, *New-England*, and *New-York*, may be settled at 45 d; in *New-England* that of *Massachusetts-Bay* with *New-Hampshire* by the King in Council is fixed at a parallel of about 42 d. 50 m; *Massachusetts-Bay* with *Rhode-Island* and *Connecticut* is in 42 d. 2 m; *New-York* with *Pensylvania* is in 42 d. completed, or the beginning of the 43 d. which is 20 Miles North of *New-York* Station Point with the *Ferries*; *Virginia* with the *Carolinas* as settled, 1739, is in about 36 d. 40 m. Some Colonies are only bounded by Rivers, the River *Powtomack* Bounds *Virginia* from *Maryland*, the River *Savannah* divides *South-Carolina* from *Georgia*.

600 and scoured the Woods till they found three *French* Traders, and delivered them up to the Government of *Pensylvania*. Here the Matter rests and waits for an Accommodation betwixt our Governor and the *French* Governor, as to Exchange of Prisoners; and as to the main Point of the Question, in such Cases the *French* never cede till drubb'd into it by a War, and confirmed by a subsequent Peace. However, it is probable that in a few Years our Settlements, if well attended to, will be carried thither, if with the Protection of the *Indians* of that Nation, they are countenanced by our Governments. With this view the Governor of *Pensylvania* is labouring with the Assembly to have some Place of Strength, Security, or Retreat for our Indian Traders, under the name of a Trading or Truck-House; the *Indians* have given their consent to this Scheme, which they never granted to the *French*; it will be a difficult Matter to persuade a Quaker Assembly into any Thing, where a Military Strength or Security is implied.

We may observe, that some Part of these Indian Lands W. Southerly of *Pensylvania*, to the Quantity of 600,000 Aeres, have a Year or two ago, been granted by the Crown, to a Company of Gentlemen in *Virginia*, free of Quit-Rent for 21 Years; in the Prayer of their Petition, they propose the settling and cultivating the same, as well as to carry on Trade with the *Indians*. The whole of this Affair is now represented at home to the Ministry, by the Governor of *Pensylvania*.

In all Affairs the *French* act the *Hucksters*, at first make great Demands, but afterwards gradually recede. It is said, that as the *French* are now in Possession of *Crown Point* Fort and Settlement near *Lake Champlain* in about 44 d. N. Lat. their first Demand of Boundaries was a parallel of 44 d. Lat. which cuts off from us part of *New-York* and *New Hampshire*, almost the whole of the *Province of Main*, all the good Country upon *Quebebeck* River, all *Sagadahock* or the late Property of Duke of *York*, almost the whole of *Nova-Scotia*, including *Anapolis Royal* in 44 d. 40 m. and *Chebuſto* in 44 d. 10 m. and *Canso*; The *French* Court are since said to have ceded, and proposed to make a Cession of one degree of Latitude; that is, their bounding paralel of Latitude shall be 45 d. as the Grant of K. *James I.* Anno 1606 to the *North-Virginia* Company extended no further; and moreover, that the *French* Governor *Champlain* had taken Possession of the Gulph and River of *St. Laurence* before this, and before the *Dutch* Occupied the *New-York* Settlement. This parallel of 45 d. in favour of the *French* includes all the *Canso* Islands with the Northern Parts of the Bay of *Fundy*; and the good Country upon *St. John's* River; leaving to *Great-Britain* the Peninsula of *Nova-Scotia*; *Crown-Point*, and the greatest Part of the Country upon *Lake Champlain* or the *Dutch Corlaers* Lake; † the Cession of *Nova-Scotia* to *Great-Britain* by the Treaty of *Utretcht*, was understood by the Nation or People of *Great-Britain* to be according to the Extent of the *French* Commission so far as *Cape Rosiers*, to Mr. *Subercasse* their last Governor of *L' Accadie*; but by a parallel of 45 d. in the Meridian of *Cape-Rosiers* in Lat. of 50 d. 30 m. we give up 5 d. 30 m. of Latitude; in the Meridian of *Quebeck* in Lat. 46 d. 55 m. we gave up about 1 d. 55 m. of Latitude; in the Meridian of *Mont-*

† This *Corlaer* was a principal Man amongst the *Dutch* Settlers, and this Lake was called by his Name; the *French* call it *Lake Champlain*, and it generally has obtain'd that Name; *Champlain* was the first Governor of *Canada*.

real, a very small Matter. Thus the *French* explain the loose Treaty of *Utretcht*, to our very great disadvantage, as if they gave the Law and were supreme Judges thereof; *O Tempora!*

The North Boundary of the Province of *New-York*, may be; the South Line of *Canada* when settled; probably it will begin at a Point in a Meridian 20 Miles East of the Crook or great Falls of *Hudson's* River, and running West will cross *Lake Champlain* and terminate in *Cataraqui* River.

Its W. Line runs up *Cataraqui* River and Lake called generally *Lake Ontario*, and terminates on *Lake Erie* in North Lat. 42 d. complet. From *Oswego* upon *Lake Ontario* may be reckoned the Width of the Government of *New-York*, 220 Miles, viz. due W. from the Lake 200 Miles to *Albany* on *Hudson's* River, and from *Albany* 20 Miles due W. to the West Line of *Massachusetts-Bay* Province.

The Southern Line of the Province of *New-York* is in several Directions or Flexures. 1. From *Lake Erie* along the North or Head Line of *Pensylvania* in Lat. 42 to *Delaware* River. 2. Thence 20 Miles down said River to the North divisional Point of *New-York* and *New-Jersies* on said River in Lat. 41 d. 40 m. 3. Thence in a streight Line E. 42 d. S. to 41 d. Lat. on *Hudson's* River. 4. Thence 12 Miles down *Hudson's* River to North End of the Island of *New-York*, then down said *Hudson's* River on the W. Side of *New-York* Island to Sandy Point, the Entrance of *New-York* Road and Harbour about 30 Miles. 5. Thence along the Southern Shore of *Long-Island*, round the E. End of *Long-Island*, including *Fisher's* Island and *Gardner's* Island, which lie near the Entrance of *New-London* Harbour in *Thames* River of *Conneticut* Colony; then along the Northern Shore of *Long-Island* Sound to overagainst the Mouth of *Byram* River, where the Western divisional Line between *New-York* and *Conneticut* begins.

The Eastern Line is from the Mouth of *Byram* River, along

along the *Oblong* as described in the Section of *Connecticut*, Vol. II. P. 161, to the N. W. Corner of *Connecticut* Colony or S. W. Corner of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, about 80 Miles : thence in a parallel with *Hudson's* River at 20 Miles distance E. from *Hudson's* River, along the Western Line of *Massachusetts-Bay*, about 47 Miles to the N. W. Corner of *Massachusetts-Bay*, which is the S. W. Corner of Lands lately annexed, or Crown Lands put under the Jurisdiction of the Province of *New-Hampshire pro tempore* ; thence in a like parallel from *Hudson's* River, about 40 Miles upon the Western Line of *New Hampshire*, to the Latitude of the great Falls or Crook of *Hudson's* River ; thence in a due Meridian Line on the West Line of the Crown Lands, † at present in the Jurisdiction of *New-Hampshire*, to the South Boundary Line of *Canada*, when by much protracted and finally perhaps disadvantageous Negotiations it shall be determined : The Reader may observe, that I have neither Inclination nor Interest to be of any side, other than solicitous for a national Concern.

We may observe, that as the dividing Line between *New-York* and *New-Jerseys* in Duke of *York's* Grant of 1664 to Lord *Barkley*, and Sir *George Carteret* is from the N. Latitude of 41 d. on *Hudson's* River, to the Lat. of 41 d. 40 m. on the Northermost Branch of *Delaware* River ; so that the fixing of the two Latitudes, and running of the Line between them, was all that was required for the settling

† In a late final Settlement of the North Boundary of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* ; if the Administration at home, for the Interest of our Mother Country and its Plantations, had been advised by Gentlemen intelligent in the Affair ; the Lands North of that Line, being Crown Lands, might have been annexed to the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*, though not in Property, yet in Jurisdiction, as are the Lands of *Sagadahock* ; the insignificant impotent small Province of *New-Hampshire* can never be capable of cultivating and defending it against the *Canada French* and their *Indians* ; so large a Tract of Wilderness Lands as this, is, leaving a vast Country uncultivated, or to the Use and Improvement of the *French*.

of that Line: Accordingly 1719, by Acts of the General Assemblies of both Provinces, Commissioners and Surveyors were appointed; after many Observations, the Latitude of 41 d. 40 m. on the Northermost Branch of *Delaware* River was settled, and executed by Indentures under Hands and Seals; and to commemorate the same, these Indentures were recorded at *Perth Amboy* in *New-Jersey*, Lib. D. No. 2. P. 280. &c. and in *New-York* in a Book of Entries beginning *August* 1739, p. 168, &c. then a streight Line was run by the said Commissioners and Surveyors to *Hudson's* River, and the Surveyors made many Observations there, of the Meridian Altitudes of the Sun and proper Stars, to discover the proper Latitude on *Hudson's* River; but the Commissioners never met afterwards to fix that Point; therefore it remains undetermined to this Day, though frequently demanded by the *East-Jersey*.

The Deed of the Equivalent Lands, (see Vol. II. P. 161) called the OBLONG from *Connecticut* to *New-York* in the King's Name, was not sealed or delivered until *May* 14, the Grant of the greatest Part of these Lands to Sir *Joseph Eyles* and Company was next Day after, being the 15th of *May*, and not put upon Record till some Time thereafter. The Controversy between *Eyles* and Company, and *Hauly* and Company concerning the Property of these Lands is still subsisting; the contracted Nature of a Summary does not allow us to insert it at large; only we observe,* that Sir *Joseph Eyles* and Company *March* 10, 1730, 1, presented a Petition to the King in Council for this Land, by the Name of "a certain Tract of Land in your Majesty's Province of *New-York* in *America*, &c." computed at 62,000 Acres; on the same Day it was referred to a Committee of the Privy Council, and 24th of that Month, they refer it to the Lords Commissioners for Trade and Plantations; the

* This I insert in so minute a Manner, by way of Information, how Plantation Affairs are managed at the several Boards in *Great-Britain*.

Lords of Trade made their Report to the Lords of the Committee " We think it for his Majesty's Service to grant to them, their Heirs and Assigns, the Lands they Petition for," &c. and on the 30th *March* 1731, the Lords of the Committee make their Reports to the King in Council, " apprehending that all reasonable Encouragement ought to be given for the settling of Lands in your Majesty's Plantations, do agree with the Opinion of the said Lords Commissioners for Trade, &c. and that it may be advisable for your Majesty to grant to the Petitioners the said Lands in the manner above proposed."

April 8, 1731. The King in Council approves of the Report of the Lords of the Committee, and orders a Grant accordingly, by ordering the Lords Commissioners of his Majesty's Treasury, to prepare a Warrant for passing it, and on the 4th of *May* 1731, The Lord's Commissioners of the Treasury directed the Warrant for the Grant to the Attorney and Solicitor General ; The Grant itself, under the great Seal of *Great-Britain*, is dated *May* 15, 1731 ; after reciting the Words of the Petition " are graciously pleased to gratify the Petitioners of their request: Know ye" &c. †—About the same Time the Governor and Council of *New-York* granted, by virtue of their Royal Instruction for granting of Province Lands, to *Hauly* and Company the same Lands ; which of these Grants shall take Place, is not as yet decided ; it is certain, that the Deed of these Equivalent Lands, from *Connecticut* to his Majesty was not sealed and delivered until *May* 14, 1731, yet at the distance of 1000 Leagues was granted next Day to *Eyles*, &c.

The Extent of the Province Government or Jurisdiction of *New York* is as follows ; from N. to S. that is from *Sandy Hook* in Lat. 40 d. 30 m. to the supposed *Canada* Line in the Parallel of 45 d. Lat. are 313 English Miles ;

† There seems to be some Imposition in the Petition of Sir *Joseph Eyles* and Company, representing these Lands, as productive of Pitch, Tar, other Naval Stores, Mines, and Furrs.

the Extent from West to E. is various. 1. From the E. Southerly Termination of the Boundary Line between the *Jerses* and *New York* in Lat. 41 d. upon *Hudson's* River to *Byram* River, where the Colony of *Connecticut* begins, are 10 Miles. 2. From the W. Northerly Termination of said Boundary Line between *Jersey* and *New-York* on the North Branch of *Delaware* River in Lat. 41 d. 40 m. to *Connecticut* W. Line, including the *Oblong*, are 82 Miles, whereof about 60 Miles from *Delaware* River to *Hudson's* River, and 22 Miles from *Hudson's* River to the present *Connecticut* W. Line, *Oblong* included. 3. From 41 d. 40 m. on *Delaware* River, *New-York* runs 20 Miles higher on *Delaware* River to the parallel of 42 d. Lat. which by *Pensylvania* Royal Grant divides *New York* from the Province of *Pensylvania*; upon this parallel *New-York* is supposed to extend West to *Lake Erie*; and from thence along *Lake Erie*, and along the communicating great Run of Water † from *Lake Erie* to *Lake Ontario* or *Cataraqi*, and along *Lake Cataraqi* and its discharge *Cataraqi* River to the aforesaid *Canada* supposed Line with the *British* Colonies; we shall instance the Breadth of *New-York* Province from *Oswego*; || as being a Medium

† In this Run of Water or communicating River, are the noted great *Niagran* Falls frequently mentioned, and a *French* Pass to keep up the Communication between *Canada* and *Mississippi*, called *Fort Denonville*.

|| *Oswego*, formerly mentioned, is a Fort and *Indian* trading Place in Times of Peace, with a Garrison of 25 Soldiers from the four Independent regular Companies, to prevent any disorders in Trade; this being in the Season a kind of *Indian* Fair: Last *French* War the Garrison consisted of 200 Men of regular Troops and Militia, and the *French* did not find it convenient to molest them. Our Traders with the *Indians* fit out from *Albany*, and pay a certain Duty upon what they vend and buy at *Oswego*; their Rout is; From *Albany* to *Schenectady* Town or Corporation upon *Mohawks* River 16 Miles Land Carriage; thence up *Mohawks* River, in this River is only one short carrying Place at a Fall in that River; from *Mohawks* River a carrying Place of 3 to 5 Miles according to the Seasons, here are convenient *Dutch* Land Carriages to be hired, to a River which falls into the *Oneides* Lake; then from this Lake down *Onondagues* River to *Oswego* trading Place

dium in this Line. *Oswego* Fort and trading Place with many Nations of *Indians* upon the Lake *Ontario*, *Cataraqi* or *Oswego* in Lat. 43 d. 33 m. lies W. North-erly from *Albany* about 200 Miles, and 20 Miles from *Albany* to the West Line of the Province of *Massachu-Setts-Bay*, in all about 220 Miles. *Montreal* lies N. by E. of *Albany* above 200 Miles.

Besides, the main Land Country of *New York*, there are some Islands belonging to it. 1. *Long-Island*, called by the *Indians* *Matowacks*, and by the *Dutch*, *Nassau*, it lies in length from E. to W. about 120 Miles, and at a Me-

Place upon Lake *Ontario*, there is a short fall in *Onondagues* River. Almost the whole of the East Side of *Ontario* Lake lies in the *Onon-dagues* Country. From *Oswego* Fort to *Niagara* Falls or *French* Fort *Denonville* are about 160 Miles, and from *Oswego* Fort 60 Miles to *Fort Frontanac*, also called *Cataraqi* Fort, where the Lake vents by *Cataraqi* River, which with the *Outarwae* River makes *St. Laurence* River called the great River of *Canada*; this Fort *Frontanac* is about 200 Miles down that *Rocky* River to *Montreal*.

By conjecture of the *French Coureurs des Bois* in round Numbers, the Circumferences of the 5 great Lakes or inland Seas of *North-America*, are, *Ontario* 200 Leagues, *Erie* 200 Leagues, *Hurons* 300 Leagues, *Mibagan* 300 Leagues, and the upper Lake 500 Leagues.

As I do not write this, as a rigidly connected Piece, I mention several Things as they occur, but without any considerable Deviation. 1. The *Mohawok* Nation of our allied *New-York* *Indians* live on the South Side of a Branch of *Hudson's* River called *Mohawks* River, but not on the North Side thereof, as is represented in the *French* Maps. 2. The *Oncides* Nation lie about 100 Miles W. from *Albany*, near the head of the *Mohawks* River. 3. The *Onondagues* lie about 130 Miles West from *Albany*. 4. The *Tuscaroras* an adventitious or *Sixth Nation* (in former Times they were called the *five Nations*) live partly with the *Oncides*, and partly with the *Onondagues*. 5. The *Cayugas* about 160 Miles West from *Albany*. 6. The *Senecas* who live upon the Frontiers of *Pensylvania* are about 240 Miles West from *Albany*. A *French* noted Writer *M. de Lisle* calls these *five Nations* by the Name of *Iroquois*.

Formerly the *French* had *Popish* Missionaries with the *Oncides*, *Onon-dagues*, and *Cayugas*, and endeavoured to keep them in their Interest.

There is scarce any *Beaver* in the Country of the *five Nations*: therefore their hunting at a great distance from home, occasions frequent Jarrings with other *Indian Nations*; this Trains them up by Practice, to be better Warriors than the other *Indian Nations*.

dium is about 10 Miles broad ; its East Shore is a sandy Flat, as is all the E. Shore of *North-America* from *Cape-Cod* of *New-England* in N. Lat. 42 d. 10 m. to *Cape-Florida* in about 25 d. N. Lat. upon this Shore of *Long-Island* are very few Inlets, and these very shallow : its North Side is good Water, being a *Sound* between it and the main Land of *Connecticut* ; the widest part of this near *New-Haven* of *Connecticut* does not exceed 8 Leagues. Two thirds of this Island is a barren sandy Soil. The Eastern Parts were settled from *New-England*, and retain their Customs ; The Western Parts were settled by the *Dutch*, where many Families to this Day understand no other Language but the *Dutch*. It is divided into 3 Counties, *Queen's County*, *King's County*, and *Suffolk County*, and pays considerably above one fourth of the Taxes or Charges of the Government of the Province. *Hell Gate*, where is the Confluence or Meeting of the E. and W. Tide in *Long-Island Sound*, is about 12 Miles from the City of *New-York*. 2. *Staten-Island* at its E. end, has a Ferry of three Miles to the W. end of *Long-Island* ; at its W. end is a Ferry of one Mile to *Perth-Amboy* of *East-Jersies*, it is divided from *East-Jersies* by a Creek ; is in length about 12 Miles and about 6 Miles Broad, makes one County, called *Richmond*, which pays scarce one in one and twenty of the Provincial Tax ; it is all in one Parish, but several Congregations, *viz.* an *English*, *Dutch*, and *French* Congregation ; the Inhabitants are mostly *English* ; only one considerable Village, called *Cuckolds Town*. 3. *Nantucket*, *Martha's Vineyard* and *Elizabeth Islands* were formerly under the Jurisdiction of *New-York* ; but upon the *Revolution* they were annexed by the new Charter of *Massachusetts-Bay*, to the Jurisdiction of *Massachusetts-Bay* ; not many Years since, some of the Freeholders of these Islands when occasionally in *New-York*, were arrested for the Arrears of the general Quit-Rents of these Islands. 4. *Manbatans*, the Indian Name, *New-Amsterdam* the *Dutch* Name, or *New-York* the English Name, may be called an Island, though it has a Communication

munication with the main Land, by *King's Bridge*, the whole Island being about 14 Miles long, but very narrow, is all in the Jurisdiction of the City of *New-York*, it lies on the Mouth of *Hudson's River*.

In the Province of *New-York* are four incorporated Towns, who hold Courts within themselves, send Representatives to the General Assembly, or Legislature, with sundry exclusive Privileges. 1. The City of *New-York* and its Territory, formerly established by Col. *Dongan*, sends 4 Representatives. 2. The City of *Albany* probably had their Charter also from Col. *Dongan*, and is nearly the same with that of *New-York*, sends two Representatives. 3. The Borough of *West Chester*; and 4. The Township of *Schenectady*; it seems these two Corporations had their Charters before the *Revolution*, and each of them send one Representative to the General Assembly.

As a Specimen of Town Corporation Charters, in the Plantations, I shall insert an Extract of the Charter of the City of *New-York*; it is the fullest and the most exclusive of any of them. It begins by mentioning or reciting several Grants of Privileges which they have enjoyed by *Patents* and *Charters*. "Whereas the City of *New-York* is an ancient City, and the Citizens anciently a Body Politick with sundry Rights, Privileges, &c. as well by Prescription as by Charters, Letters Patents, Grants and Confirmations, not only of divers Governors and Commanders in chief in the said Province, but also of several Governors, Directors, Generals, and Commanders in chief of the *Nether Dutch* Nation, whilst the same was or has been under their Power and Subjection. That *Thomas Dongan*, Esq; Lieut. Governor of *New-York*, under *K. James II.* August 27, 1686, by a Charter confirmed all their former Grants not repugnant to the Laws of *England* and Province of *New-York*, with some Additions, granting to them all the unappropriated Lands to low Water Mark in *Manhatans* Island, under the yearly Quit-Rent of one Beaver Skin or the value thereof; their Jurisdiction to extend all over the Island, &c." That
this

this Charter was confirmed by a subsequent Charter from Lord Cornbury Governor, April 19. 1708, with some Additions granting to them the Ferries, &c. That as some questioned the validity of their former Charters, because they were in the Governors Name only, and not in the Name of their Kings and Queens, they Petition Governor *Montgomery* for a new Charter, confirming all their former Privileges, with some Additions; granting to them 400 Feet below low Water Mark in *Hudson's* River, &c.

Governor *Montgomery's* Charter by which they now hold, is dated *January* 15, 1730, and afterwards confirmed or corroborated by an Act of the Provincial Assembly or Legislature of *New-York*, and declared to be a publick Act, relating to the whole Colony. The Substance of this Charter is as follows.

They are incorporated by the Name of the Mayor, Alderman and Commonality of the City of New-York.—The City to be divided into seven Wards, viz. West-Ward, South-Ward, Duck-Ward, East-Ward, North-Ward, Montgomery Ward, and the Out-Ward divided into the Bowry Division and Harlem Division.—The Corporation to consist of one Mayor, one Recorder, and seven Aldermen, seven Assistants, one Sheriff, one Coroner, one Common Clerk, one Chamberlane or Treasurer, one high Constable, sixteen Assessors, seven Collectors, sixteen Constables, and one Marshal. The Mayor with Consent of the Governor, may appoint one of the Aldermen his Deputy. The Governor yearly to appoint the Mayor, Sheriff, and Coroner, and the Freeholders and Freemen in their respective Wards to chuse the other Officers, excepting the Chamberlane, who is to be appointed in Council by the Mayor, four or more Aldermen, and four or more Assistants. The Mayor to appoint the high Constable; all Officers to take the proper Oaths, and to continue in Office till others have been chosen in their Rooms; when any Officer dies, the Ward is to chuse another; Upon refusal to serve in Office, the common Council may impose a Fine not exceeding

ing £. 15 for the Use of the Corporation. The Mayor or Recorder, and four or more Aldermen with four or more Assistants to be a common Council to make By-laws, to regulate the Freemen, to lease Lands and Tenements &c, but to do nothing inconsistent with the Laws of Great-Britain or of this Province; Such Laws and Orders not to continue in Force exceeding 12 Months, unless confirmed by the Governor and Council. May punish by disfranchising, or Fines for the Use of the Corporation. The common Council shall decide in all controverted Elections of Officers. The common Council may be called by the Mayor, or in his Absence by the Recorder; Fine of a Member for non attendance not exceeding 20 s. for the Use of the Corporation. The Corporation may establish as many Ferries as they may see fit, and let the same. To hold a Market at five or more different Places every Day of the Week, excepting Sunday; to fix the Assize of Bread, Wine, &c. The Mayor with four or more Aldermen may make Freemen, Fees not to exceed £. 5; none but Freemen shall retail Goods or exercise any Trade, Penalty £. 5; no Aliens to be made Free. To commit common Vagabonds, erect Work-Houses, Goals, and Alms-Houses. The Mayor to appoint the Clerk of the Market, and Water Bailiff; to licence Carmen, Porters, Cryers, Scavengers and the like; to give Licence to Taverns and Retailers of strong Drink for one Year, not exceeding 30 s per Licence; selling without Licence £. 5 current Money toties quoties. The Mayor, Deputy Mayor, Recorder, and Aldermen for the Time being, to be Justices of the Peace. The Mayor, Deputy-Mayor, and Recorder or any one of them, with three or more of the Aldermen shall hold Quarter Sessions, not to sit exceeding four Days. Mayor, Recorder, and Aldermen to be named in all Commissions of Oyer and Terminer, and Goal-Delivery. The Mayor, Deputy Mayor, Recorder or any one of them with three or more of the Aldermen shall and may hold every Tuesday a Court of Record, to try all civil Causes real, personal, or mixt, within the City and County. May adjourn the Mayor's Court to any Time not exceeding 28 Days. The Corporation to have a

common

common Clerk, who shall be also Clerk of the Court of Record, and Sessions of the Peace, to be appointed during his good Behaviour, by the Governor; eight Attorneys in the beginning, but as they drop, only six to be allowed, during their good Behaviour for the Mayor's Court; the Mayor's Court to have the Direction and Cognizance of the Attornies, who upon a vacancy shall recommend one to the Governor for his Approbation. The Mayor, Recorder, or any Alderman, may with or without a Jury determine in Cases not exceeding 40 *l* Value. No Freeman Inhabitant shall be obliged to serve in any Office out of the City. A Grant and Confirmation to all the Inhabitants of their Hereditaments, &c. paying the Quit-Rent reserved by their Grants. The Corporation may purchase and hold any Hereditament, &c. so as the clear yearly Value exceed not *l*. 3,000 Sterl. and the same to dispose of at Pleasure. To pay a Quit-Rent of 30 *l* Proclamation Money per Ann. besides the Beaver Skin, and 5 *l* Current Money in former Charters required. No Action to be allowed against the Corporation for any Matters or Cause whatsoever Prior to this Charter. A Pardon of all Prosecutions, Forfeitures, &c. Prior to this Charter. This Grant or the Inrolement thereof (Record) shall be valid in Law, notwithstanding of Imperfections, the Imperfections may in Time coming be rectified at the Charge of the Corporation.

As I am now to relate the *French* and *Indian* Wars which concern the British Province of *New-York*, with their other Indian Affairs; as also some Account of the Successions of Governors and Governments in the Colony of *New-York*; instead of Summary References, as was proposed, for the Ease of the Reader, I shall use a connected and fluent short Recapitulation, which will point out sundry of our Claims in *North-America*.

French and Indian Wars with other Indian Affairs.

Sabaſtion Cabot, a Subject of England, employed by *K. Henry VII.* to discover a *N. W. Passage* to *China*, *Ann.*

1496, touched at all the considerable Inlets on the Eastern Coast of *North-America* from *Cape-Florida* in N. Lat. 25 d. to N. Lat. 67 and half d. and took a NOMINAL Possession of the whole for the Crown of *England* (see Vol. I. P. 273) but making no Settlements, he made no Title by Occupancy, or Purchase from the *Indians*.

Sir *Walter Raleigh*, a Native of *England*, Anno 1584, with People Settlers, landed at *Roanoak* in the present *North-Carolina*, settled and took Possession for Queen *Elizabeth*, and called all the *North-America* Coast by the Name of *Virginia*, * in honour to the *Virgin Queen Elizabeth*. After sundry small Adventures to *Virginia* in general, April 10, 1606 two Companies were incorporated in one Letter Patent by K. *James I.* called the *South* and *North Virginia* Companies. The *South-Virginia* Company began a Settlement in *Chesapeak-Bay* 1607; the *North Virginia* Company carried on (but in separate Adventures) some small Trade in Fish and Fur, but made no Settlement with Continuance till 1620 † they began to settle *Plymouth* in *New England*; being late in the Season, the Weather obliged the designed Settlers to put up with the first Land or Harbours, accordingly they landed in *Plymouth Bay* of *Massachusetts*, and have continued there ever since.

Capt. *Henry Hudson* ‡ in some *Dutch* Company's Ser-

* Some pedantick Criticks, in imitation of some Annotators upon the *Greek* and *Roman* Classics, imagine that he meant a young *Virgin* Country, never before occupied by the *Europeans*.

† The designed Settlers had made a sort of Contract with the Council of *Plymouth* or *North Virginia* Company, for a Territory upon *Hudson's River*: This Evinces that in these Times, the *Dutch* or any other *European* Nation by prior Discovery, Occupancy, Prescription, or any other Claim, had no equitable Right to that Country.

‡ This *Hudson* was a great Enthusiastick projector of N. E. and N. W. Passages, and gave Name to *Hudson's Bay*, and to *Hudson's River* of *New York*; he perished in one of his Passage Adventures, being never heard of more.

It is said by the *French*, that *Canada* was first settled by the *French* under *Champlain* their first Governor 1603, being five Years before *Hudson* took Possession of *New Netherlands* for the *Dutch*.

vice, but an English Man, Anno 1708, came to the Mouth of *Hudson's River* (as it is since called) though in the limits of both said Corporations or Companies, and without Licence from the King of *England* purchased (as it is said) of the Indians that certain Territory, and disposed of his Rights to the *Dutch West India* Company, or rather to some Merchants of *Amsterdam*; and the *Dutch* made some imperfect irregular Settlements there. Sir *Samuel Argol* Governor for the *South-Virginia* Company 1618 drove the *Dutch* from their usurped Settlement: However, the *Dutch* obtained 1620 of that Pacifick easy Prince *K. James I.* leave to make a small Settlement there, for wooding and watering of their *Brazil* Fleets, and 1623 the *Dutch* made a regular Colony of it, and their Commander in Chief was called Director General of *New-Netherlands*.

Carr, Sea Commander, and *Nichols* Land Commander arrived before *New Amsterdam* since called *New York*, with an armed Force August 20, 1664, and summoned the *Dutch* Governor to surrender, accordingly 27th following, Articles were agreed upon, *New-Netherlands* was surrendred to *England*, and Col. *Richard Nichols* was appointed Lieut. Governor by the Duke of *York*, who had obtain'd a previous Grant thereof from his Brother *K. Charles II.* *New-Netherlands* was confirmed to *England* by the Treaty of *Breda* 1667: But as *England*, March 17, 1671,² proclaimed War against the *Dutch*, the *Dutch* easily reconquered it from the *Engliss* 1673, Col. *Lovelace* Governor; but afterwards by the Treaty of *London* 1673,⁴ the *Dutch* made an absolute Cession thereof to *England*; and in consequence thereof as *New-Netherlands* had been conquered since the first Grant, to prevent difficulties in Titles, *K. Charles II.* made a second Grant June 29, 1674 to his Brother the Duke of *York* with the Right of Government to him, his Heirs and Assigns. I shall not anticipate what Matters of this Grant belong to the Sections of the *Fersies* and *Pensylvania*. Governor *Andros* by Letters of October 31, 1674 acquaints the neigh-

neighbouring Governors, that he had received Possession of *New-York* &c. No Act of Government appears upon Record from *July 19, 1673* to *November 6, 1674*; then were published the second Royal Letters Patents to the Duke of *York* of *New-York* and the *Ferfies*, dated *June 29, 1674*.

The Dutch Interlopers at their first Arrival in this Country 1608, entred into Alliance with the *Five Nations* called by the *French Iroquois*, it continued without Interruption, and remains to this Day a firm Alliance with the *English* || who succeeded the *Dutch* in the European Jurisdiction of these Countries.

These five Tribes of *Indians* are called Nations, though properly all of one Nation, they are distinguished by the Names of *Mohawks, Oneides, Onondagues, Cayugas* and *Senecas*. In the *North-Carolina* War with the *Tuscaroras* Indians 1711, many of these *Tuscaroras* were obliged to fly their Country, and settled with the *Onondagues* and *Cayugas*, and are now called the *Sixth Nation*. The several small Villages of *Sesquabanna* and *Delaware River Indians*, are under the Protection of the *Senecas*; the *Senecas* are by far the largest of the *Six Nations*, and lie upon the Frontiers of *Pensylvania*. Several of the *Ranagadoes* of the five Nations have settled above *Montreal*, and are called *Cobunagos* or praying *Indians*.

Why do we not send Military Officers amongst the *Indians* to instruct them in the European Arts of War. The *French* with good Success follow this Practice. Some say that the Officers of the four independent Companies of *Fusiliers** in *New-York* live like Military Monks in Idleness and Luxury.

The *French* use an Argument with the *Indians* to be of their Side, *viz.* that they do not covet their Lands, as the *English* do.

|| The Reader may excuse my frequent inadvertent Impropriety of Writing in Times since the Union *English* instead of *British*, it is the common Speech Expression, but very improper.

* *Fusiliers* are so called, because they are supposed to be armed with light Musquets called *Fusees*.

During K. *William's* War, the Inhabitants of *Canada*, liv'd in continual Fears of these *five Indian Nations*, their Seed Time and Harvest were much neglected. *Canada* is a Tyrannical Government and barren Soil. Their Lands scarce produce sufficient for the sustenance of the Inhabitants.

We may observe, that amongst the abovesaid *Six Indian Nations* or Tribes, the *Onondagues* resemble that Canton, where the Deputies of the several *Swiss* Cantons meet upon Affairs of great Concern. The *Onondagues*, *Oneidas*, and *Coyugas* have frequently been in the *French* Interest, by the Management of the *French* Missionary Priests. Our Missionary Priests, instead of this laborious, but vastly useful publick Duty; are indulged in a sort of *sine Cures*, in our most opulent and well provided Settlements; they labour only in confounding the sober and industrious well meaning Presbyterians, Congregationalists, &c. to the great detriment of the publick Good; a new Regulation amongst our Missionaries is much wanted.

1665, Sept. *Coursal* arrived Governor of *Canada*; next Spring with 28 Companies of regular Troops, and all the marching Possé of *Canada* that could be spared, marched perhaps 250 Leagues into the Country of the *Five Nations*, they did little or no Execution; and 1667 a Peace was concluded between the *French* and their *Indians*, and the Province of *New-York* with their *five Nations* of *Indians*: This Peace continued till 1683.

1684, *De la Barre* Governor of *Canada*, with all the Possé of *Canada*, marched and rendezvoused at *Cataraqui* Fort, † while at the same Time he was only amusing the
the

† It is now called Fort *Frontenac*, being built by Count *de Frontenac* Governor of *Canada*, on *Cataraqui* Lake, near the Mouth of *Cataraqui* River, which runs to *Montreal*, and with the *Ouatawaes* River forms the great River of *Canada* called the River of *St. Laurence*.

M. de la Salle upon *Cataraqui* Lake built a Bark of 60 Tuns, but the neighbouring *Indians* in Jealousy soon burnt her.

the Government of *New-York*, with some trifling Complaints against the *Five Indian Nations*, to lull them asleep. 1684, in *July*, Lord *Howard of Effingham*, Governor of *Virginia*, and Col. *Dongan* Lieut. Governor of *New-York*, had an interview with the *five Indian Nations* at *New-York*.

1685. Marquis de *Nonville*, who succeeded the Governor General *de la Barre*, with 1500 Men, regular Troops, *Canada* Militia, and *Indians*, rendezvoused at Fort *Frontenac* or *Cataraqui*, designed against the *five Indian Nations*; they did no Execution.

1687, Governor General *Nonville* with 1500 *French* and *Indians* insulted the *Seneca* Nation. In return for this the *five Iroquois Nations* to the Number of 1200 Men *July* 26 1688, invaded the Island of *Montreat*; the Governor General with his Court, were there at that Time; they ravaged the Country, killed many People, and carried off Captives, the *Mohawks*, lost only three Men; the *French* abandoned their Fort upon *Cataraqui* Lake, and left 26 Barrels of Gun-Powder.

In *February* 1689,90, The *French*, consisting of 500 *Coueurs des Bois* (in *New-England* they are called *Swampiers*,) with as many *Indians* or *Savages*, made incurfions upon the Province of *New-York*, they burnt *Corlaer's* Village called *Scheneclady*, and murdered 63 Persons.

In the Memory of Man the *Mohawks* never received such a Blow as in the Winter 1692,3; Col. *Fletcher* with 300 *Voluntiers* marched to *Albany*, and the *French* with their *Indians* returned home.

1696, The *French* with a large Force made an incurfion upon the *New-York Indians*, with a design to destroy the Settlements of *Albany* and *Scheneclady*, but were repulſed by Governor *Fletcher*.

During Queen *Anne's* War, the *five Indian Nations*

For the *Indian Nations* where the *English* and *French* have particular Concerns, ſee Vol. I. P. 179.

For the *Iroquois* or *ſix Nations* of *Mohawk Indians*, ſee Vol. I. P. 185, they may conſiſt of about 1500 marching Men.

had a Neutrality with the *Canada French* and their *Indians*, and by this Means the Province of *New-York* carried on a continued advantageous Trade with *Canada*.

New-York had no Concern in the *New-England Indian War* 1722 to 1725.

The *French* had lately erected a Fort at *Crown-Point* near the *Lake Champlain* upon the Frontiers of *New-York* Government; during the late *French War* from 1744 to 1747 inclusive, *Crown Point* was the rendezvous of the *Canada French* and their *Indians*, consequently their Onsets were mostly upon the Province of *New-York* and the N. W. Corner of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*: 1745 from *Crown-Point* they destroyed *Saratoga* Settlement, about 30 Miles above *Albany*. The *New-York* Frontier Places where Militia were posted, are *Schenectady*, *Albany*, and *Kinderhook*. Anno 1745, 1746, and 1747, the *French* and their *Indians*, above *Albany*, killed and captivated above 320 of our People.

Toward that chargeable Amusement, called the intended Expedition against *Canada* of 1746, *New-York* Province contributed 15 Companies of 100 Men per Company; the £ 6 *New-York* Currency in levy Money, and victualling for 16 or 17 Months was a considerable Load.

The four independant regular Companies of 100 Men each, stationed at *New-York* many Years, are an Advantage to the Country; they draw from *Great-Britain*, about £. 7,500 Sterl. per Ann.

Succession of Governors in the Province of New-York.

I shall not enumerate the Commanders in Chief, during the Possession and Jurisdiction of the *Dutch*, they were stiled variously, viz. Directors, Generals, Governors, &c. The present Stile of the *British* Governor, is, *Captain General, and Governor in chief in and over the Province or Colony of New-York, and Territories thereon depending, and Vice Admiral of the same*. Before the Revolution the Commanders in Chief, had only the Title of Lieutenant Governor under the Duke of *York* as

he was principal Governor by Patent. Upon K. James II, Abdication, the Property and Government of the Colony of *New-York* and the Territory of *Sagadahock* in *New-England*, reverted to the Crown.

The first *English* Governor was Col. *Richard Nichols*, his Commission bore date *April 2, 1664*, he was Commander of the Land Forces in the Reduction of *New-Netherlands*, and one of the Commissioners for settling the Boundaries of our Colonies in *North-America*. He continued Governor to 1683, and was succeeded by

Sir Edmond Andros, * he was Governor only for a short Time; and was removed to the Government of *New-England*, the several Charter Colonies of *New-England* having from the iniquity of the Times, either by a Course in Law had their Charters taken from them, or tacitly dropt; he arrived in *Boston* in *December 1686* with Lieut. Governor *Nicholson* and two Independent Companies of Soldiers. See Vol. I. P. 413. In *April 1689*, by a Revolution in *New-England*, in Consequence of the General Revolution at home, he was disqualified and went home; excepting his Bigotry † to Popery and the arbitrary Power of his Prince, he was a good moral Man. He was appointed Governor of *Virginia* 1692; he died in *London 1714*, of a good old Age.

Andros was succeeded by Col. *Dongan* 1684; He was a *Roman Catholick*, but much of a Gentleman and Patriot,

* *Sir Edmond Andros* 1672 had some Command in *New-York*, and after him Col. *Lovelace*.

† The *Roman Catholick* Religion or Popery seems to be requisite where an arbitrary Power in the King and his Ministry are endeavoured after. An *Enthusiastick* implicit Faith as to Religion in the *Pope* and his Clergy, as in a political Way, a natural Introduction of a passive Obedience in Civil Affairs, to the King and his Ministry; and perhaps in all Politias, an *Enthusiastick* (Man is an *Enthusiastick* Animal) superstitious deference for the Clergy is a *sine qua non* in Civil Government; therefore the Clergy ought to be sacred, and not ridiculed by the inconsiderate Wits of the Age; the famous *Dr. Swift* is here much to be faulted, his *Fort* was in this sort of Ridicule. The Devotion we pay to the Clergy introduces a proper submission to Civil Authority; and it is the Clergy's Business to labour this Point.

he was irreconcilable to a *French* Interest; upon the *Revolution*, being Papist, he was in Consequence dismissed from his Government; but as a Reward for his Merits, he was created Earl of *Limerick*. He made several Grants of Lands in *Sagadahock*, the Duke of *York's* Property, at present under the Jurisdiction of the Province of *Massachusetts Bay*; these Grants in Time, when Claims are to be settled, may occasion much Confusion.

Upon the *Revolution*, Col. *Benjamin Fletcher* was appointed, he came over 1692 with some regular Troops, and was very industrious in repulsing the *Canada French* and their *Indians*. In his Time 1696, the Church of *England* in *New-York* (called *Trinity Church*) was built; it is the only Church of *England* upon the Island.

After this Col. *Leslie* usurped the Government (as his *Partisans* said, for a publick Good) for which he and his Friend *Milburn* suffered as Traitors, having held out for some Time the Fort against Col. *Slaughter*, who was appointed Governor by the King, and upon this kind of *Interregnum*, succeeded *Slaughter*, he died soon in *New-York*.

Col. *Dudley*, as President, succeeded in the chief Command of the Province; he was afterwards Governor of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* for many Years, see Vol. I. P. 478. He was a cunning Man, and some say, a notorious Time-server.

Lord *Bellomont* was appointed Governor 1697; in his very late Passage to his Government of *New-York*, the Ship by Strefs of Weather was obliged to bear away to *Barbadoes*, and did not arrive in *New-York* till May 1698. He was at the same Time Governor of *New-York*, *Massachusetts-Bay* and *New-Hampshire*: He did not proceed to *Boston* till June 1699, and after obtaining a generous Allowance of £. 1000 and a Gratuity of £. 500 from the Assembly, he returned to *New-York*. In *New-York* he was allowed £. 1500 Currency yearly Sallary, and the Lieut. Governor Capt. *Nanfon* was allowed £. 500; Lord *Bellomont* died in *New-York*, February 1700, 1. Lord

Lord *Cornbury*, Son to the Earl of *Clarendon*, succeeded, he arrived in *New-York* 1701 : Upon the Proprietors of the *Jersies* resigning the Government into the Hands of Queen *Anne*, he was likewise 1702 appointed Governor of the *Jersies*. Earl of *Clarendon*, formerly Lord *Cornbury* went home by way of *Virginia*, and was succeeded by

Lord *Lovelace* ; he arrived *November* 13, 1708, and died in *May* 1709.

1710, *April*. Col. *Ingolsby*, Capt. of one of the Independent Companies, by a Letter from the Queen to the Council of *New-York*, was dismissed from being Lieut. Governor of *New-York* and *Jersies*.

1710, *June* 14, Arrives Col. *Robert Hunter* with 2700 *Palatines* to settle in the Province of *New-York* ; these *Palatines* were allowed only 10 Acres of Land to one Family, therefore they generally removed to *Pensylvania*, where they had better Encouragement. 1707, Col. *Hunter* had been appointed Lieut. Governor of *Virginia*, but was taken by the *French* in his Voyage thither. From *New-York* he went for *England* 1719. † Upon K. *George* II. Accession, he was continued Governor of *New-York* and the *Jersies*. Upon Account of his health, he obtained the Government of *Jamaica*, he arrived in *Jamaica*, *February* 1727, 8 ; by this Advice of his Physicians he certainly obtain'd a Reprieve of his Life for some Years.

Col. *Hunter* was succeeded in the Government of *New-York* by *William Burnet* Esq; a worthy Son of the celebrated Bishop *Burnet* ; || he arrived in *Autumn* 1721.

Upon the Accession of K. *George* II. Col. *Montgomery*, a Favourite, was appointed Governor of *New-York*, and Mr. *Burnet* was removed to the Government of *Massachusetts-Bay* commonly called *New-England*, where he died *Sept.* 7, 1729. Governor *Montgomery* arrived in *New-York*, *April* 28, 1728, and died there *July* 1, 1731.

† His Wife, Lady *Hay* died *August* 1716.

|| See Vol. I. P. 480.

In *January 1731, 2*, Col. *Cosby* was appointed Governor of *New York* and the *Ferries*: after a few Years he died in *New York*.

August 1736, *George Clarke*, Esq; Lieut. Governor of *New-York* succeeded in the Administration, and continued some Years.

George Clinton Esq; * Uncle to the Earl of *Lincoln*, was appointed Governor of *New York* in *May 1741*, he did not arrive in his Government until *September 21, 1743*; he continues Governor at this present Writing, *July 1751*.

Concerning the Legislature and Laws of New-York.

It is a Fundamental in the *British* Constitution both at home and abroad, in all the Plantations, to make no Laws, nor to raise any Money without the Consent of the People.

The Legislature of the Colony of *New York* consists of three Negatives.

1. The Governor or Commander in Chief for the Time being.

2. The Council; their Compliment is twelve in Number, appointed by the King; when by Death or other Circumstances they fall short of a certain Number, the Governor may *pro tempore* fill them up to that Number.

3. The 27 Representatives of the People elected by themselves; they are all County Representatives, excepting the Representatives of four Towns, and of three great Mannors, viz.

		For the County of	
<i>Richmond</i>	2	<i>New-York</i> County and City	4
<i>Kings</i>	2	<i>Albany</i> City	2
<i>Queens</i>	2	<i>West-Chester</i> Borough	1
<i>Suffolk</i>	2	<i>Scheneclady</i> Town	1
<i>W-Chester</i>	2	<i>Mannor of Ranslaer</i>	1
<i>Orange</i>	2	<i>Livingston</i>	1
<i>Ulster</i>	2	<i>Courtland</i>	1
<i>Albany</i>	2		

* The Hon. *George Clinton* Esq; is at present Admiral of the White.

In each of our Colonies there are some fundamental Constitutions which may be reckoned as invariable. 1. In the Charter Governments, their Charters are their Direction. 2. In the Proprietary Governments of *Maryland*, *Jerfies*, † and *Pensylvania*, there are the Proprietors original Concessions to the People, not to be varied, but under certain Restrictions; for Instance, in *Pensylvania*, no Article in the Law of Mr. *Penn*'s Concessions can be altered without the Consent of six in seven of the Assembly Men or Representatives. 3. In the Royal or Crown Governments, the Governor's Commission with the Instructions, are the *Magna Charta* of the Colony during that Commission; moreover, some of the Assemblies in King's Government at their first Congress or Formation, make fundamental Laws for themselves; I shall for Instance, adduce that of *New-York*. Amongst our Colonies we have very considerable Variations in their Constitutions. In *Pensylvania* there are only two Negatives in the Legislature, the Council having no Negative. In *Virginia* no Bill can originate with the Council. In some Colonies the Governor and Council are the supreme Court of Judicature; in others they are no Court of Judicature.

The *New York* printed Law-Book begins *April 1691* with a *Magna Charta* or fundamental Constitution, viz. That the Kings of *England* only, are invested with the Right to rule this Colony; and that none can exercise any Authority over this Province, but by his immediate Authority under his broad Seal of the Realm of *England*. That the supreme Legislative Power and Authority (under the King) shall be in the Governor, Council, and Representatives of the People in General Assembly; the Exercise and Administration of the Government shall be in the Governor and Council, with the Consent of at least five of the Council; to govern according to the Laws of the

† *Jerfies* ever since 1702 is become a King's Government, but they still observe the Concessions of the Proprietors called their Law of Concessions.

Province, or in defect of them, by the Laws of *England*. Upon the Death or Absence of a Governor, the first in Nominations of the Council to preside. That every Year there be held an Assembly, and every Freeholder of 40 *per Ann*, and Freeman of a Corporation shall have a Vote in chusing Representatives ; here the Representatives are enumerated, and as many more as his Majesty shall think fit to establish. That the Representatives during their Sessions, may adjourn themselves and purge their own House ; no Member going, coming, and during the Sessions, to be arrested or sued, except for Felony and Treason. Their Laws to continue in Force till disallowed by his Majesty, or till they expire. That every Man shall be judged by his Peers, and all Tryals shall be by the Verdict of 12 Men of the Neighbourhood ; that in all Capital and other Criminal Cases there be a Grand Inquest to present the Offender, and afterwards 12 Men to try the Offender : That in all Cases Bail by sufficient Sureties be allowed, unless in Case of Treason, and of such Felonies as are restrained from Bail by the Laws of *England*. That no Tax or Imposition be laid but by the General Assembly. That no Freeman, Tavern-keepers excepted, be compelled to entertain any Soldier or Mariner, unless in Times of actual War with the Province.—That all Lands in this Province be accounted as Freehold and Inheritance in free and common Soccage, according to the Tenure of *East Greenwich* in *England*. That all Wills attested by three or more Witnesses, and registred with the Office of the County in a set Time, be a sufficient Conveyance for Lands, &c. That any Christian Religion not disturbing the Peace of the Province, be freely allowed of, the Roman Catholick excepted, † The enacting Stile is, *By the Governor, Council, and General Assembly of the Province of New-York*.

A Summary cannot enumerate many of their municipal

† In *Pensylvania* and *Maryland*, by the Royal Patents, by the Proprietors Concessions, and by the subsequent Provincial Laws, *Roman Catholicks* are not excepted.

Laws. The Justices of each County shall yearly summon all the Freeholders in *January* to chuse two Church Wardens and 10 Vestry Men to assess, and the *Minister to be called*, chosen and appointed by the Wardens and Vestry. Elections for Representatives to be in the Sheriff's Court of the County or City, Qualification for a Voter 40 *s* at least Freehold *per Annum* improved Land, no Person to be chosen but who resides in the Places. *An. 1700* there was an Act to prevent all vexatious Suits or Actions against those who at the happy *Revolution* in *England*, did here begin such another *Revolution*; they appointed Capt. *Jacob Leysler* their Commander in chief till his Majesty K. *William's* Pleasure should be known; and did seize the Persons and Goods of several disaffected People. In each County or Town, at the Sessions of the Peace, the Justices of the Peace, or at least five of them, whereof two of the Quorum, shall appoint the Rate for their County, as also a Treasurer and Collector. All Men from 16 to 60 *Æt.* to be listed in some Company of Militia; each Foot Man to have a Cartouch Box and six Charges, the Horse 12 Charges; at their Habitation to keep one Pound Powder, three Pound Bullets each Foot; and two Pound Powder, and six Pound Bullets each Horse.

In the Province of *New-York*, to obtain a good Title to vacant Lands, first there must be produced an Indian Deed, which must be approved of by the Governor and Council; by Warrant it is surveyed by the Provincial Surveyor, and patented by the Governor and Council: The Fees are very high.

The Quit-Rents for Lands lately taken up are 2 *s* Proclamation Money per 100 Acres. Two thirds of the Government pay small or no Quit-Rents, especially for old Grants, the larger Grants on *Hudson's* River called Mannors; their Quit-Rents are only a Pepper-Corn, Buckskin or the like, when demanded.

The Valuations of the several Counties may be taken from

from the Quotas allowed each of them, in Proportion to their respective Taxes, when Paper Money was emitted upon Loan; for Instance 1738, they emitted £. 40,000 Currency upon Loan, whereof

To <i>New-York City and County</i>	£. 10,000
<i>Albany City and County</i>	5,000
<i>Queens County</i>	6,000
<i>Kings County</i>	2,400
<i>Suffolk County</i>	3,000
<i>Richmond County</i>	1,600
<i>Ulster County</i>	4,000
<i>Orange County</i>	2,000
<i>Dutchess County</i>	2,000
<i>West-Chester</i>	4,000

£. 40,000

As to their Paper Currencies they are referred with other Things of that Nature to the Appendix. At present I shall only observe, that towards the Charge of an intended Expedition against *Canada* 1709, they emitted £. 13,000 publick Bills of Credit at 8 *s* Currency per oz. Silver, bearing Interest; in the after Emissions, no Interest was allowed, the Contrivers of this fraudulent Paper Money Currency, perceived that a reasonable Interest would prevent its Depreciation and obstruct the Advantages which they proposed from its Depreciation. || They plausibly and fallaciously alledged, that the allowing of Interest, occasioned their being hoarded up as common Bonds bearing Interest, and did not serve as a

|| This was the Case in the enormous multiplied Emissions of Paper Credit or Money, as it was called, in a neighbouring Province; as the Governor happened himself to be of the Debtor side of the Question, and for valuable Considerations, as it is said, instead of borrowing the Money already emitted, from the Merchants at a reasonable Interest which they generously offered, and which would have prevented further depreciating Emissions; he chose rather, though with the Consequence of involving the Country in Confusion and Ruin, in Favour of the Land Bank (an assumed Name) and other fraudulent Debtors, to depreciate the Debts by vast multiplied Emissions bearing no Interest.

common

common Currency. In answer to this, the Anti-depreciators may observe, 1. that any considerate good Man will allow, that Money not payable or cancellable till after some Years, if only upon Note bearing no Interest, is not so valuable as the same Sum of Money upon Bond bearing Interest, payable after the same Number of Years; that is, these Bills upon Note only, in the Nature of Things must admit a Depreciation or Discount, and still a greater Discount if these Notes stretch too much their Credit: This is the genuine mercantile Nature of our depreciating Plantation Paper Currency. 2. In the beginning they were not emitted as a Tender in Law, or common Currency; but as Government Bonds or Debentures bearing Interest as are the transferable Stocks of publick Debts in *Great-Britain*, which by Reason of the Interest allowed, do increase to a valuable Premium upon a transfer, and can not depreciate as the Plantation publick Notes of Credit have done.

As the Plantations are at a vast distance from Parliamentary Enquiry, some of our Colonies have from Time to Time been loaded with amusing feint Expeditions, the original and continuing Causes of the Plantation fraudulent Paper Credit called Paper Currency; the fraudulent Debtors finding their Advantage in Depreciations, contrived sundry Methods of further Paper Credit Emisions: thus in *Massachusetts-Bay* in the Course of some Years in the Administration of Governor *Sh*—, one Shilling was depreciated to the value of one Penny Sterling. *New-York* did restrain itself from running much into a multiplied depreciating Paper Currency, so that their Exchange with *London* never did exceed £. 190 *New-York* Currency for £. 100 Sterl. N. B. When I any where mention Exchange, I mean private punctual Bills of Exchange; Government Bills admit of a dilatory Payment, and are bought cheaper; for Instance, upon the *Cuba* or *Spanish West-India* Expedition, Government Bills were sold in *New-York* and *East-Jersey* at 140 to 150; in *West-Jersey* and *Pensylvania* at 130 to 135; when

when at the same Time private punctual Bills were sold at 190 in the first, and at 180 in the other Places.

The Militia of the Province of *New-York*, are nearly upon the same Regulation with the Militia of *New-England*; besides there are four regular independent Companies of *Fusiliers*, 100 private Men to a Company; their Pay, Cloathing, and Accoutrements from *Great-Britain* amount yearly to upwards of £. 7,800 Sterl. they are under the immediate Direction of the Commander in Chief for the Time, and are a considerable Perquisite: they are principally stationed at the City of *New-York*, *Albany*, and *Oswego*; *New-York* was so called from the Duke of *York's* English Title, and *Albany* (formerly *Orange Fort*, by the *Dutch*) by his *Scot's* Title; the Battery at *New York* is called *Fort George*.

Besides the 5 or 6 Nations of *Iroquois* or *Mohawk Indians*, there are several small Parcels of *Indians*, upon the upper Parts of *Hudson's* River, called *River Indians* or *Mobegins*, this was the Indian Name of the great River, now called *Hudson's* River.

At sundry Times in the City of *New York* there have been Negro Conspiracies, more than in the other Colonies; this I can not account for; *April* 1712, a Negro Conspiracy kills many white Men, and sets the Town on Fire.

Courts of Judicature are much the same as in *New-England*. † The Judges of the Superior or Supreme Court are appointed by the King in Council, and sometimes *pro tempore* by the Governor; they are called first, second, &c. Judges: the first Judge is called chief Justice, and seems to have a considerable Authority or Influence above the other Judges: The present chief Justice is *James Delancy* Esq; of a regular liberal Education,

† This Summary if not checkt, is like to become too bulky, therefore I shall avoid Repetition of Things which bear a Semblance to Things already said.

and good Estate ; he was appointed by Governor *Cosby* 1733 in Place of *Lewis Morris* Esq; who succeeded an eminent Lawyer *Roger Mompesson* Esq; chief Justice of *New-York* and the *Jersies*, who surrendered that of the *Jersies* 1709.

Here is a Court of Chancery, a Court not known in *New-England*, the Governor is Chancellor. In many of our Colonies it renders the Courts below of less Authority ; as it is very chargeable and may be arbitrary, the Chancellor ought to be a distinct Person from the Governor (as are the Intendants of the *French* Colonies) and upon Misdemeanor, liable to the Governor's Inspection by Suspension, or the like.

The General Assembly is no Court of Judicature, but they examine into the erroneous Proceedings of the Courts of Judicature, and grant Rehearings.

Concerning New-York Produce, Manufactures, Trade, and Navigation.

Wheat and Flower are the most considerable Articles of their Produce and Manufactures ; see their exports of Provisions, in the Clauses of Custom-House Entries and Clearances.

Skins and Furs are a good Article, but not so large as formerly.

The Article of Iron in Pigs and Bars is a growing Affair.

Schuyler's Copper Ore is from a Mine in *Jersies*, but exported from *New-York*, therefore it is mentioned in this Section. In the beginning of its Discovery it seemed to be very rich: it appears that it was formerly wrought by the *Dutch*, because in new working of it, were found Hammers, Wedges &c. it sold in *Bristol* the Ore at £. 40 Sterl. per Tun. The Cartage to *Hudson's* River is short, and their first Agreement with the Miner, was to allow him one third of the Ore for raising and laying it above Ground ; it was done up in quarter Barrels, whereof six made a Tun. The richness of this Copper

Mine made so much Noise in the World, that a few Years since, to engross this Ore for the benefit of *Great-Britain*, it was by Act of Parliament enumerated; but lately it has not been Wrought and Exported, as appears by the quarterly Accounts of the Custom-House of *New-York*; I can not account for this.

By a late Act of Parliament, Salt may be imported directly from any Parts of *Europe* to *New-York*.

In Queen *Anne's* Reign there were three Government Packet Boats, which alternately sailed Monthly between *England* and *New-York*, to tarry 14 Days at *New-York*, for the Plantations or Colonies Benefit of Trade, and for Government Dispatches; these have been laid aside many Years.

Governor *Burnet* (his Head was well turned) obtain'd an Act of Assembly 1727, afterwards confirmed by the King in Council, prohibiting all Trade with *Canada*, that the *French* might not be supplied with Goods (in one Year 900 Pieces of Strouds have been carried from *Albany* to *Montreal*) suitable for promoting a *French* Civil as well as trading Interest with the *Indians*, and that the *Indians* may be induced to go a Trading to *Oswego*, † a late well projected and well executed English Mart for Indian Trade; Governor *Burnet* always and effectually minded the Business of his Destination. The Indian Trade is now in the Hands of many, before Governor *Burnet's* Time it was engrossed by a few, and the *Indians* are become more dependent upon the *English* than formerly. From *Albany* to *Oswego*, is a much easier Conveyance, than from *Montreal* 200 Miles up a rapid stony River to Fort *Frontenac* on Lake *Ontario*, called also *Oswego*.

In the Province of *New-York* there is one Collection or Custom-House District, kept in the Port of *New-*

† The Carriage or Communication between *Albany* and *Oswego* is so commodious, that at a Time in relieving the Garrison of *Oswego*, 40 People came in one Birch Canoe, 45 Feet in Length, 7 Feet Breadth, from *Oswego* to *Schenectady* 185 Miles, carrying Places included.

York ; the 12 Months Accounts from *September 29, 1749* to *September 29, 1750*, stand thus,

<i>Entred Inwards</i>		<i>Cleared Outwards</i>	
<i>Ships</i>	23	<i>Ships</i>	36
<i>Snows</i>	22	<i>Snows</i>	28
<i>Brigantines</i>	45	<i>Brigantines</i>	58
<i>Sloops</i>	131	<i>Sloops</i>	150
<i>Scooners</i>	11	<i>Scooners</i>	14
<hr/>		<hr/>	
232		286	

Here are included all Vessels both on foreign Voyages, and on coasting Voyages of the neighbouring Colonies ; whereas in the Collections of *New-England* the foreign Voyages are only to be understood ; for Instance, *Boston* Custom-House from *Christmas 1747* to *Christmas 1748*, foreign Vessels Cleared out 540, Entred in 430 ; the Fishing and Coasting Vessels of the adjoining Colonies of *Massachusetts-Bay*, *New-Hampshire*, *Connecticut*, and *Rhode-Island*, amounted to about as many, and are not included.

N. B. No Cæpper Ore was exported in these 12 Months.

Entred in from *Great-Britain* and *Ireland* 16 Vessels ; Cleared out for *Great-Britain* and *Ireland* 21 Vessels. Cleared out for *Holland* 5 Vessels.

Cleared out 6,731 Tun Provisions, chiefly Flower : besides Grain estimated or shipt by Number of Bushels, and not by Tuns.

Imported about 800 Pipes *Madera* Wines, whereof re-exported 226 Pipes. The *Madera* Wines shipt to *New-York* are reckoned better than what are shipt to any other of our Colonies, therefore some are re-shipt to the other Colonies.

Cleared out, Tar 2008 Barrels, Pitch 156, Turpentine 20, which were Imported to *New-York* from the *Carolinas*. The Colony of *New-York* does not produce Naval Stores sufficient for their own Use.

Mountains, Rivers, and some Miscellanies.

The most considerable high Lands are the Catkill Mountains West from *Hudson's* River, and about 90 Miles N. from *New-York*. What I mentioned Vol. I. P. 454, 455, by way of Annotation, concerning the Runs of Water from the Catkill Mountains, *en passant*; now in its proper Place requires to be corrected, and ought to be understood as follows. On the East and South East Sides of *Catkill* Mountains, several Streams run, and fall into *Hudson's* River below *Albany*; on their N. W. Side proceeds *Schorie* River, and falls into *Mohawks* River, a Branch of *Hudson's* River, at *Fort Hunter* about 30 Miles above *Albany*, and this *Schorie* River in its Course comes within three or four Miles of the main Branch of *Delaware* River; from the S. W. Side flows a considerable Branch of *Delaware* River. *Conajobarie* River falls into the *Mohawks* River about 10 Miles above *Fort Hunter*, and comes very near to a Branch of *Sasquabanna* River, this Branch of *Sasquabanna* is so large that at 18 Miles from the *Mohawks* River, the Indians go down in Canoes to all the Indian Settlements upon *Sasquabanna* River. From this Situation of these Rivers, no Runs of Water from the *Catkill* Mountains can fall into *Lake Ontario*, into *River Ohio*, or into the *Sasquabanna* River.

Excepting *Long-Island* and *Staten-Island*, the main Land Sea Line, from *Byram* River to *New-York* Island, is very short.

The only considerable River in this Province is *Hudson's* River, from the *Elbow* where is the great carrying Place to *Wood Creek* towards *Canada*, to *Sandyhook* at its Mouth, are near 200 Miles; the Tide Way reaches upwards of 150 Miles to *Coboes* at the Mouth of *Mohawks* River, about 6 or 7 Miles above *Albany* Church, its Course is about S. 12 d. W; the Tides, that is the Floods and Ebbs are about 12 Hours later at *Albany* than at *New-York*; a little above the high Lands at about 50 Miles above the City of *New-York* the Water of the River be-

comes

comes fresh ; at about 100 Miles comes on the W. Side *Esopus* or *Soapers* River ; the S. Line of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* continued 20 Miles, strikes *Hudson's* River, a little below the Mouth of *Esopus* River, this *Esopus* River is noted for the Manufactures of Iron Pigs and Bars, Flower, Malt Liquor, &c. a little further on the E. Side of the great River, is the Camp or *Palatine* Town in the Mannor of *Livingston* about 40 Miles below *Albany* ; at 125 Miles on the E. Side falls in *Kinderbock* River after receiving *Claverbock* River ; the great *Ranslaers* Mannor or *Ranslaer Wyk* reaches along the great River and 20 Miles each Side of the River from *Kinderbock* Mannor to *Mohawks* River ; in this Mannor is the City of *Albany* and many peculiar Tracts of Land ; at 150 Miles as the River runs is the City of *Albany* ; at 157 Miles on the W. Side is *Coboes* or the Mouth of *Mohawks* River ; at 162 Miles is *Housuck* Rivers Mouth, where lives a small Tribe of *Indians* called *Scatacocks*, this *Housuck* River is on the E. Side of the great River, and comes from the North West Parts of *Massachusetts*, and the S. W. Parts of *New-Hampshire* ; the North Line of *Massachusetts-Bay* Province continued 20 Miles falls in with *Hudson's* River a little below *Coboes* ; at 200 Miles from *New-York* is the *Elbow* or Flexure of this great River at the great Falls. From these great Falls the Route to *Montreal* in *Canada* is 12 to 15 Miles Land Carriage to *Wood Creek*, then along the *Verdrunken* drowned or overflowed Lands to *Crown Point* a French Fort and Pass near Lake *Champlain*, then along this Lake to *Chamblais* River and a little above *Chamblais*, || another French Fort and Pass upon *Chamblais* River, cross *la Prairie* to *Montreal* :

|| As we formerly hinted from Fort *Chamblais* down the River of that Name are 17 Leagues to Fort *Sorel* upon the great River of *Canada* ; this Fort *Sorel* is 15 Leagues below *Montreal* and 35 Leagues above *Quebec* the Capital of *Canada*, the ordinary Residence of the French Governor General of *Canada*. *Quebec*, from the accurate Observations of *des Hayes*, is 70 d. W. from *London*. *Boston*, the Metropolis of *British America*, by the good Observations of *Mr. Robie*, is 71 d. 30 m. W. from *London*.

There

There is another Rout up *Hudson's River* above the *Elbow Falls*, to a carrying Place to *Lake Sacrament*, and thence to the South End of *Lake Champlain*.

The City of *New-York* from Governor *Burnet's* Observations, lies in 40 d. 40 m. N. Lat. 4 h. 58 m. W. Long. from *London*, here the Variation 1723 was 7 d. 20 m. W. decreasing.

Upon the Accession of a new Governor, the General Assembly of *New-York* generally settle the Salaries and other ordinary Articles for support of the Government, for five or more Years.

For their Sectaries in Religion, see the *Rhode-Island* Section Vol. II. P. 156.

As I find that the designed *Appendix* or Supplement, may prove out of Proportion too large, with respect to the principal History, I shall in each subsequent Section annex by way of *Miscellanies* some Matters which might have been referred to the Appendix. These *Miscellanies* are of the Nature of Digressions, and like change of Diet, may relieve a palled Stomach or Appetite in Reading.

Good Iron is distinguished by its Ringing amongst other Bars. The best Iron Bars break fibrous and bearded, if they break glassy and shining, the Iron is brittle, and not good.

The Inconveniencies of small Governments or Provinces, such as is that of *New-Hampshire* in *New-England*, is that perhaps they are below the Notice of the Ministry and Boards in *Great-Britain*; their Governors and other Officers are of little Consideration, have little or nothing to loose, and therefore act *impune*.

The Plantation Legislatures are so far circumscribed, that they can make no Laws inconsistent with the Laws of *Great-Britain*.

If the *French* be allowed to become Masters of the River of *St. Laurence*, of the great inland Lakes, and of the great River *Mississippi*; they are in Consequence Masters of all the inland Trade of *North-America*; an incredible Prejudice to the *British* Nation. The

The back of *Long-Island* was the first Place of the *English* Whale Fishery, small Whales affect Flats ; and at this Time Whalers make Voyages upon the Flats of *Virginia* and *Carolinas*.

It is said that the common Laws of *England* extend to the Plantations ; that the Statute Laws made since the Plantations had a being, do not include them unless they are particularly mentioned in the Acts of Parliament.

In all our Colony Assemblies of Representatives, there ought to be a limited small *Quorum* of Members to meet, adjourn, and to send for absent Members, and a much larger *Quorum* to proceed upon Business : This Regulation may also take Place with Relation to the Judges of the several Executive Courts in Law.

To obviate any Prejudices which a Reader may entertain against this Historical Summary, composed with much Labour, meerly for a publick good ; the Writer thinks it convenient at Times to explain himself in general. 1. He has endeavoured a *Laconick* Stile, which by many is reckoned harsh, and not fluent or sonorous ; the good Judges, the Mathematicians and Merchants use it as the strongest, the most Concise and Expressive. 2. The Writer is of no Party, and subjected to no Dependance ; he is neither *Whig* nor *Tory*, a temporary Courtier nor Anti courtier : A *Tory* is for rendring that Branch of the present Legislature called *King* or *Monarch*, Sole and Independent, with a *Passive Obedience* and *Non-resistance* ; a *Republican* is for lowering or annihilating the Prerogatives of a King, and for an unlimited Extension of the Privileges of the People in their Representatives ; but a genuine *Whig* is for maintaining a *Ballance of Power* amongst the several Orders or Negatives of the Legislature ; I profess myself of this *Politia*, as it is no Faction, all the others are Factious. 3. Religion, as it was in all Times, and in all Countries designed for the Benefit of Society ; it naturally is subordinate to the Civil Government ; and a Resident, whether Native or Adventitious, ought occasionally to conform to the established Manner.

ner of the Sectaries tolerated by the Laws of the Country, though not rashly to renounce that Form of Worship which was parental or educational, which generally tends to Libertinism and Licentiousness in Religion ; 4. As in my Course of the Colonies I continue to increase my distances, it is not to be expected that I can be so particular and copious, but shall endeavour strictly to investigate the Truth, though the further from my Place of Residence my View becomes more contracted and less distinct.

In the *British* Plantations or Colonies all Grants of Lands made by the Governor and Council, are declared to be good in Law, against his Majesty and Successors.

As the King and his Ministry in *Great-Britain*, though they do not chuse the Parliament, yet have a very great Influence in the Choice ; so it is with respect to the Governors and Assembly Men in our Colonies.

The Representatives from the several Counties and Townships are not their peculiar or separate Agents, but their Quota in the Provincial Representation, hence it is that they are not under the Cognizance of their County or Town, but under that of the General Assembly.

The *North-America* Trade consists in Fish, naval Stores, other Timber and Lumber, Skins, Furs, Tobacco, and Rice ; I do not mention Copper Ore though enumerated, because at present it is not Wrought or Exported.

The publick Taxes in our Provinces, are the Province and County Rates ; and the Township or Parochial Rates for the Ministers of the Gospel, called Pastors, Priests, Rectors, and other Denominations, as also for the School, Poor, High Ways, and sundry other small Articles.

By Act of Parliament 1731, there may be imported from the *British* Plantations into *Ireland* in *British* Shipping, all sorts of Plantation Goods excepting these Goods commonly called enumerated Commodities, viz. Sugar, Tobacco, Cotton Wool, Indigo, Ginger, speckle Wood or *Jamaica* Wood, Fustick or other dying Woods, Rice,

Rice, Moloffes, Bever-skins and other Furs, Copper Ore, Pitch, Tar, Turpentine, Masts, Yards, and Bowsprits.

The Sugar Act (as it is called) of Parliament 1733, and since continued, is concerning foreign Plantation Produce or Manufacture, imported into the *British* Plantations, viz. Rum, Duty 9d. Sterl. per Gallon, Moloffes or Syrups 6d. Sugars and Paneeles 5 s. per Ct. Wt.

In *North-America*, Hunting, Fishing and Fowling, with fundry Berries and Earth Nuts are the principal Food or Subsistence of the *Indians*; the more civilized, cultivate Indian Corn and Kidney Beans called Indian Beans. The Bread Grain in *Europe*, is generally Wheat, Rye, Oats, and Barley for Baking and Malting.

The * Wool in our Northern Plantations is of as good a Staple, but coarser than the *English* Wool; the further South in our Colonies, the Wool becomes coarser, even to a *lana Caprina* as in our Sugar Islands; therefore the Plantations are not capable of riveling *England* in fine Woolens.

In our Northern Colonies after the middle of *Sept.* scarce any Species of Spontaneous Plants make a seasonable Appearance; consequently *Botanick* Simpling is then over.

In our new Wilderness Colonies, the Timber and other Forrest Wood of the first clearing is generally doted, because ancient or old, the following Growths are good and found.

In the Price of Grain and other Provisions there is a sort

* There are certain Ports only, allowed in *Great-Britain* and *Ireland* for the Exportation and Importation of Wool and Woolens. No Cloths, excepting of the Manufacture of *Great-Britain* can be imported into any of his Majesty's Dominions.

The Woolens from *Great-Britain* exported annually are computed at about three Millions Sterling; but being free of Duty, they for some selfish Ends are not entred exactly, therefore the value can not be accurately ascertained.

The Woolens of *Great-Britain* are above one third of the universal Export. At a Medium, Wool Manufactured, is double the Value of the Wool it self, and deducting all Charges, one third of the neat Profit goes to the Landlord.

of natural Standard, whereby the Husband Man may have a living Profit, and the Labourers in Manufacture, &c. may not have Provisions so cheap, that the Earnings of a few Days Work will afford some Days of Idleness; in this respect our Produce and Manufactures have some kind of a natural dependance.





SECTION XIII.

Concerning the Province of
New-Jersey or Nova-Cæsarea.

WE have in the Section of *New-York* * given some general Account of the first Settlement of *New-Netherlands* or *Nova-Belgia* which comprehended the present *New-York*, *New-Jersey*, and the three lower Counties of *Pensylvania* upon *Delaware* River.

Upon a Design formed by the Court of *England* to reduce *New-Netherlands* †, K. *Charles II.* made a previous Grant of the Property and Government of the same to his Brother the Duke of *York*, *March 12, 1663, 4*; it was not reduced by settled Articles until *September 1664*, and confirmed to *England* by the Treaty of *Breda, 1667*.

The Duke of *York* by Commission *April 2, 1664*, appointed *Richard Nichols* Esq; Deputy Governor of all *New-Netherlands*, but did not enter upon his Government until *August 27, 1664*, which was Posterior to the Duke of *York's* Assignment *June 24, 1664*, of the Property and Government of *New-Jersey* to Lord *Berkley* and Sir *George Cartaret*.

The Duke of *York*, *June 24, 1664*, made a joint Grant of that part of *New-Netherlands* (now called *New-Jersey*) †

* P. 220, &c.

† *Stuyvesand* was at that Time Dutch Governor of *New-Netherlands*, his Commission from the States General was dated *July 26, 1646*.

‡ This Grant was called *New-Jersey*, from the Name of the Island of *Jersey* in the Channel of *England*, the Country of Sir *George Cartaret* one of the two first Assignees, it is sometimes called *Nova-Cæsarea*.

to Lord *Berkley* of *Stratten*, and Sir *George Cartaret*; they appointed *Philip Cartaret* Esq; their Lt. Governor, he entered upon his Government in *Aug.* 1665, where he remained only six Months, and returned to *England*, and back again to his Government of the *Fersies*. This Grant of the Duke of *York's*, was from the *Noorde Rivier*, now called *Hudson's River*, to the *Zuyde Rivier*, now called *Delaware River*; and up *Hudson's River* to 41. d. N. Lat. and up *Delaware River* to 41 d. 40 m; and from these two Stations headed by a strait Line across.

By the Intrigues of *France*, *England* was persuaded to proclaim War against the *Dutch*, *March* 17, 1671, 2, and a Dutch Expedition reconquered *New-Netherlands* from the English *July* 30, 1673, Col. *Lovelace* was at that Time Governor; by the Treaty of *London*, *February* 19 1673, 4, *New-Netherlands* was restored by the *Dutch* to the Crown of *England*, and Sir *Edmond Andros* appointed Governor.

As *New Netherlands* had been conquered, that is alienated from *England*, since the Crown of *England's* former Grant to the Duke of *York*; to obviate any difficulties in the validity of that Grant, K. *Charles II*, made a new Grant of Property and Government to his Brother the Duke of *York*, *June* 29, 1674, which was published *November* 6 following. No Act of Government in the *Fersies* is to be found upon Record from *July* 19, 1673 to *November* 1674.

Duke of *York* by Lease and Release, *July* 28 and 29, 1674, conveyed to Sir *George Cartaret* the Eastern Division of *New Fersies*, divided from the Western Division of the *Fersies* by a strait Line from the S. E. Point of *Little Egg Harbour* on *Barnegate Creek*, being about middle between *Sandy Hook* and *Cape May* to a Kill or Creek a little below *Rencokus Kill* on *Delaware River*, and thence (about 35 Miles) strait Course along *Delaware River* up to 41 d. 40 m. N. Lat. the North divisional Point or Station of the divisional Line between *New-York* and the *Fersies*. N. B. The first Effort of the Rioters for

For setting up Indian Purchases against the Title of the Crown was 1672, to evade paying Quit-Rents which commenced *March 25, 1670*; they threw off the Government of the Proprietors, and the People chose a Governor for themselves; Governor *Cartaret* and his Secretary went for *England* to complain, but the Dutch Conquest happening soon after, Governor *Cartaret* did not return till *November 1674* with new Concessions, being the third Parcel of Concessions, and from that Time all remained quiet, and the Rules of Property were well observed until Sir *Edmond Andros*, broke through all these Rules; he usurped the Government of all *New Jersey* 1680, and carried Governor *Cartaret* Prisoner from *Elizabeth Town* to *New-York*; upon Complaints to the Duke of *York*, he with Resentment recalled Sir *Edmond Andros*, and the Property and Government of the *Jersey* Proprietors was re-established 1683, and continued till some Months before the *Revolution* 1688, when K. *James* broke through the Rules of Property and also seized the Government of *New-Jersey* and of the neighbouring Provinces, and put them under the Command of Sir *Edmond Andros*: Upon the *Revolution* the Proprietors re-assumed the Right of Government. †

Upon the *Revolution* the Proprietors appointed *John Totbam* Esq; their Lieutenant Governor, and afterwards Col. *Dudley*, * but the People scrupled to obey them, and the Proprietors appointed Col. *Andrew Hamilton*, who continued Governor some Years; but by some designing Men the People received a Notion that Col. *Hamilton*, as a *Scots* Man, could not be Governor of an *English* Colony; they dismissed him, and constituted *Jeremiah Basse* Governor 1697, but as *Basse* had never been approved of by the King, the Proprietors in a short

† For sake of Connection I continue this Thread, and leave some intervening Matters to be afterwards related.

* Col. *Dudley* was afterwards Deputy Governor of the *Ile of Wight*, a Member of Parliament of *England*, and Governor of the Provinces of *Massachusetts-Bay* and *New-Hampshire* in *New-England*.

Time dismissed him, and reinstated Col. *Hamilton*, but he never was confirmed by the Crown, and Col. *Hamilton* was superseded by Mr. *Basse* a second Time, and *Basse* was finally superseded by *Andrew Bowne* Esq; the last Governor for the Proprietors.

The People of the *Jersies* continued for some Years so mutinous, that the Proprietors for their own Ease, by their Agents, Sir *Thomas Lane*, for *West-Jersey*, and Mr. *William Dockwra* for *East-Jersey* in the Name of the Proprietors, found it expedient by a proper Instrument *April 17, 1702*, in concert, to surrender the Government to the Crown, reserving to themselves all their other Rights, and they jointly with the Crown formed some fundamental Articles by way of a *Magna Charta*. Lord *Cornbury*, Governor of *New-York*, was by Queen *Anne* constituted the first Crown Governor of the united *Jersies*.

Lord *Berkley*, some Years after his Grant from Duke of *York 1664*, assigned his Right to *William Penn*, Esq; *Gawen Laurie* of *London*, Merchant, *Nicholas Lucas*, and *Edward Byllyng*; shortly after this, these Assignees agreed upon a Partition with Sir *George Cartaret*; and Sir *George* obtained of Duke of *York, July 1674* a Confirmation of this Partition Grant, as is above related — *July 1, 1676*, Sir *George Cartaret* gave to the Assignees of Lord *Berkley* a Quit-Claim of the *West-Jersies*, as these Assignees gave to Sir *George* a like Quit-Claim of the *East-Jersies*; this Partition was confirmed by an Act of the General Assembly of the *Jersies 1719*.

Sir *George Cartaret* made over the *East-Jersies* to certain Trustees *December 5, 1678*, to be sold by them after his Death. After Sir *George's* Death, the Trustees assigned the *East-Jersies* to 12 Proprietors, *February 2, 1681, 2*.

William Penn

Thomas Wilcox

Robert West

Ambrose Riggs

Thomas Rudyard

John Hayward

Samuel Groom

Hugh Hartshorn

Thomas Hart

Clemens Plumsted

Richard Mew

Thomas Cooper.

By

By an Instrument amongst themselves, they declared that the Purchase was equal, and no Advantage should be taken of Survivorship. These first Proprietors by 12 separate Deeds, separately conveyed one half of their Interest to 12 other Persons separately,

Robert Berkley

Gawen Laurie

Edward Byllyng

Thomas Barker

Robert Turner

Thomas Warner

James Brien

James Earl of Perth

Arent Soumans

Robert Gordon

William Gibson

John Drummond

in Fee Simple. The Duke of York, March 14, 1682, by Patent or Grant confirmed the *East Jerseys* to these 24 Proprietors in Property and Government; and July 17 following the famous *Robert Berkley* † the Quaker, was agreed upon, and under him *pro tempore* Mr. Laurie with a Council. Mr. Berkley continued Governor until 1685. He was succeeded by Lord Neal Campbell of the *Argyl* Family; about this Time came over, the Quaker so called, *George Keith*. *

From the Duke of York's first Grant of all the *Jersies* to Lord Berkley of Stratten, and to Sir George Cartaret Knight and Baronet, Vice Chamberlain of his Majesty's Household, and one of his Majesty's most honourable Privy Council, jointly; *Philip Cartaret*, Esq; was Gover, nor of their joint Concern, that is for all the *Jersies* until 1672, when the People, especially of *Elizabeth Town*, began to mutiny upon Account of the demand of Quit-Rents, which according to the Concessions took Place March 25, 1670. These Mutineers assumed the Go-

† In K. Charles II. Reign there was a kind of Persecution of the Nonconformists in Religion, and *Robert Berkley* Head of all the Quakers in Great-Britain, with his Family removed to the *Jersies*; from this Persecution the *Jersies* is settled chiefly with *Quakers*, *Annabaptists*, and *Presbyterians*.

* *George Keith* was a noted *Quaker*, he came over to the *Jersies*, taught School, and was Land Surveyor General; he returned to *England*, and for his Conveniency, accepted of a Church of *England* Benefice, and wrote against the *Quakers*.

vernment, and constituted *James Cartaret* a dissolute Son of *Sir George Cartaret*, their Governor; and Governor *Philip Cartaret* was obliged to go to the Court of *England* with Complaints against the Mutineers; Col. *Lovell* at this Time was Governor of *New-York*; the *Dutch* Conquest intervening, he did not return until 1674, when upon a Peace the *Dutch* resigned to the Crown of *England* the Country of *New-Netherlands*, and the Duke of *York* had made a divisional or separate Grant of *East-Jersies* to *Sir George Cartaret*; Governor *Cartaret* brought over some additional Concessions, which were called the third Concessions, as he had bought some Shares in the *Elizabeth Town* Indian Purchase, the *Elizabeth Town* Men gave him no uneasiness, he resided in *Elizabeth Town* till Death; he made it the Seat of Government. *Robert Berkley* the noted Quaker Writer, was the first Governor for the 24 Proprietors.

Upon the *Dutch* Peace 1674, *Sir Edmund Andros* was appointed Governor of the *Jersies*, but by Virtue of the Duke of *York's* second or divisional Grant, *Sir George Cartaret*, appointed *Philip Cartaret* Esq; his Lieut. Governor for the *East-Jersey*, in which Station he continued to the Time of his Death, *November* 1682; he received some Insults from *Sir Edmund Andros*. From 1674, *Sir Edmund Andros* was Governor of the *West Jersies* for the Duke of *York*, who had twisted the Government out of the Hands of *Lord Berkley's* Assignees, and upon proper Representations the Duke of *York*, quitted the Government of *West-Jersies* to the Assignees of *Lord Berkley*, and they appointed *Edward Billing* one of the Assignees or Proprietors Governor 1680, having obtained a new Grant of the *West-Jersey*, at the same Time the Duke made a new Grant or Confirmation of *East-Jersey* to the Grand Son of *Sir George Cartaret*. In the *West Jersies* to *Mr. Billings* 1690, succeeded || *Doctor Daniel Cox* of the

|| The Affairs of this Colony have always been in a confused State, which occasions an unavoidable Confusion in the History thereof.

College of Physicians in *London*, he having purchased the greatest Part of the Property of *West-Jersey*, was Governor thereof, but as his professional Business did not allow him to leave *London*, he appointed a Deputy Governor, and at length fold his Interest to Sir *Thomas Lane* and others for £. 9,000 Sterl. a great Price at that Time.

The original 24 Shares of *East-Jersey* by Sales of small Parts of these Shares and Succession of Children, became very much subdivided; for Instance, some Proprietors had only one fortieth Part, of a forty eighth Part, of a twenty fourth Share; the *West-Jersey* was in the same Condition; this occasioned much Confusion in Management amongst these general Proprietors, particularly in appointing of Governors; therefore the Proprietors in good Prudence resigned the Government to the Crown, reserving all their other Rights as we formerly mentioned; the Proprietary Government continued until *August 14, 1703*, when Lord *Cornbury* published his Commission from the Crown as Governor of all the *Jersies*, thus the *East* and *West-Jersies* which had been separate Governments from 1674 to 1703, became united in one Government or Jurisdiction, and continued under the same Governor with the Province of *New-York*, until 1736, when the Government of *New-York* devolved upon Lieut. Governor *Clarke*; as he had no Command in the *Jersies*, the Government of the *Jersies* devolved upon the President of the Council, and ever since the Command in Chief, has been in a distinct Person from that of *New-York*.

Upon the Proprietors surrendring of the Government to the Crown, they obtained of the Crown, a set of perpetual Instructions to all subsequent Governors by way of Concessions or *Magna Charta* for the Proprietors and People, particularly in favour of the Proprietors. 1. Not to consent to any Tax upon unprofitable or vacant Lands. 2. None but the General Proprietors to purchase any Lands of the Indians. 3. To take Care that all Lands purchased, be improved by the Possessors.

After the Dutch Peace, there was (upon ceasing of Head Land Bounties) 1685 a Council of Proprietors appointed for the *East-Jersies*, they ordered a dividend of 10,000 Acres to be taken up at Pleasure, to each of the 24 Proprietorships of the *East-Jersies*; there was a second Division of 5000 Acres to each of the 24 Proprietorships, *February* 21, 1698; and a Division of 2500 Acres *Dec.* 2, 1702. To enforce the Affair of a Council of Proprietors, there passed an Act of General Assembly *March* 25, 1725, that a certain Number of the General Proprietors or their Proxies, having the value of eight whole Shares in themselves, shall be a Council of the Proprietors of the Eastern Division, to divide Lands, examine Claims, &c. and to have two stated yearly Meetings at *Perth-Amboy* about the Times of the Sittings of the supreme Court of Judicatures. 1737, The Council of Proprietors advertized, that after 1739, there should be a further Dividend of 2,000 Acres *per Ann.* to each of the 24 Proprietorships, until all vacant Lands shall be divided.

In the first Concessions, *February* 10, 1664,5, the Proprietors *Berkley* and *Cartaret* promise to all Adventurers and Settlers who should plant there, sundry Privileges, particularly of Head-Lands for each Head of Settlers; this Promise was only designed to be of four Years Continuance, but from Time to Time was extended to *January* 13, 1685,6, and then ceased; the general Proprietors then began to make Dividends amongst themselves as above. The Head Lands were to Settlers in any Place exceeding 10 Miles from the Sea, 80 Acres per Head, and to those who settle nearer, 60 Acres.

In the beginning, the general Lots were laid out, none less than 2100 Acres, and none more than 21,000 Acres; whereof one seventh to be reserved to the general Proprietors, the Remainder to Persons who should come and plant the same.

In taking up of Lands either by Purchase, and Agreement with the general Proprietaries as at present, or as
formerly

formerly by way of Head-Lands, the Governor and Majority of the Council gave a Warrant to the Surveyor General or his Deputies, to survey and lay out the same; next the Surveyor is to certify the Survey, upon which the Governor and Council make a Grant in the Form following, "The Lords Proprietors of *Nova Cesarea* or *New-Jersey*, do hereby grant to *A. B.* of — in the Province aforesaid, a Plantation containing — Acres English Measures, to him or her, to his or her Heirs or Assigns for ever; yeilding and paying yearly unto the said Lord Proprietors their Heirs or Assigns every 25th Day of *March* according to the English Account, one half Penny lawful Money of *England* for every one of said Acres; to be holden as of the Mannor of *East-Greenwich* in free and common Soccage, the first Payment of Quit-Rents to begin the 25th — Given under the Seal of the Province the — Day of — in the Year of our Lord — Signed by the Governor and a Majority of the Council. N. B. One half Part of the Mines of Gold and Silver are reserved; and if in three Years, the Conditions stipulated are not fulfilled, the Grant to be void.

We may observe, that there are three sorts of Proprietors in the *Jersies*. 1. The General Proprietors. 2. Purchasers under the General Proprietors. 3. Claimers under Patents for Head-Lands from the General Proprietors on Quit-Rent.

A DIGRESSION,

Concerning Indian Deeds, and Proprietors Quit-Rents in the Plantations.

In our Plantations the Case of Persons holding Lands by Indian Deeds only, without the Approbation of the Crown, or of the respective Legislatures who may be deemed to have the exclusive Prerogative of granting the Right of Pre-emption to Subjects; as also the Affair of paying Quit-Rents to the Crown or to general Proprietors.

prietors Grantees of the Crown, as a Matter of considerable Concern, seems to require a Digression Article : As the Colony of *New-Jersey* is the most noted for these Disputes, * we shall here give the incidents of Claims by Indian Deeds only, in *Elizabeth* Township.

In both *Jerseys* several Possessions and Claims of Land, are founded upon Indian Deeds only ; the Indian *Elizabeth* Town Grant is the most noted, and has been the most vexatious, formerly containing upwards of 400,000 Acres of the most valuable Lands in *New-Jersey* bounded by *Raritan* River, *Amboy* Sound, *Arthur Cul-Bay*, and *Passaick* River ; *Daniel Pierce* and Associates purchased one half of these Lands for £. 80 Sterl. and laid out the Townships of *Woodbridge* and *Piscataway*, for which they soon after obtain'd sufficient Patents from the rightful Proprietors under the Crown, at one half Penny per *Ann.* Quit-Rent, and peaceably enjoy the same to this Day.

The first Indian Grant of these Lands was to *Augustin Herman* a Dutchman 1651 ; upon the Dutch Surrender to the Crown of *England*, he relinquished these Lands, and therefore they Escheated to that Crown as Derelicts, and consequently could not be conveyed again by the Indians to any Person or Community.

Notwithstanding of this, six Persons with their Associates, *September* 26, 1664, petitioned Governor *Nichols* for Liberty to purchase of the *Indians*, and settle certain

* Where the Peace and Tranquility of a Country or Colony, can not be maintained by the Civil Power, which it seems to have happened at sundry Times in the *Jerseys*, a Military Force is absolutely requisite. Some young Regiment, instead of being in Course disbanded in *Great-Britain* or *Ireland*, may be sent to the seditious Colony, they will soon quell the *Rioters*, and when the Spirit of Mutiny is drove out, the Regiment may be disbanded in the Colony ; they will contribute towards Peopling the Colony ; and Moreover, as being used to a regular and proper Submission to Authority, by their Example, they will teach the same to the People of the Colony. Thus the Regiment of *Carignon* some Years since was sent over from *France* to *Canada*, and disbanded there ; Thus in the Time of the Government of Lord *Colpepper*, a Regiment was sent from *England* to *Virginia*, to quell the Riots under *Bacon*, and afterwards dissolved there.

Tracts of Land upon *Arthur Cul-Bay*, which he granted *September 30, 1664*; accordingly these Associates made a Purchase from the *Indians* *October 28th* following in the Names of *John Bailey, Daniel Denton, Luke Watson* of *Long-Island* Husbandmen, and their Associates, of a Tract of Land bounded as above: The Consideration was, paying to the *Indians* 20 Fathoms of trading Cloth, 2 made Coats, 2 Guns, 2 Hatchets, 10 Bars of Lead, 20 handfulls of Gun-Powder; and after one Year's Expiration, the Remainder of the Purchase was 400 Fathoms of white Wampum (Value £. 20 Sterl.) or 200 Fathom of black Wampum; In Consequence of this, Governor *Nichols* granted to these Associates a Patent for said Lands, with a Liberty to purchase further of the *Indians* so far as Snake Hill, dated *December 2, 1664*.

That the Reader may have some Conception of the Dispute concerning the Property and Quit-Rents of these Lands, between the Proprietors who hold of the Crown, and of the People who hold by supposed Indian Purchases, which has occasioned much disturbance in this Government; we shall make the following Observations.

1. *Nichols*, Lieut. Governor of *New Jersey* for the Duke of *York*, being informed of the Duke's Assignment to Lord *Berkley* and Sir *George Cartaret*, suspecting that he would soon be superseded by a Lieut. Governor of their own Appointment, and perhaps for other Considerations, *September 30, 1664*, gave Licence to certain Persons (as is above related) to purchase Lands of the *Indians*, which they did *October 25*; and 3d of *December* following, *Nichols* gave them a Patent for the same, subjected to certain Quit-Rents. This Patent, though Posterior to the foresaid Assignment, was conform to his Instructions, and before any proper Notice received of that Assignment, † and therefore in equity alledged to be good, especially

† The Dispute concerning the equivalent Lands called the *Oblong*, made over by the Colony of *Connecticut* to the Province of *New-York*, between Associates who had a Grant of them from the King in Council,

especially considering, 2. that *Philip Cartaret* Esq; Lieut. Governor for the Assignees, did soon after his entering upon the Government of the *Fersies*, (he entred *August* 1665,) as it is said, under Hand and Seal gave Licence to a Company of sundry Persons to purchase of the Indians within his Government what quantity of Lands they should think convenient, and accordingly, as the *Elizabeth* Men say, their Ancestors with Advice and Consent of said Governor made sundry Purchases of the Indians. 3. Governor *Cartaret* for his own Use purchased some of these Indian Grant Rights, particularly that of *Bailey*, *May* 21, 1666; only four Families were settled at *Elizabeth Town* (afterwards so called) before Governor *Cartaret's* Arrival; *Cartaret* died Governor of the *East-Fersey*, *Nov.* 1682; during his Government the Provincial General Assemblies, the Council, the superior or supreme Courts of Judicature, and general Offices of the Government were kept at *Elizabeth Town*, which was so called by the Name of *Elizabeth*, Wife of Sir *George Cartaret*, it was the first English Settlement, and the most ancient Town of the Province.

Moreover, the Proprietors who hold by Indian Grants, say, as a Precedent, although the Courts at Law in the *Fersies*, *May* 14, 1695, gave Judgment of Ejectment in favour of *James Fullerton*, who held under the General Proprietors, against *Jeffrey Jones*, who held by the Indian Grants; *Jones* upon his Appeal to the King in Council, the Judgment was reversed and set aside *February* 25, 1696: The General Proprietors say, that the Judgment was reversed only because of some Errors in the Proceedings. A Petition or Complaint of *Elizabeth Town* Indian Grant Proprietors, was read before the King in Council, *July* 19, 1744, representing the Hardships they sustained from the General Proprietors. 1. That gene.

cil, and Associates who had, conform to Instructions, a Grant of them from the Governor and Council of *New-York*, is of this Nature, but hitherto not determined, see Vol. II. P. 232.

rally the Council and Judges are interested in the general Proprietors side of the question, and are therefore become Judges in their own Cause. 2. By Act of Assembly they have procured Part of the County of *Somerset*, who are mostly of the general Proprietors Side, to be annexed to the County of *Essex*, where the Lands of the Indian Grant Proprietors generally lay, for the sake of having Juries in their Interest. 3. For a *six Penny* Damage, we are sometimes brought in for two or three hundred Pounds Proclamation Money Costs; and we are daily threatned with great pretended Damages and heavy Costs: Therefore they pray, that the King would take them under his immediate Protection, and either determine the Affair in your Majesty's most honourable Privy Council, or appoint disinterested Commissioners out of some of the neighbouring Colonies, and by a Jury from thence also to be taken, to hear and finally decide in said Case; or that your Majesty would be graciously pleased to appoint Commissioners, to hear, enquire into, and determine said Controversy; or grant such Relief as to your Majesty may seem meet. This was referred to the Committee of Council for Plantation Affairs. *August 21, 1744*, this Committee refer the Petition to the Lords Commissioners for Trade and Plantations, to report to the Committee, what they conceive proper for his Majesty to do therein. The Board of Trade and Plantations report to the said Committee of Privy Council, &c. &c. &c. The Character of a Summary obliges us to stop; and only further to observe, that this Affair hitherto is not Issued.

In answer, the General Proprietors represent to the Board of Trade and Plantations, 1. That they humbly conceive, the Complaint is not sent from the whole Body, or from any considerable Number of Inhabitants there, but from a few factious and mutinous People impatient of any Government. 2. The *Rioters* pretend a sole Right in the *Indians*, but no Right in the King and his Grantees, with a design to deprive the Proprietors of their
Right

Right to the Soil and Quit-Rent, and with a Design to strip his Majesty of his Royal Right to that and the other Plantations, and to render them independent of the Crown.

Complaints dated *April 13, 1745*, were filed in Chancery of the *Jersies*, against the *Elizabeth* Proprietors called *Clinker Right Men*, consisting of 124 Folio Pages; and was followed by a long Bill from the Council of Proprietors of the Eastern Division of the *New-Jersey* met in *Perth Amboy March 25, 1746*, in behalf of themselves, and the rest of the General Proprietors of the Eastern Division of *New Jersey*, whom they represent. In these Instruments they seem to alledge, 1. That as the *Indians* had granted these Lands to *Herman* 1651, they could not grant them to *Bailey*, &c. as is above said. 2, Considering the long Possession of the *Elizabeth* Men, and the great Charge and Labour in clearing these Possessions, Governor *Nichol's* Patents upon *Indian* Deeds are in Equity deemed good; this does not excuse the Possessors from paying Quit-Rents and other Acknowledgment conform to the Grants; and that in fact *March 11, 1674,5*, the *Elizabeth* Men offer'd to pay to the Lord Proprietor £. 20 Sterl. per Ann. Quit-Rent for eight Miles Square, this offer was refused by the Governor and Council insisting upon the half Penny Sterl. per Acre per Ann. 3. The riotous Proceedings of the *Elizabeth* Men and others claiming by *Indian* Deeds, viz. Goals broke open, People forceably turned out of Possession of their Lands, this they call clubbing them out, and the Officers of the Government publicly insulted and beat; some of the Rioters have come fifty Miles and upwards to join in a Riot.

The late Riots in the *Jersies* are between the Proprietors who hold by a Town Right, and those who hold by Patents from the General Proprietors.

The general Proprietors say, that the only good Title in the Province is under the Crown; and all Pretences from *Indian* Purchases only are void.

The Boundaries of New-Jersey, Rivers, and some Distances of noted Places.

It is bounded Easterly by the Province of *New-York* from 41 d. N. Lat. on *Hudson's* River to *Sandyhook*, about 40 Miles; from *Sandyhook* E. Southerly upon the Ocean 40 Leagues to *Cape May* at the Entrance of *Delaware* Bay; from *Cape May* it is bounded Westerly on *Pensylvania* along the various Turnings of *Delaware* River to 41 d. 40 m. North Lat. which if in a straight Line, would be about 200 Miles; the N. Easterly Line of *New-Jersey* with *New-York* was determined by the Duke of *York* in his Grant of *New-Jersey* to *Berkley* and *Cartaret*, to be from a Point in the main Branch of *Delaware* River in Lat. 41 d. 40 m. to a Point in *Hudson's* River in Lat. 41 d. the Point on *Delaware* River is fully agreed upon and ascertained by both Governments, the other on *Hudson's* River is not so fully agreed upon; the Line from Point to Point may be about 80 Miles long, E. 41 d. S.

Anno 1676, By Agreement between the four Assignees of Lord *Berkley* on the one Side, and Sir *George Cartaret* on the other Side (perhaps this is the Reason of the Name *Quinquipartite* Line) *New-Jersey* was divided into two Provinces, called the *East* and *West-Jersey*, and confirmed by the Duke of *York* 1680, and 1682; and by Act of Assembly 1719; this Line as run by Mr. *Lawrence*, November 1744, was in length 150 Miles 20 Chains, N. 9 d. 19 m. W. from *Little-Egg* Harbour in the Ocean, to 41 d. 40 m. N. Lat; the S. Point of this Line was settled 1676, the North Point of the Line was settled 1719, but the Line itself was never run till 1744, and that only by the Proprietors of the *East-Jersey* *ex parte*; in this Line some Errors have been discovered and require to be rectified; as there is a considerable difference in the Variations of the Compass, at the North and South Terminations of this divisional Line, this divi-

divisional Line can not be straight ; the first Falls in *Delaware* River in *Trent Town* are opposite to the 47th Mile of this divisional Line.

In order to discover the main Branch mentioned in the Grants, and the largeness of some other Branches of *Delaware* and *Sesquabanna* Rivers, there was lately a survey Line run nearly due West from *Minisfinck* Island on *Delaware* River about 12 Miles above the divisional Line crossing the N. E. Branch of *Delaware* River, to *Sesquabanna* River were 85 Miles, and where it fell in with *Sesquabanna*, that River was about 30 Chains (4 Rod to a Chain) wide, and near this there was a Branch which fell into the principal River of *Sesquabanna* about 300 Feet wide, and in the *Fork* was an Indian Village called *Solochka* ; the West Branch of *Delaware* River was only 25 Feet wide, the N. E. Branch where the Station Point of the division Line between *New-York* and *Jersey* is fixed at 41 d. 40 m. Lat. is above 500 Feet wide, the *Fork* so called, of *Delaware* River is about 70 Miles upon a straight Line below this Station Point ; at this Station Point *Anno* 1744 the variation of the Compass was W. 6 d. 35 m. *Anno* 1719 it was observed to be about 8 d. as is before mentioned ; the Station Point at *Egg Harbour* 1744 was 5 d. 25 m. Mr. *Serjeant Hook* some Time since made a Purchase of 3750 Acres upon *Delaware* River in the *West-Jersey*, and gave one Tenth of it as a Glebe to the Church.

The principal Rivers in the Province of *New Jersey* are the *Noorde Rivier* or *Hudson's* River, which we have already delineated in the Section of *New-York*, and *Zuide Rivier* or *Delaware* River, which we shall describe in the Section of *Pensylvania* ; only we shall observe, that in the *Jersey* Side of this River are several short Creeks, these of *Cobansy*, and of *Salem* 20 Miles higher, make one District of Custom House ; at *Bridlington* 20 Miles above *Philadelphia* is another Custom District : These two Custom House Districts their quarterly Entries and Clearances

Clearances of Vessels are generally *Nil*, and scarce deserve the Name of preventive Creeks. The main Branch of *Delaware* River comes from *Cat-kill* Mountains, a few Miles West of the Fountains of *Scobarie* River a Branch of *Mohawks* River. *Raritan* River falls into *Sandyhook* Bay at *Amboy* Point, the Tide flows 12 Miles up to *Brunswick*; at the Mouth of this River is the only considerable Sea Port and Custom-House of *New-Jersey*; here is the City of *Perth-Amboy*, it is the Capital of the Province of *New-Jersey*, and here are kept the Provincial Records, here is a good deep Water Harbour and promising Country; but notwithstanding, it has only the Appearance of a mean Village, the Name is a Compound of *Perth* the honorary Title of the late *Drummond* Earl of *Perth*, and *Amboy* its Indian Name.

The Sea Line of *New-Jersey* is *Arthur* Cul-Bay and *Amboy* Sound between *Staten* Island and the Main about 20 Miles S. these receive the Rivulets of *Hackinsack* *Passaick*, *Bounds* Creek, and *Rarway*, from *Amboy* Point to *Sandyhook* (*Sandyhook* is in the *East-Jersey*) 12 Miles E. from *Sandyhook* to *Cape May* 120 Miles S. Westerly, a flat double *Sandy Shore*, having some Inlets practicable only by small Craft.

There are several Chains or Ridges of Hills in this Province, but of no Consideration.

Perth Amboy is the Provincial Town of *East-Jersey*, *Bridlington* is the Provincial Town of *West-Jersey*, distance 50 Miles, where the General Assembly of all the *Jersies* sits alternately, and where the distinct Provincial Judicatories or supreme Courts sit respectively. *Bridlington*, commonly called *Burlington* is a pleasant Village. *Elizabeth Town* is the most ancient Corporation and considerable Town of the Province. *Brunswick* in *East-Jersey* is nearly the Center of *East* and *West-Jersies*, here is lately established a College* for the Instruction of Youth, by

* Formerly by Mistake, I wrote, that this College was by Royal Charter.

a Charter from Governor *Belcher*, *October* 22, 1746, with Power to confer all Degrees as in the Universities of *England*: The present Trustees are generally Presbyterians, a Majority of seven or more Trustees to have the Management; each Scholar to pay £. 4 per Ann, at 8s per oz. Silver; Mr. *Jonathan Dickinson* was their first President, Mr. *Burr* is their present President; in this College *October* 5, 1749, commenced 7 Batchellors of Arts.

The Road as in present Use, from *New-York* City to *Philadelphia*, is, from *New-York* to *Elizabeth* Town 17 Miles, thence to *Brunswick* 22 Miles, thence to *Trent* Town Ferry 30 Miles, thence to *Bristol* opposite to *Bridlington* 15 Miles, thence to *Philadelphia* 20 Miles, being in all from the City of *New-York* to *Philadelphia* 104 Miles.

From *Cape-May* to *Salem* are about 60 Miles, thence to *Bridlington* 50 Miles, thence to *Trent* Town Falls, 15 Miles. These are the first Falls of *Delaware* River, and the Tide flows so high, below these Falls when the Tide is down and no Land Floodings in the River, the River is fordable.

In the Province of the *Jersies* are five Corporations with Courts; whereof there are in *East-Jersey*, the City of *Perth Amboy*, the City of *New Brunswick*, and the Borough of *Elizabeth* Town, and two in the *West-Jersey*, the City of *Bridlington*, alias *Burlington*, and the Borough of *Trent* Town; of these only two, *Perth-Amboy* and *Burlington*, send Representatives to the General Assembly.

There is not much to be said concerning their Wars with the *Indians* and *Canada* French; the five Nations of *Iroquois* which we call *Mohawks*, have always been in our Interest; they, especially the large Tribe of *Senecas*, cover the Provinces of *New-Jersey*, *Pensylvania*, *Maryland*, and *Virginia*. Ever since the first settling of this Province, the Publick has never been put to one Penny Charge for keeping the Indians in Peace. The sham Canada

Canada Expedition of 1709, and 1711, led this Province and all the other *British* Provinces to the Northward of it, into a pernicious *Paper Currency*, called Publick Bills of Credit; their first Paper Currency was emitted 1709 of £. 3,000, to be cancelled by Taxes the same Year, and 1711 they emitted £. 5,000 to be cancelled by Taxes 1712 and 1713, and afterwards many Emissions for Charges of Government † and Loans amongst themselves, but never did run such depreciating Lengths, as has been done in *New-England*. See the Article of Plantation Currencies in the *Appendix*.

At present the *West-Jersey* Money or Currency is in Value equal to that of the adjoining Province of *Pennsylvania*; the *East-Jersey* Currency is the same with the adjacent Province of *New-York*; their respective Dealings, being almost solely with the respective adjoining Provinces. *Pennsylvania* Paper-Currency was at first emitted at the Value of Proclamation Money, which is 6 *s* Currency equal in Value to a heavy Spanish Piece of Eight; but at present a Mild Piece or Spanish Dollar passes for 7 *s* 6 *d*. Currency, a heavy Pistole 27 *s*, a Guinea 34 *s*, and Moidores 44 *s*. *New-York* Paper Currency was at first emitted at 8 *s* per oz. Silver; at present a Dollar or Mild Piece of Eight being 7 8ths of one oz. Silver, is 8 *s* Currency, Pistoles 28 *s* if not under 4 *d*. 6 Grains Wt, Guineas 35 *s*, Moidores 45 *s*.

Their various *Sectaries*, not in Religion, but in religious Modes of Worship may be found in a general Article in the Section of *Rhode-Island*; we shall only observe that this Colony was first settled by Presbyterians, Anabaptists, and Quakers, who to this Time still prevail; notwithstanding of the great Charge of Missionaries from the Society for propagating the Gospel,

† The Forces raised there towards the late *Cuba* or *Spanish West-India* Expedition, and afterwards of 5 Companies of 100 Men each, towards a feint Expedition against *Canada* 1746, was a considerable Charge to them in levying and victualling.

who by Mistake seem to embarrass the Christian Religion in general ; more than to cultivate it. Why should Religious, Pious, and sober Christians ; industrious, frugal, and orderly Common-wealths Men, be thus disturbed and perplexed, in their legally tolerated Way, differing, from the Missionary established Church, not in Doctrine, but in some *ancestral* innocent Modes of Worship : while at the same Time the heathen *Indians*, the principal Object of their Missions, as may well be imagined, neither Civilized nor Christianized, are wholly neglected by them ?

Inhabitants of the *Jersies*, Men, Women, and Children, are reckoned at about 50,000, whereof 10,000 may be reckoned Training Militia.

The valuation of the several Counties, that is their Proportions in every Thousand Pound Tax, a few Years since, stood thus,

EAST-JERSIES		WEST-JERSIES	
<i>Somerset</i>	£. 39	<i>Cape-May</i>	£. 31
<i>Monmouth</i>	169 10	<i>Salem</i>	144
<i>Middlesex</i>	115	<i>Gloucester</i>	86
<i>Essex</i>	136	<i>Burlington</i>	123 10
<i>Bergen</i>	82	<i>Hunterdon</i>	74
<hr/>		<hr/>	
£. 541 10		£. 458 10	

The two new out Counties of *Morris*, and *Trent*, seem hitherto not reduced to any Regulations.

Succession of Governors in the Province of New-Jersey.

The Affair of Governors is above intermixed with the History of the various Changes of the Property and Jurisdiction ; we shall now recapitulate what relates to Government and Governors in a connected and concise Manner.

The Duke of *York* had a Grant of the Property and Government of *New-Netherlands* from his Brother *Charles II*, *March* 12, 1663,4. Duke of *York* by Commission,
April

April 2, 1664 appointed *Richard Nichols*, Esq; his Lieut. Governor or Deputy of the whole *New-Netherlands*, but did not enter upon his Government until *August 27*, 1664.

Upon the Duke of *York's* Assignment *June 24*, 1664, of that Part called the *Fersies* to Lord *Berkley* and Sir *George Cortaret*, they appointed *Philip Cartaret* their Governor; after six Months Residence he went to *England*, and soon returned to his Government; but 1672, a turbulent People, to evade paying Quit-Rents, alledge that they did not hold of the Proprietors *Berkley* and *Cartaret* but by Indian Grants; they relinquished Governor *Cartaret* and chose a Governor of their own; Governor *Cartaret* went home with Complaints and did not return till *November 1674*, a Dutch Jurisdiction upon a Reconquest intervening from *July 1673* to *November 1674*; *Berkley* and *Cartaret* had a divisional separate Grant from the Duke of *York* 1674 and Sir *George Cartaret* sent over *Philip Cartaret* Governor of *East-Fersies*; Duke of *York* kept the Jurisdiction of *West-Fersy* in his own Hands by Deputies. *Nichols* and *Andros* were Governors of *New-York* and *West-Fersy* for the Duke of *York*.

Because of some differences between Governor *Andros* of *New-York* and Governor *Cartaret* of *East-Fersy*, *Andros* usurped the Government of *East-Fersy* 1680, and sent from *New-York* to *Elizabeth Town* some Soldiers, they used Governor *Cartaret* rudely, they broke open his House, carried him from his naked Bed on board of the Sloop to *New-York*, where he was kept Prisoner the greatest Part of the Year: Governor *Andros* favoured the Indian Grant Proprietors, with a Design to foment Divisions and Confusion, *divide et impera*: Upon Complaints sent home to the Duke of *York*, *Andros* was dismissed from that Government with a show of Resentment, and the Duke of *York* gave new Deeds to the Proprietors of the *East* and *West-Fersies*, with express Grants of these Powers, which Sir *Edmond Andros* pretended were wanting, the better to justify his former
Conduct;

Conduct ; by virtue of these new Grants dated 1680, the Proprietors were next Year, re-established in the *New-Jersies* ; *Philip Cartaret* died Governor of *East-Jersey*, November 1682 ; to prevent irregular Purchases of the *Indians*, the Assembly of *East-Jersey* 1683, passed an Act “ forbidding the taking of any Indian Deeds but in the Name of the Lords Proprietors, upon the Pain of being prosecuted as seditious Persons, and as Breakers of the King’s Peace, and of the publick Peace and safety of the Province” ; the same Act, but something more severe was passed in *West-Jersies*.

In the *West-Jersey*, upon the Duke of *York*’s quitting the Government to the Assignees of *Lord Berkley*, 1680 one of the Assignees or Proprietors was by them appointed Governor, and to him 1690 succeeded Dr. *Daniel Cox*, who had purchased the greatest Part of the *West-Jersey*.

In the *East-Jersey* upon the Duke of *York*’s new Deed to the Proprietors, *Robert Berkley*, a noted Quaker Writer was made Governor, sometimes he officiated by a Deputy, 1684 *Gawen Laurie* was his Deputy, and continued till 1685 ; soon after this, King *James* assumed the Government, but upon the *Revolution*, the Proprietors were restored to their former Rights, and appointed *John Totham* Esq; for their Governor, who was succeeded by Col. *Dudley*, but the People scrupled to obey them, and the Proprietors appointed Col. *Hamilton* for Governor.

After some Time the People alledged, that as a *Scotsman* he could not be Governor of an English Colony, and a Party of the Proprietors appointed Mr. *Basse* Governor ; soon after, another Party of the Proprietors did again appoint Col. *Hamilton* August 14, 1699, and not long after, some of the Proprietors appointed Mr. *Basse* again ; these Appointments were not confirmed by the King, Mr. *Bowne* superseded them ; these Times in the
East-

East-Jersies were called the *Revolutions*, † and was Governor when the Proprietors of both *Jersies*, because of Diffusions amongst themselves in appointing Governors, and from the Confusions occasioned by the Indian Grants Men, found it advisable to resign the Government, but no other of their Rights, to the Crown 1702.

Thus both *Jersies* were united in one Jurisdiction, and had for their Governor, the same Person who was Governor of the Province of *New-York*; see the Section of *New-York*, Vol. II. P. 249, viz. Lord Cornbury, Col. Hunter*, William Burnet Esq; Col. Montgomery, and Col. Cosby.

Upon *Cosby's* Death, Lieut. Governor *Clarke* 1736 succeeded in the Command of *New-York*, but not in that of the *Jersies*, which in Course fell into the Hands of the President of the Council of the *Jersies*; ever since, the Governors of *New-York* and of the *Jersies* have been in distinct Persons.

Lewis Morris Esq; formerly chief Justice of the Province of *New-York* was the first distinct Governor of the *Jersies*, he died *May* 14, 1746; to him succeeded

Jonathan Belcher Esq; formerly Governor of the Provinces of *Massachusetts-Bay* and *New-Hampshire*, see Vol. I. P. 481, was nominated by the King for Governor of the *Jersies*, and arrived there soon after: He continues Governor at this present Writing, *August* 1751. His

† During the *Revolutions* in the alternate Administrations of *Hamilton* and *Basse* from 1698 to the Resignation of the Government to the Crown, there were in the Province continued Confusions, mutual breaking of Goals, rescuing of Prisoners, beating and abusing of civil Officers; sometimes the chief Command was in the Council; the Resignation of those Governments to the Crown by Sir *Thomas Lane* Knight and Alderman of *London*, Agent for *West-Jersey*, and of *William Dockwray*, the famous Projector of the useful, and to the publick Revenue of *Great-Britain* beneficial Penny Post Office, Agent for *East-Jersey*.

* Governor *Hunter* was allowed by the General Assembly of the *Jersies*, during his Administration, £. 500 per Ann. Currency, and £. 100 for Contingencies.

first Meeting with the Provincial Assembly was *August* 22, 1746.

The Legislature, and some Municipal Laws of New-Jersey.

Their Legislature consists of three Negatives; the enacting Stile is, " *Be it enacted by His Excellency the Governor, Council, and General Assembly.*

The three Negatives, are 1. The Governor, styled Governor in chief, Vice Admiral, and Chancellor of the Province of *New-Jersey*.

2. The Council nominated by the King, their Complement is twelve, as it generally is in all our Colonies. The Governor and Council are a Court of Error and Chancery.

3. The House of Representatives in this Province, they are particularly called the Assembly; though in Propriety the Governor, Council, and House of Representatives of the People, met in a legislative Capacity, are the General Assembly of a Province or Colony. † This House of Representatives or Assembly consists of 24 Members, whereof 20 are Representatives of Counties, the other 4 from the Cities, so called, of *Pertb-Amboy* and *Burlington*, viz.

IN EAST-JERSEY.

From the County of

Bergen 2

Essex 2

Middlesex 2

Somerset 2

Monmouth 2

From the City of

Pertb-Amb. 2

—
12

IN WEST-JERSEY.

From the County of

Hunterdon 2

Burlington 2

Gloucester 2

Salem 2

Cape-May 2

From the City of

Burlington 2

—
12

† I can not account for such Improproprieties in our Colonies; thus in *Virginia*, the House of Representatives, is very improperly called the House of Burgesses, because *Virginia* is represented by Counties. In the Province of *North Carolina* adjoining to *Virginia*, they are guilty of the same Impropropriety,

The

The new Counties of *Morris County*, and *Trent County*, hitherto do not send Representatives.

All the Acts of the Assembly of *New-Jersey* must have the Royal Assent.

The House of Representatives is no Court of Judicature, but have the Privilege of enquiring into the male Administration of the Courts of Justice.

The *Magna Charta* or fundamental Constitution of the Province of *New-Jersey*, consists of three subsequent Sets of Concessions from the Proprietors, and of the perpetual Instructions for all successive Crown Governors as agreed upon 1702 at the Proprietors Resignation of the Government to the Crown: These are reckoned of a higher Nature, than the Acts of their Assemblies, and are termed by the Assembly, *the Laws of Concessions*. The first Concessions were 1664 from Lord *Berkley* and Sir *George Cartaret* joint Proprietors of *New-Jersey* by Assignment from the Duke of *York*. The second Concessions 1672 were from the said Proprietors jointly; the third Concessions were only for the *East-Jersey* by Sir *George Cartaret* 1674, upon the Duke of *York's* granting him a divisional Grant; these were only additional and explanatory of the first Concessions.

The Bounty Lands to the first Settlers called Head Lands, being so many Acres per Head of Settlers at one half Penny Sterl. *per Ann.* per Acre Quit-Rent. The Quit-Rents of the *Jersies* began *March 25*, 1670; the whole Arrears of Quit-Rents from the beginning to 1747, did not exceed £. 15000. The Bounty by the first Concessions was only for Heads imported in the first four Years, but by subsequent Concessions, it was continued to *January 13*, 1685. In other Patents to Purchasers the Quit-Rents were various as per Agreement, *v. g.* In *Newark* there are some Patents at *six Pence* Sterl. *per Ann* per 100 Acres.

The fundamental Laws of Concessions is, that all vacant Lands are to be purchased only by the Governor and Council in the Name of the Proprietors; and all
Claims

Claims to Lands otherways than by Warrant of Survey, by the Survey of a stated Surveyor, and Patent from the Governor and Council are deemed void : There have been only two remarkable Times of Purchase from the *Indians* 1664 under Governor *Nichols*, prior to the Acts of Concessions ; and 1672 under Governor *Cartaret*, but subsequent and contrary to the first Concessions. Several Tracts of Land have from Time to Time been purchased of the *Indians* by the General Proprietors. By Act of Assembly 1683, No Person to contract for, or accept of Deeds of Land from the *Indians*, but in the Name of the Proprietors.

In the Revolution Times, as they were called, in *New-Jersey* from 1698 to 1703, all Rules of Property were slighted, many Riots and much Disorder ensued, and by Remonstrances to King *William* all established Rules of Property were endeavoured to be everted, and Indian Purchases established, but in vain. Upon the Resignation of the Government to the Crown, and by an Act of Assembly 1703, declaring all Pretences by Indian Purchases only, to be Panal (Penalty 40s per Acre) Criminal, and void ; and by an Act 1713, a Penalty is imposed of 20s for every Tree cut by any Person upon Lands which are not his own Property ; Order was restored to the great Improvement of *New-Jersey*, and which was enjoyed till 1745, when Indian Purchases were set up again. Several Actions of Ejectment being brought by the Council of General Proprietors against the Tenants, so called, in Possession of the *Elizabeth* Rights, as holding only by a groundless Right of Title by Indian Deeds ; Anno 1746 the *Elizabeth* Men Petition the General Assembly, that a Way may be made for their Relief in the Province, or that they may have Liberty of Application to the Head and Fountain of Justice. Upon this ensued a Suit in their Provincial Chancery, as before related.

Some Articles in the *Concessions* were, that the General Assembly shall raise and pay the Governor's Sallary and all

all Charges of Government ; and that the Quit-Rents shall be paid to the Proprietors free of all Charges, no Quit-Rents to be applied for that Purpose.

To prevent interfering Claims and fraudulent Sales, there are only two Deputy Surveyors in a County, under a General Surveyor of the Province, and all Surveys are to be recorded as approved of by the Surveyor General.

Titles of Land are to be tried only in the supreme Court of Judicature.

Courts of Judicature.

The several Courts of Judicature are nearly of the same Constitution with the Courts in the Colonies already related. There is a supreme Court (in *New-England* they are called Superior Courts) for the *East-Jersey* Division held at the City of *Amboy* two Terms yearly, the third Tuesday in *March*, and second Tuesday in *August*, each of these with only eight Days Continuance. The supreme Court for the *West-Jersey* Division is held at *Burlington* first Tuesday in *November*, and second Tuesday in *May* under the same Regulations.

There are in each County once a Year, a Court for Tryal of Causes brought to Issue in the supreme Court ; those for *West-Jersey* are in the Spring, those for *East-Jersey* are in the end of *Autumn*.

In each County there are Courts of Quarter Sessions, and County Courts for holding Pleas, in *New-England* they are called Inferior Courts for common Pleas.

Produce, Manufactures, Trade, and Navigation of New-Jersey.

New-Jersey is a good Corn Country : it raises more Wheat than any one of our Colonies ; but their Wheat and Flower is mostly shipt off from *New-York* and *Pennsylvania*, they raise some Hemp and Flax.

They

They have not wrought their Copper Ore Mine for some Time.

They Manufacture some Iron Ore into Pigs and Bars.

In the Province of *New-Jersey* there are three Custom-House Districts, whereof two are in *West-Jersey* on *Dela-ware* River; *Salem* (this includes *Cobanzey*) about 9 Miles below *New-Castle*, and *Burlington* about 20 Miles above *Philadelphia*; these, as we have already observed, are of no Consideration, scarce deserving the Name of preventive Creeks; the third is in *East-Jersey* at *Pertb-Amboy*: The 12 Months Accounts of Entries and Clearances at the Port of *Pertb-Amboy* from *June 24, 1750, to June 24, 1751*, stand thus,

Entred Inwards		Cleared Outwards	
Ships	2	Ships	2
Snows	2	Snows	3
Brigantines	7	Brigantines	8
Sloops	18	Sloops	13
Scooners	10	Scooners	10
Shallops	2	Shallops	2
—		—	
41		38	

both foreign and coasting Voyages included. I shall only mention some of the most considerable Articles of their Exports and Imports in that Time.

<i>Exported</i>		<i>Imported</i>	
Flower	6424 Bar.	Rum	39,670 Gal.
Bread	168500 Wt.	Moloffes	31,600 Gal.
Beef & Pork	314 Barrels.	Sugar	2,089 Ct. Wt.
Grain	17,941 Bush.	Pitch, Tar,	} 437 Bar.
Hemp	14,000 Wt.	& Turpent.	
Some Firkins Butter, some		Wines	123 Pipes.
Hams, Beer, Flax Seed,		Salt	12,759 Bush.
Bar Iron, some Lumber.			

Some Miscellanies on various Subjects.

The Copper Ore of the *Jersies* is very good, but the Mine has not been Wrought for some Years, the difficulty

culty in draining requires a Fire Engine. The Copper Mines in *Simsbury Hills* in *New-England*, about 90 Miles N. E. from the Copper Mine in *New-Jersey*, have been neglected for some Years, because they not only dip too quick, and therefore are not easily drained, but also the Ore is of a hard Nature not easily fluxed, it is too much intermixed with Spar, the Veins or Loads very uncertain and unequal, and frequently only Shoads or Fragments.

In *British North-America*, hitherto no Discovery has been made of Tin Ores, nor of *Lapis, Calominaris*, very little Lead Ore, and that not good.

All over *North-America* is much Iron Ore, both Rock and Bog Ore. Three Tun of Bog or Swamp Ore gives about one Tun cast Iron Ware, which can be afforded cheaper than that which is imported from *England* or *Holland*. The Bars of Bog Ore have too much *Scoria* or Dross, and are much inferior to the Bars refined from the Pigs of Rock Ore.

In the *American* Rivers there are many Cataracts, Precipices, Pitches, or Falls; generally from the River passing over a Ledge or Ridge of Rocks; that of *Niagara*, formerly mentioned, between Lake *Ontario* and Lake *Erie*, is the most noted: There are some Cataracts or great Falls not from a Precipice of Rocks, but from a very narrow Pass in a Tide River; that near the Mouth of *St. John's* River on the N. W. Side of the Bay of *Fundy* in *Nova-Scotia* is the most noted; in this Case, from the narrowness of the Pass the Water not confined below, falls off faster than the Water confined above, the Water above is not only what the Tide of Flood brought in, but also the River Water damed up.

The higher up a Tide River, the Duration of Flood is less, and that of Ebb is more; for Instance, in the great River of *Canada* or River of *St. Laurence*, Anno 1748, a Flag of Truce was sent for Exchange of Prisoners from *Boston* in *New-England* to *Quebeck* in *Canada*, in this great River by Order of the General Governor of *Canada* they were stopt at *Liste des Basques*, (5 Leagues

Leagues below *Tadoussack*, and 35 Leagues below *Quebec*) where was good Anchorage † in 10 Fathom Water, the Tide flowed 5 Hours and ebbed 7 Hours.

Amongst the many Hardships which the first Settlers of new raw Colonies and Plantations suffer, one of the most considerable, is, their sitting down in Wilderness, Forrest, or Wood Lands; where by the Exhalations from the Trees, there is a continual damp, which does not continuedly disperse, but hovers about, and may be said in some Respect to stagnate and putrify, and consequently produce in these human Bodies many Kinds of putrid Disorders, such as *putrid lingring Fevers*, *putrid Dysenteries*, all sorts of *Scorbutick* Complaints, and the like Distemperatures. The Damp or Vapour from Woodlands, is much more considerable than from the same Lands when cleared of Trees and Shrubs: It is notorious in these Countries, that many Streams of Water which in the beginning came from Wood Lands, and carried Grist Mills and Saw Mills; when these Lands were cleared of Wood, their Streams vanished and became dry, the Mills ceased, and in some Parts the Cattle could not be conveniently watered: In the *Philosophical Transactions* of the Royal Society in *London*, we find many Observations and Experiments made relating to this Subject; for Instance, two Vessels containing each a certain equal Quantity of Water, in one of these Vessels were set some living Plants, after a certain space of Time, the Vessel containing Water with Plants did evaporate much more of the Water, than the Vessel of Water only.

† The *French* by their Representaitons of the difficult and dangerous Navigation of this River, endeavour to intimidate all other Nations from attempting the River; but now we find that it is safely practicable.





SECTION XIV.

*Concerning the Province of
Pennsylvania and its Territories.*

WE have already deduced these Settlements from their first *European Discoveries*, and from their Transition by the Name of *New-Netherlands* under the Dutch, to the Duke of *York's* Property by Patents from the Crown of *England*.

This Province and Territories are by three distinct Grants. 1. The Province of *Pennsylvania* by Patent from *K. Charles II*, dated *March 4, 1680*, 1. 2. The Duke of *York* 1683, *August 24*, sold to *William Penn* the Elder, his Heirs and Assigns, the Town of *New-Castle* alias *Delaware*, and a District of 12 Miles round *New-Castle*. 3. Duke of *York* by another Deed of Sale *August 24, 1683*, made over to said *William Penn*, his Heirs and Assigns, that Tract of Land from 12 Miles South of *New-Castle*, to the *Whore Kills*, otherways called *Cape Henlopen*, divided into the two Counties of *Kent* and *Sussex*; which with *New-Castle* District, are commonly known by the Name of the three lower Counties upon *Delaware River*.

As the three lower Counties or Territories are by distinct Deeds or Grants from that of the Royal Grant of the Province of *Pennsylvania*, when it was by the Proprietary left to their Option to be united with the Jurisdiction of the Province of *Pennsylvania*, or to continue a separate Jurisdiction; they chose to be a separate Jurisdiction, and

not to be as it were annihilated by a prevailing Jurisdiction: thus they continue at present two distinct Legislatures, Governments, or Jurisdictions, under the direction of one and the same Governor; but their Municipal Laws and Regulations are nearly the same.

K. CHARLES II's *Patent of the Province of PENNSYLVANIA* is dated *March 4, 1680, 1, of which an Abstract is, To our trusty and well beloved Subject William Penn Esq; Son and Heir of Sir William Penn Deceased, to reduce the Savage Nations by gentle and just Manners to the Love of civil Society and the christian Religion (with Regard to the Memory and Merits of his late Father in divers Services, particularly in the Seafight against the Dutch 1665, under the Duke of York) to transport an ample Colony towards enlarging the English Empire and its Trade, is granted all that Tract of Land in America, bounded Eastward on Delaware River from 12 Miles Northward of New-Castle to the 43 d. of Northern Lat. and to extend 5 d. in Longitude from said River; to be bounded Northerly by the beginning of the 43 d. of N. Lat. and on the South by a Circle drawn at 12 Miles distance from New-Castle Northward and Westward unto the beginning of the 40 d. of Northern Lat. and then by a strait Line Westward to the Limits of Longitude above-mentioned; saving to us and our Successors the Allegiance and Sovereignty, to be holden as of our Castle of Windsor in the County of Berks, paying Quit-Rent two Buck-Skins to be delivered to us yearly in our Castle of Windsor on the first of January, and the fifth of all Gold and Silver Oar, clear of all Charges. Erected into a Province and Seignorie, to be called Pennsylvania. Said William Penn &c. and his Lieutenants with the Assent of a Majority of the Freemen or their Delegates assembled; to raise Money for publick Uses, to establish Judges, Justices and other Magistrates, Probate of Wills and granting of Administrations included; to pardon or remit all Crimes and Offences committed*

within

within said Province, Treason and wilful Murder excepted, which however they may Reprieve until the King's Pleasure is known ; the Judges by them constituted to hold Pleas as well Criminal as Civil, personal, real and mixt : Their Laws to be consonant to Reason, and not repugnant to the Laws of *England*, reserving to us, &c. a Power to hear and determine upon Appeals. In all Matters the Laws of *England* to take Place, where no positive Law of the Province appears. A Duplicate of all Laws made in said Province shall in five Years be transmitted to the Privy Council ; and if within six Months, being there received, they be deemed inconsistent with the Prerogative or Laws of *England*, they shall be void. A Licence for our Subjects to transport themselves and Families unto the said Country. A Liberty to divide the Country into Towns, Hundreds, and Counties, to incorporate Towns into Boroughs and Cities, to constitute Fairs and Markets. A Liberty of Trade with all our other Dominions, paying the Customary Duties. A Power to constitute SeaPorts and Keys, but to admit of such Officers as shall from Time to Time be appointed by the Commissioners of our Customs. The Proprietors may receive such Impositions upon Goods as the Assembly shall enact. The Proprietors to appoint an Agent or Attorney to reside near the Court in *London* to answer for the default of the Proprietors, and where Damages are ascertained by any of our Courts, if these Damages are not made good within the space of one Year, the Crown may resume the Government until such Damages and Penalties are satisfied, but without any Detriment to the particular Owners or Adventurers in the Province. To maintain no Correspondance with our Enemies. A Power to pursue Enemies and Robbers even to Death. May transfer Property. To erect Manors, that may hold Court Barons. That the Crown shall make no Taxation or Imposition in said Province without Consent of the Proprietary, or Assembly, or by Act of Parliament in *England*. Any Inhabitants to the Number of 20 may by Writing

ing apply to the Bishop of *London* for a Preacher or Preachers.

An Abstract of Mr. Penn's Charter of Liberties and Privileges to the People 25th Day of the second Month, vulgarly called April, 1682. The Government shall be in a Provincial General Assembly composed of the Governor and Representatives of the Freemen, to make Laws, raise Taxes, constitute Courts and Officers, &c. The Freemen of the Province shall meet on the twentieth Day of the twelfth Month 1682, to elect 72 Persons for a Council, whereof 24 shall fall off yearly, and another 24 be elected in their Room, that many Persons may have Experience in Government; in Matters of Consequence two Thirds to be a Quorum, and the consent of two Thirds of such Quorum is requisite; in Affairs of lesser Moment 24 Members shall be a Quorum, and a Majority of these shall determine: the Governor or his Deputy to preside and have a treble Vote. This Council is to prepare and deliberate upon Bills to be passed into Laws by the General Assembly, to erect Courts of Justice with their Officers, to judge Criminals, to have the executive Power; shall model Towns, Ports, Markets, publick Buildings, and Highways; to inspect the Management of the Provincial Treasury, to order all publick Schools: This Council to be divided into four distinct Committees for distinct Branches of Business. The Freemen shall yearly chuse Representatives not exceeding 200, to meet 22d Day of the second Month (1683 for the first Time) and to continue eight Days, may appoint Committees to confer with Committees of the Council concerning Amendments of Bills, and the ninth Day shall give their affirmative or negative to the Bills presented; two thirds to be a Quorum in passing of Laws and choice of Officers; the enacting Stile to be, "By the Governor, with the Assent and Approbation of the Freemen in Provincial Council and General Assembly." The first Year the General Assembly may consist of all the Freemen

Freemen of the Province, and afterwards of 200 to be chosen annually, which as the Country encreases may be enlarged, so as never to exceed 500, at the Discretion of the Legislature. The Provincial Council shall on the 13th Day of the first Month yearly, present to the Governor or his Deputy a double Number for Provincial Officers; and the Freemen in the County Courts shall present a double Number to serve for Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace, and Coroners for the Year next ensuing; out of each Presentment, the third Day following, the Governor or his Deputy shall commisionate one; but Mr. Penn to appoint the first Officers to continue *ad vitam aut culpam*. The General Assembly may be called upon by the Governor and Provincial Council to meet at any Time. When the Governor shall be under the Age of 21, and no Guardians appointed by the Father, the Provincial Council shall appoint Guardians not exceeding three, with the Power of a Governor. No Article in this Charter to be altered without the Consent of the Governor and six Parts of seven of the Freemen in Provincial Council and General Assembly.

Besides these, there were some other fundamental Laws agreed upon in *England*. Every Resident who pays Scot and Lot to the Government, shall be deemed a Freeman capable of Electing and of being Elected. The Provincial Council and General Assembly to be sole Judges in the Elections of their respective Members. 24 Men for a grand Jury of Inquest, and 12 for a petty Jury, to be returned by the Sheriff. All Persons wrongfully imprisoned or prosecuted at Law, shall have double Damages against the Informer or Prosecutor. Seven Years Possession shall give an unquestionable Right, excepting in Cases of Lunaticks, Infants, married Women, and Persons beyond the Seas. A publick Register established. The Charter granted by *William Penn*, to the Inhabitants is confirmed. All who acknowledge one Almighty GOD, shall not be molested in their religious Persuasions in Mat-
ters

ters of Faith and Worship, and shall not be compelled to maintain or frequent any religious Ministry. Every first Day of the Week shall be a Day of Rest. None of those Articles shall be altered without consent of the Governor or his Deputy, and six Parts in seven of the Freemen met in Provincial Council and General Assembly. This was signed and sealed by the Governor and Freemen or Adventurers in *London* 5th Day of the third Month called *May* 1682.

There were certain Conditions agreed upon by the Proprietor, and the Adventurers and Purchasers, *July* 11, 1681, for Instance, convenient Roads and Highways be laid out before the dividend of Acres to the Purchasers; Land shall be laid out to the Purchasers and Adventurers by Lot. Every thousand Acres shall settle one Family. All Dealings with the *Indians* shall be in publick Market.

All Differences between the Planters and native *Indians* shall be ended by six Planters and six Natives. Laws relating to Immorality shall be the same as in *England*. In clearing of Land, one Acre of Trees shall be left for every five Acres, to preserve Oak and Mulberries for Shipping and Silk.

None to leave the Province, without publication thereof in the Market Place three Weeks before.

By a new Charter from the Proprietary second Day of the second Month 1683, there are some Alterations made in his first Charter, principally as to the Numbers of the Provincial Council and Assembly; that is the Provincial Council shall consist of 18 Persons, whereof 3 from each of the six Counties; the Assembly to consist of 36, that is 6 from each County; as the Country increases, the Provincial Council may be increased to any Number not exceeding 72; and the Assembly may be increased to any Number not exceeding 200; the other Articles are much the same as in the first Charter: the enacting Stile to be, “ *By the Governor, with the Approbation*

bation of the Freemen in Provincial Council and Assembly met," and the General Assembly shall be called, "The Meeting, Sessions and Proceedings of the General Assembly of the Province of Pennsylvania, and the Territories thereunto belonging. Nothing in this Charter to be altered, but by Consent of the Governor and six 7ths of the Provincial Council and Assembly.

This Charter of 1683, as inconvenient, was surrendered to Mr. Penn in the third Month of 1700 by six 7ths of the Freemen of the Province and Territories, and a new Charter granted; as this is now their standing Charter, we shall be more particular. The Preamble runs thus, WHEREAS K. Charles II^d granted to *William Penn* the Property and Government of the Province of *Pennsylvania* March 4, 1680; and the Duke of *York* granted to said *Penn* the Property and Government of a Tract of Land now called the Territories of *Pennsylvania*, August 24, 1683: And whereas the said *William Penn* for the Encouragement of the Settlers, did Anno 1683 grant and confirm to the Freemen by an Instrument entitled, *The Frame of the Government*, &c: Which Charter or Frame being found in some Parts of it, not so suitable to the present Circumstances of the Inhabitants, was delivered up as above; and at the Request of the Assembly another was granted by the Proprietary Mr. *Penn* in pursuance of the Rights and Powers granted him by the Crown, confirming to all the Inhabitants their former Liberties and Privileges, so far as in him lieth. 1. No Persons who believe in one Almighty GOD, and live peaceably under the Civil Government shall be molested in their religious Persuasions, nor compelled to frequent or maintain any religious Worship contrary to their Mind. That all Persons who profess to believe in JESUS CHRIST, are capable of serving the Government in any Capacity; they solemnly promising, when required, Allegiance to the Crown, and Fidelity to the Proprietor and Governor. 2. That annually upon the first Day of *October* for ever, there

there shall an Assembly be chosen, to sit the fourteenth Day of the same Month, *viz.* four Persons out of each County, or a greater Number as the Governor and Assembly may from Time to Time agree : with all the Powers and Privileges of an Assembly as is usual in any of the King's Plantations in *America* ; two thirds of the whole Number that ought to meet shall be a Quorum ; to sit upon their own Adjournments. 3. The Freemen at their Meeting for electing Representatives to chuse Sheriffs and Coroners ; the Justices in the respective Counties to nominate Clerks of the Peace. 4. The Laws of the Government shall be in this Stile, *By the Governor with the Consent and Approbation of the Freemen in General Assembly met.* 5. No Person to be licensed by the Governor to keep an Ordinary or Tavern but such as are recommended by the Justices of the County. 6. No alteration to be made in this Charter without the Consent of the Governor and six Parts of seven of the Assembly met. Signed *William Penn* at *Philadelphia* in *Pennsylvania*, *October* 28, 1701, and the twenty first Year of my Government. Notwithstanding any thing formerly alledging, the Province and Territories to join together in Legislation, Mr. *Penn* hereby declares, that if any Time hereafter within three Years, their respective Assemblies shall not agree to join in Legislation, and shall signify the same to me ; in such Case the Inhabitants of each of the three Counties of the Province shall not have less than eight Representatives, and the Town of *Philadelphia* when incorporated, shall have two Representatives. The Inhabitants of each County in the Territories shall have as many Persons to represent them in a distinct Assembly for the Territories, as be by them requested. Province and Territories shall enjoy the same Charter Liberties and Privileges. This Charter of Privileges was thankfully received the same Day by the Assembly, and signed by their Order ; and signed by a Number of the Proprietary and Governor's Council.

The Report is probable, that Mr. *Penn*, besides his Royal Grant of the Province of *Pennsylvania*, had moreover a grant of the same from the Duke of *York*, to obviate any Pretence, that the Province was comprehended in a former Royal Grant of *New-Netherlands* to the Duke of *York*.

Mr. *Penn*'s first Charter Concessions, or Form of Government to the Settlers, seems *Utopian* and Whimsical; constituting a Legislature of three Negatives, *viz.* the Governor, and two distinct Houses of Representatives chosen by the Freemen; one called the Provincial Council of 72 Members, the other was called the Provincial Assembly of 200 Members; the Council had an exorbitant Power of exclusive deliberating upon and preparing of all Bills for the Provincial Assembly; the executive Part of the Government was entirely with them. The Provincial Assembly, in the Bills to be enacted, had no deliberative Privilege, only a *Yes* or *No*; These Numbers of Provincial Council and Provincial Assembly seem to be extravagantly large for an infant Colony; perhaps he was of Opinion with some good Politicians, that there can be no general Model of Civil Government; the Humours or Inclinations, and Numbers of various Societies must be consulted and variously settled: A small Society naturally requires the Deliberation and general Consent of their Freemen for Taxation and Legislature; when the Society becomes too numerous for such universal Meetings; a Representation or Deputation from several Districts is a more convenient and easy Administration. His last and present standing Charter to the Inhabitants of the Province and Territories of *Pennsylvania*, *October* 28, 1701, runs into the other extreme; The Council have no Negative in the Legislature, and only serve as the Proprietaries Council of Advice to the Proprietaries Governor: 1746 by Act of Parliament, the Negative of the Board of Aldermen in *London*, for certain Reasons was abrogated. A Council chosen by the People, to negative Resolves of Representatives also appointed

pointed by the People seems to be a Wheel within a Wheel, and incongruous: But a Council appointed by the Court of *Great-Britain* as a Negative, seems to be good Policy, by way of Controul upon the excesses of the Governor on the one Hand, and of the People by their Representatives on the other Hand.

The Province of *Pennsylvania* some Years since was mortgaged to Mr. *Gee* and others for £. 6,600 Sterl. In the Year 1713, Mr. *Penn* by Agreement made over all his Rights in *Pennsylvania* to the Crown, in Consideration of £. 12,000 Sterl. but before the Instrument of Surrender was executed, he died Apoplectick, and *Pennsylvania* still remains with the Family of *Penns*.

Upon the first Settlement of *Pennsylvania*, Mr. *Penn* stipulated with the aboriginal Natives the *Indians*, that they should sell no Lands to any Person but to himself or his Agents; this was confirmed by subsequent Province Laws: on the other side, Mr. *Penn*'s Agents were not to occupy or make Grants of any Lands, but what were fairly purchased of the *Indians*; for Instance, a few Years ago, the Delegates of the six Nations of *Iroquois* for a certain Consideration in Goods, released their Claims to all Lands both sides of the River *Sasquabanna*, so far South as the Province of *Pennsylvania* reaches, and so far North as the *Blue* or *Kittatinny* Mountains, and received pay in Part; beginning of *July* 1742 the six Nations had a Congress with Governor *Thomas* and eight of his Council at *Philadelphia*, to receive the other Moiety as per Agreement; we shall take this Opportunity of presenting this as a Specimen of an Assortment of Goods in demand with the *Indians*.

24 Guns	60 Russ. Shirts	8 doz. Gimblets
600 lb. Powder	25 Hats	2 doz. Tob. Tongs
600 lb. Lead	1000 Flints	25 pair Shoes
25 pieces Strouds	50 Hoes	25 pair Stockings
90 pieces Duffils	50 Hatchets	25 pair Buckles.
30 Blankets	5 lb. Vermillion	
62 Yar. ha. thick	10 doz. Knives	

The Story of *William Penn's* obtaining the Grant of *Pennsylvania*, is in this Manner. Admiral *Penn* and General *Venable* were sent 1655 by *Oliver Cromwell* with a considerable Sea and Land Force to reduce *Hispaniola* in the *Spanish West-Indies*, which they did not effect, but reduced the *Spanish* Island now called *Jamaica*, which remains in Possession of the Crown of *Great-Britain* to this Day. Admiral *Penn* upon the Restoration became a Royalist, was knighted, and commanded the English Fleet under the Duke of *York* against the Dutch commanded by Admiral *Opdam* 1665. Admiral *Penn's* Son, *William Penn*, perhaps in some Whim, put himself at the head of the *Quakers*, and upon his Petition to the King, in Consideration of his Father's Services, and Arrears due from the Crown, he obtain'd a Royal Patent for the Province of *Pennsylvania* and a grant from the Duke of *York*, of the three lower Counties on the West Side of *Delaware Bay* and River, being part of *New-Netherlands* by Royal Grant to Duke of *York*, his Heirs and Assigns. This *William Penn* was much in favour with King *James II*, as being head of a considerable Body of Sectaries called *Quakers*; by Reason of this particular Countenance, Mr. *Penn* was suspected to be a *Papist*, and a *Jesuite* in the disguise of a *Quaker*; at the Revolution, upon this Suspicion, King *William* deprived Mr. *Penn* of the Privilege of appointing a Governor for *Pennsylvania*, and Col. *Fletcher* was appointed by the Crown, but upon Mr. *Penn's* Vindication of himself, he was restored to his Right of Government, and continued to appoint Lieut. Governors or Deputies as formerly.

The Boundaries of the Province and Territories of Pennsylvania, Rivers, and Distances of some noted Places.

The Northern Boundary of the Province, is the 42^d. parallel of Latitude, from *Delaware River* (about 20 Miles above the Station Point on *Delaware River*, where the North Easterly divisional Line between the Pro-

Provinces of *New-York* and *New-Jersey* begins) West, to the Extent of 5 d. in Longitude, being about 250 English Statute Miles; Thence in a Line parallel with the River of *Delaware* at 5 d. Longitude W. from the said River, to a parallel of Latitude 15 Miles South of the most Southern Part of *Philadelphia*, being about 153 Miles Strait Course; along this parallel 15 Miles South of *Philadelphia* to the River *Delaware* — Miles: Thence up along *Delaware* River to 42 d. N. Lat. which in a Strait Line may be about 153 Miles.

The Territories of *Pennsylvania* called the three lower Counties upon *Delaware* River, are bounded, Eastwardly by *Delaware* River, from the North Part of *New-Castle* territorial Circle, to Cape *Henlopen* at the entrance of *Delaware* Bay, about 80 Miles Strait, but much more as the Shore or Country Road runs: Southwardly and Westwardly they are bounded as per Agreement between Lord *Baltimore* of *Maryland*, and the *Penns* of *Pennsylvania* 1732, and confirmed in the Chancery of *England*, 1750 in these Words, “ That a due East and West Line be run from Cape *Henlopen* to the middle of the Peninsula, and the said Strait Line to run from the Westward Point thereof, Northwards up the said Peninsula (and above the said Peninsula, if it required) till it touched, or made a Tangent to the Western Part of the Periphery of the said twelve Miles Circle, and the said due South and North Line to run from such Tangent, till it meets with the upper or more Northern East and West Line, and the said upper East and West Line to begin from the Northern Point or End of the said South and North Line, and to run due Westward, (N. B. † this is a delineation of the South Line of the Province of *Pennsylvania*) at present cross *Sasquabanna* River, and 25

† In the Survey 1739, of the E. and W. divisional Line (about 15 Miles South of the Southermost Part of the City of *Philadelphia*) between *Pennsylvania* and *Maryland*; the Surveyors allowed a Variation of 5 d. 30 m. W. and found there was about one Degree Variation for every twenty late Years.

English Statute Miles at least on the Western Side of said River, and to be 15 English Statute Miles South of the Latitude of the most Southern Part of the said City of *Philadelphia*, were, and shall, and should at all Times for ever hereafter be allowed and esteemed to be the true and exact Limits and Bounds, between the said Province of *Maryland*, and the said three lower Counties of *New-Castle*, *Kent*, and *Sussex*, and between the said Provinces of *Maryland* and *Pennsylvania*." †

As the Controversy of a long Standing, concerning Boundaries, between Lord *Baltimore* of *Maryland*, and the *Penns* of *Pennsylvania*, has made much Noise; we shall insert a short Abstract of the same, for the Amusement of the Curious.

Lord *Baltimore's* Royal Grant of *Maryland* was about 50 Years prior to Mr. *Penn's* Grant of *Pennsylvania*, but in *Baltimore's* Grant there was an exception of Lands then belonging to the Dutch, which are at present the three lower Counties upon *Delaware* River; when Mr. *Penn* took Possession he found one *Dutch* and three *Swedes* Congregations.

The grand Dispute was concerning the Construction of the Expression 40 d. of Latitude; *Maryland* Grant 1632, says, to the 40 d. of Lat. which *Maryland* Side of the Question construe to be to 40 d. compleat; *Pennsyl-*

† They mutually Quit-Claim, viz. *Charles* Lord *Baltimore* Quit-Claims to *John Penn*, *Thomas Penn*, and *Richara Penn*, and their Heirs and Assigns, all his Pretensions to the Province of *Pennsylvania*, and the three lower Counties of *New-Castle*, *Kent* and *Sussex*, to be so bounded as aforesaid free of all Incumbrances by *Cecilius* Baron of *Baltimore*, Great Grand-Father, *Charles* Grand-Father, *Benedict* Father to said *Charles*, and by him the said *Charles*, his Heirs and Assigns. And on the other Side, *John Penn*, *Thomas Penn*, and *Richard Penn* for themselves and their Heirs Quit Claim unto *Charles* Lord *Baltimore* and his Heirs, all their Pretensions to the Province of *Maryland*, to be so bounded as aforesaid, free of all Incumbrances, by *William Penn* the Grand-Father, *William Penn* the Father, *Springet Penn*, *William Penn* the Son, *John Penn*, *Thomas Penn* and *Richard Penn* their Heirs or Assigns.

vania Grant 1682, says, to begin at the beginning of the 40th d. which the *Pensylvania* Side construe to be just after 39 d. is compleated; * thus there was a Dispute of the Extent of one Degree in Latitude or 69 English Miles.

Considering that *Maryland* Grant was Prior, and that the *Maryland* People had made considerable Improvements by Possessions, within that Degree of Latitude; the Affair was compromised seemingly in favour of *Maryland* by a written Agreement *May* 10, 1732, as is above related: and that in two Kalender Months from that date, each Party shall appoint Commissioners not more than seven, whereof three or more of each Side may act or mark out the Boundaries aforesaid, to begin at furthest some time in *October* 1732, and to be compleated on or before 25th *December* 1733, and when so done, a Plan thereof shall be signed, sealed and delivered by the Commissioners and their Principals, and shall be entred in all the publick Offices in the severall Provinces and Counties; and to recommend to the respective Legislatures to pass an Act for perambulating these Boundaries at least once in three Years.

The Party defaulting, to pay to the other Party on demand *six thousand Pound* Sterling; accordingly the Commissioners respectively appeared, but upon some Differences in Opinion, the Boundaries were not made in the Time limited; the failure was in Lord *Baltimore's* Side, who alledged that he had been deceived in fixing *Cape Henlopen* 20 Miles South Westerly of the Western Cape of *Delaware* Bay, whereas *Cape Henlopen* is the Western Cape it self; the *Penns* affirm, that the Western Cape is *Cape Cornelius*, and *Cape Henlopen* is about four Hours Southwardly of it, according to the Dutch Maps and Descriptions published about the Time when Lord *Baltimore* obtained his Grant.

* Thus in other Affairs; for Instance, in political Computation, after 1700, it is called the eighteenth Century.

Because of Nonperformance, the *Penns* 1735 exhibited a Bill in the Chancery of *Great-Britain* against Lord *Baltimore*, praying that the said Articles may be decreed to subsist and be carried into Execution, and that any Doubts arisen may be cleared by said Decree.

After tedious delays, at length *May* 15, 1750, Lord Chancellor decreed Costs of Suit against *Baltimore*, and that the Articles of *May* 10, 1732, be carried into Execution; and that before the End of three Kalender Months from *May* 15, they should execute two several proper Instruments for appointing Commissioners, not more than 7 of a Side; any three or more of a Side may run and mark the Boundaries, to begin some Time in *November* next, and to be completed on or before the last Day of *April* 1752, to be Signed, &c. Recorded, &c. and Enacted, &c. as per Agreement of 1732 above related. Lord Chancellor decreed concerning the late Disputes, 1. That the Center of the Circle be fixed in the middle of the Town of *New-Castle*. 2. That the said Circle ought to be of a Radius of 12 English Miles. 3. That Cape *Henlopen* ought to be deemed at the Place laid down in the Maps annexed to the Articles of 1732.

The Commissioners appointed by each Party met at *New-Castle*, *November* 15, 1750, they agreed on a Center in *New-Castle*, from whence the 12 Miles *Radij* are to proceed; but a Dispute arose concerning the Mensuration of these 12 Miles. Lord *Baltimore's* Commissioners alledged, that these Miles ought to be measured superficially; the *Penns* Commissioners alledged, that considering the various Inequalities of the Ground, such *Radij* could not extend equally, consequently from them no true Arch of a Circle could be formed, and insisted upon Geometrical and Astronomical Mensurations: Thus the Proceedings of the Commissioners stopt, and they wrote to their respective Principals for further Instructions relating to that Point, and adjourned to *April* 25, 1751.

The considerable Rivers in *Pensylvania* are *Delaware*
(*Schyl.*)

(*Schyl-Kill* River falls into *Delaware* at *Philadelphia*) and the *Sasquabanna*. *Delaware Bay* begins at *Lewis's* near *Cape Henlopen*; || from thence with the various Turnings of the Bay and River or publick Road to *New-Castle* are about 93 Miles; from *New-Castle* to *Philadelphia* are 35 Miles, from *Philadelphia* to *Trent Town Falls* are 35 Miles, these are the first Falls in this River, and the Tide reaches up so high; these Falls are practicable, and the River navigable with Boats that carry 8 or 9 Tuns Iron, 40 Miles higher to *Durham Iron Works*; this River proceeds from the West Side of the *Cat-kill Mountains* of the Province of *New-York*. From *Trent-Town Falls*, this River is practicable upwards of 150 Miles for Indian Canoe Navigation, several small Falls or carrying Places intervening. Mr. *Wh—ld* a late noted vagrant Enthusiastick Preacher, purchased a considerable quantity of Lands in the Fork of *Delaware River*, about 50 Miles above *Trent Town Falls*, for the education and civilizing of Negroes, as he pretended; but as he could not answer the Purchase Money, he was obliged to relinquish it. All his Schemes were ill projected and ill founded: His Grand Church or Meeting-House in *Philadelphia*, by him declared to be free to all Christian Itinerants, as he was a Man of no Penetration, he was not capable of finishing it, and it was transferred to a Society for propagating of Literature, a much more laudible Institution, than that of propagating Enthusiasm, Idleness, and sanctified Amours. His Orphan House in *Georgia* of *South-Carolina*, in a barren infalubrious Country, his first Project, pretence for Itinerant begging, is almost come to nothing.

The other considerable River is part of *Sesquabanna*; see Vol. II. P. 282, its main Branch comes from some Ponds a little South of *Mohawks River* in the Province of *New-York*; from the head of this Branch to the

|| At *Cape Henlopen* 1748, the Variation of the Compass was 4 d. W. decreasing.

Falls below *Wioming* * there is no Obstruction, and good Indian Canoe Navigation; and thence to *Paxton* are 5 or 6 Falls which may be shot pretty safely with a fresh: This River has many good Branches for Indian Skin Trade, some of these Branches communicate with the Countries beyond the Mountains. *Sesquabanna* River is wide but shallow. *Delaware*, *Sesquabanna* and *Potomack* are fordable by the Indian Traders in the Summer Season.

The Indian Traders set out beginning of *May* and continue 3 or 4 Months out; they buy the Skins not of the *Indians*, but of Settlers who deal with the *Indians*, called by the Dutch Name of *Handelaars* or Traders; they purchase only with Gold and Silver, and carry their Skins in Wagons to *Philadelphia*; the Road is about 20 Miles below the foot of the blue Mountains. They travel from *Philadelphia* to *Lancaster* 60 Miles (*Lancaster* is 10 Miles East of *Sesquabanna* River) thence 40 Miles to *Paxton* or *Harris's* Ferry, thence 40 Miles to *Shippensburg* in the Province of *Pennsylvania*, thence 45 Miles to *Potomack* River (the Width of *Maryland* is here about 20 Miles) which divides *Maryland* from *Virginia*. A few Miles West of *Potomack* River in *Virginia* for some Years have been used with good Effect by bathing and drinking some tepid medicinal Waters, they have no mineral Taste, and do not offuscate the Glass like *Bristol* hot Well Water.

In *Pennsylvania* there is no real Sea Line excepting the West Side of *Delaware* Bay. The Navigation of *Philadelphia* is almost every Winter stopt up by Ice for two or three Months. The Coast of *New-York*, *Jerseys* and *Pennsylvania* is free from Ship Worms or *Teredines*. Land Winds blow almost three quarters of the Year.

The Blue or Kittatiny Mountains begin in *Pennsylvania*, are about 900 Miles in Length and 70 to 100 Miles

* About 50 Miles below *Wioming* is the Indian Tribe of *Shamokin* in the Fork of *Sesquabanna*, and about 50 Miles below *Shamokin* is *Paxton* or *Harris's* Ferry.

across, not in scattered Peaks, but in uniform Ridges ; the further Ridges are much the largest and highest.

Concerning Indian Affairs.

I shall here mention some additional Observations concerning the *Indians* in general, and some of their late Treaties with the *British* Governments, particularly that of *Lancaster* in *Pennsylvania*, Anno 1744, as consisting of the greatest variety of Articles negotiated with three distinct *British* Provinces or Colonies.

When Tribes or Nations of *Indians* go to War against one another, they seldom make it up (the *Indians* are the most implacable of Mankind) but by the Destruction of one or the other Side, or by a slavish Submission. The *Iroquois* or Six Nations of *Mohawks*, as we call them, have for many Years been at War (these Wars are only clandestine Incurfions with Massacrees and Depredations) with the *Catawbas* and *Cherakees*, the *Cherakees* and six Nations as being too distant to annoy one another much, have come to some Accommodation, but the State of War with the *Catawbas* continues.

The *Pennsylvanians* never lost one Man by any French or Indian War, but in personal Broils and Encounters Persons have lost their lives on both Sides.

The *Mohawks* by the English give Name to all the six Nations, though the smallest of the Tribes. The *Tuscaroras* are an adventitious Tribe, being Emigrants or *Profugi* in the *North-Carolina* Wars 1712 and 1716, they were allowed to settle by the ancient five confederate Nations amongst them.

For some Time past, a kind of Party Division hath subsisted among the six Nations : The *Mohawks*, *Onondagues* and *Senecas* formed one Party ; the *Onoydes*, *Tuscaroras* and *Cayugas* the other Party.

The six Nations say that the *Delaware* and *Sesquabanna* *Indians* were conquered by them, and therefore have no Right to dispose of Lands.

The Indian Delegates at the Congress of *Lancaster*, well

well observed to the Commissioners from *Virginia*, *Maryland*, and *Pennsylvania*; that what the *Indians* received of them were Goods soon perishable, but what they received of the *Indians*, were Lands which endured for ever.

The *Indians* are supplied by the English with Provisions coming and going in all Treaties. * They have their Guns, Hatchets, and Kettles mended Gratis.

In all Congress's the *Indians* approve of each Article by a *Yo hab*, the English use a *Huzza*.

The *Indians* use peculiar Appellations for the Governors of the several Provinces or Colonies; for Instance, the Governors of *Virginia* are called *Affarogoa*, those of *Pennsylvania*, *Onas*; those of *Canada*, *Onando*; and lately they have fixed the Name of *Tocarry bogan* (signifying excellent) for the Governors of *Maryland*.

We may here observe, the great variety in the humours of distant Nations, we shall here Instance that of their Speech or Words; In the *East Indies* and *China*, their Words are generally Monosyllables, in the *West-Indies* their Words are generally Polysyllables of an uncouth length; thus the six Nations at the *Lancaster Congress*, say, all the World knows, that they had conquered (consequently their Lands at our disposal) several Nations on the back or West Side of the great Mountains of *Virginia*, viz. the *Conoy-uch such roona*, *Coch now was-roonon*, *Toboa ough roonon*, and *Conutskin ough roonaw*.

The six Nations by natural Inclination are disposed to Warlike Enterprizes, and are never at Peace with all their Neighbours. In a Speech at a Congress with the

* In the Appendix to a late History of the five Indian Nations, we have a pleasant or ludicrous Story of this Nature; in the *Lancaster Congress* with the *Indians*, 1744, the Commissioners of *Virginia*, *Maryland*, and *Pennsylvania*, having told the Indian Delegates of the six Nations, that the King of *Great Britain*, had lately beat the *French* both by Sea and Land; the Indian Delegates observed, that in Consequence, the English must have taken a great deal of Rum from the *French*, therefore you can the better spare some of that Liquor, to make us rejoice with you in these Victories.

English, they said that if Christians go to War against one another, they in Time make Peace together; but it is not so with the *Indians*.

The *Indians* when they pass by a friendly Fort march in a single Line, and salute the Fort by a running Fire.

Nanandagues is a second Settlement of Deserters from the six Nations; they live near *Montreal*.

The *British* Northern Colonies are the Frontiers and Defence of all other *British* Colonies, against the War-like robust Northern *Indians*; thus it has in all Times been in *Europe* and *Asia*, the hardy robust *Goths* (*Getæ* of *Asia*) *Vandals* &c. from the Northern Climates over-run the effeminate, indolent, relaxed Southerly People if not checkt; the *Indians* of the higher Latitudes in *North-America* and in *Cbili* of *South-America*, made a much better Stand against the *European* Intrusions, than the *Indians* of *Mexico* and *Peru* who live between or near the *Tropicks*.

It is conjectured that six hundred fighting Men may be afforded by the Indian Settlements on *Sesquabanna* River and its Branches.

In all our Northern Colonies, there are or have been reserved Lands for several Bodies or Villages of intermixed *Indians*.

Although the Northern Indian Tribes as to Numbers are contemptible, when compared with the *European* Nations, they ought to be kept in a political Awe to prevent their skulking Incurfions and Depredations upon our Frontiers when pushed on by a Rival *European* Power; this cannot be done by ridiculous Feints; for Instance, when we tell the *Indians* in some Congress as it happened 1746, that all the united Force of our Colonies with Ships of War and Soldiers from *Great-Britain*, are to muster to reduce *Canada*; but loon after nothing is done or so much as attempted; thus we loose our Credit with the *Indians*, and in Fact they have impune insulted us ever since, in *Nova-Scotia*, and *New-England* at the Instigation of the *Canada* French.

The *Indians* are a false but crafty People. In our late

late War with the *French* Nation and their *American* Colonies, several distant Tribes of *Indians* in expectation of Presents, said they would, though really did not design to relinquish the *French* Interest ; such were the *Shawanees* Town upon *Ohio* River, the *Massasegues* near *Les Etroits* between *Lake Erie* and *Lake Huron*, consisting of five Castles or Villages of about 800 Men, and the *Twightwees* on the *Oubeck* River in a Treaty at *Lancaster*, July 1748.

The most noted Congress with the Indian Delegates for many Years, was that in June 1744, held at *Lancaster* in *Pennsylvania*, consisting of Commissioners from the three Provinces of *Pennsylvania*, *Maryland* and *Virginia*, concerning a great variety of Articles, such as Quit-claiming of large Tracts of Lands to these Governments respectively, and receiving of Presents upon their Promise to assist the *British* Interest in the War lately commenced against the *French*.

1. They confirmed to the Proprietors of *Pennsylvania* all the Lands each Side of *Sesquabanna* River so far North as the Blue Mountains. They settled the Affair of some *Delaware* *Indians* killing and robbing of Mr. *Armstrong* a Trader and his two Servants.

2. The *Indians* complain, that the *Maryland* and *Virginia* People had settled some Land back of *Virginia* and *Maryland*, without Consent of the six Nations, or of any Purchase made from them, which Lands belong to the six Nations by their Conquest over the ancient Indian Possessors. Hereupon the *Indians* by an Instrument in Writing released all their Lands in *Maryland*, † to the *Maryland* Commissioners for £. 300 in Goods valued in *Pennsylvania* Currency ; we shall here give this

† About 100 Years since, the *Sesquabanna* or *Conastagoe* *Indians*, by Treaty granted all the Land now possessed by the People of *Maryland* to them and their Heirs from *Patuxen* River on the West Side of *Chesapeak-Bay*, and from *Choptank* River on the East Side of said Bay.

as an Instance of the Advance generally put by the English upon the English Prime Costs of Goods.

Strouds	from 5 to £. 7	Vermillion	9s
Shirts	6s	Flints per m.	18s
Half thicks	£. 3 13s 4d	Jews-Harps per doz.	3s 10d
Duffle Blankets	£. 7	Boxes per doz.	1s
Guns	£. 1 6s	Bar Lead per Ct. wt.	40s
Barrel Gunpowder	£. 26	Shot	40s

3. The Commissioners of *Virginia*, gave the *Indians* £. 200 *Pennsylvania* Currency in Goods, and £. 200 in Gold, as a Consideration for their Deed, recognizing the King of *Great-Britain's* Right to all the Lands that are or shall be by his Majesty's Appointment in the Colony of *Virginia*; and the *Indians* desire that they may have a further Consideration when the Settlements increased much further back, which the Commissioners agreed to. The six Indian Nations complain, the Treaty above 20 Years since made at *Albany* was not observed, viz. the middle or ridge of the Hill on the back of *Virginia* was fixed as a Boundary between the *Indians* who live upon reserved Lands in *Virginia*, and the *Indians* of the six Nations. Another Article was to settle an Indian Road to pass Southward on the back of *Virginia*. Another Article was to bury in Oblivion, a Skirmish which happened in the back Parts of *Virginia*, between some of the *Virginia* Militia there, and a Party of the Indian Warriors of the six Nations; upon this Account the Commissioners of *Virginia*, presented the *Indians* with Goods to the value of £. 100 Sterl.

4. As the *French* about this Time were declaring War against *Great Britain*; to retain the six Nations in the *British* Interest; after a proper Speech to the *Indians*, *Pennsylvania* made them a present in Goods value £. 300 *Pennsylvania* Currency: *Virginia* gave them Goods to the Value of £. 100 Sterl. and £. 100 in Gold, with a Desire that they would send some of their Children to be educated in *Virginia*, who might serve as Interpreters in Times to come; the *Indians* answered, that they were

not inclined to bring their Children up to Learning : The Commissioners of *Maryland* presented the *Indians* with £. 100 in Gold.

There are frequent Congresses of the *British* Provinces with their neighbouring Tribes or Nations of *Indians*, especially of the Provinces of *New-York* and *Pennsylvania* with the six Nations of *Iroquois* or *Mohawks*, to retain the *Indians* in the *British* Interest ; these have a good Effect, though generally they are only a piece of Formality with this Conclusion, that the *Indians* were pleased with their Presents and promised Fidelity ; sometimes Affairs of Consequence are transacted, thus at *Albany* in *August* and *September* 1746, there was a Treaty between Governor *Clinton* and Council of the Province of *New-York*, with Commissioners from the Province of *Massachusetts Bay* on the one Part, and the six united Nations of *Indians* depending upon the Province of *New-York* on the other Part ; to engage these *Indians* in the *British* Interest, against our Enemies the *French*, to be assisting in the Expedition against *Canada*, to be furnished with Arms, Ammunition, Cloathing, and Provisions, and in their Absence their Wives and Children to be taken care of. 1749, middle of *August*, there arrived in *Philadelphia* the Deputies of many different Nations, in order to transact some Affairs with the Government : The Deputies were of the *Mohawks*, *Oneides*, *Onondagues*, *Cayugas*, *Tuscaroras*, *Senecas*, *Shawanees*, *Nanticokes*, *Delawares*, *Mohagins*, and *Turlos* ; the whole Number of *Indians* arrived in *Philadelphia*, Women and Children included, were about 260.

Concerning the City and Port of Philadelphia, the Numbers of the Inhabitants in the Province and Territories of Pennsylvania.

Mr, *Penn's* Charter erecting *Philadelphia* (laying between *Delaware* and *Schuyl-Kill* Rivers,) into a Corporation

ration and City, is signed in *Philadelphia*, by *William Penn*, October 25, 1701, the thirteenth Year of the Reign of King *William* the third, and the one and twentieth Year of my Government, to consist of a Mayor, Recorder, Sheriff, and Town-Clerk, 8 Aldermen and 12 common Council Men, by the Name of the Mayor and Commonality of the City of *Philadelphia*: The first Sett to be appointed by Mr. *Penn*; and yearly thereafter on the first Day of the third Week in the eighth Month, the Corporation to meet, the Mayor or Recorder present with five or more of the Aldermen, and nine or more of the common Council, to chuse one of the Aldermen to be Mayor for that ensuing Year, and to fill up Vacancies of Aldermen and Common Council; all Officers to take the Declarations and Professions directed in the Provincial Charter. The Mayor, Recorder and Aldermen to be Justices of the Peace and of Oyer and Terminer; any four or more of them (whereof the Mayor and Recorder to be two) to hear all Cases Capital or otherways Criminal, and with the Sheriff and Town-Clerk to hold a Court of Record quarterly for determining of Pleas and other Matters. The Mayor and Recorder shall be of the Quorum of the Justices of the County Courts, Quarter Sessions, Oyer and Terminer and Goal Delivery in the said County of *Philadelphia*; and shall have Power to take Cognizance of Debts there, according to the Statute of Merchants, and of Action Burel. The Mayor to appoint the Clerk of the Market. The Sheriff to be the Water Bailiff of the Province. The Corporation have Power to remove any Officer of their own for Misbehaviour. No Meeting shall be deemed a Common Council unless the Mayor, Recorder, at least three of the Aldermen, and nine of the Common-Council be present; a Power to admit Freemen into the Corporation, to make By-Laws for the Government of the City, to impose Fines for the Use of the Corporation; none to be admitted Freemen, but such as have been resident in the City for two Years, and shall have an Estate of Inheritance

tance or Freehold therein worth *fifty Pounds* in Money. To have two Market Days every Week, the fourth and seventh Day, two yearly Fairs (each to continue three Days) *May 16*, and *November 16*. *Philadelphia* shall be a Port comprehending all Creeks and Landings of the Province.

The Situation of *Philadelphia* is bad, being at the Confluence of two large fresh Water Rivers, *Delaware* and *Schuyl-kill*, which renders their People obnoxious to *Pleuritick*, *Peripneumonick*, *Dysenterick*, and *Intermitting Fevers*; *communibus annis* in Proportion, they bury near double the Number of People that are buried in *Boston* of *New-England*: It is well Plan'd or laid out, in a Plain, consisting of 8 long Streets of two Miles, and 16 cross Streets of one Mile each, at right Angles, with proper Spaces for publick Buildings. As we observed before, the long Streets were laid out with much exactness 1682. N. 18 d. E; and *Anno 1742*, in some Law Controversies, Mr. *Parsons* Surveyor General of *Pennsylvania*, found them to be 15 d. E. which is a Difference of 3 d. in sixty Years, decreasing.

Philadelphia is nearly in 40 d. North Lat. and about 5 Hours or 75 d. West from *London*. In the Spring 1749, the Dwelling-Houses in *Philadelphia*, in Curiosity were numbered by 12 Persons, who each undertook a Part; Publick Buildings, Ware-Houses, and Out-Houses not included; in the several Wards, they were as follows, in all 2076.

South Suburbs	150	High Street Ward	147
Duck Ward	245	North Ward	196
Walnut Ward	104	Mulberry Ward	488
South Ward	117	Upper Delaware Ward	109
Chestnut Ward	110	Lower Delaware Ward	110
Middle Ward	238	North Suburbs	62

There were eleven Places of publick Religious Worship, viz. 1 Church of *England*, 2 Presbyterians, 2 Quakers, 1 Baptist, 1 Swedish Manner, 1 Dutch Lutheran, 1 Dutch Calvinist, 1 Moravian, 1 Roman Catholick.

I shall here interperse some Account of a laudable Academy in *Philadelphia* *, with a publick-spirited Design of encouraging Literature ; that is, political and natural Knowledge ; some good deserving Gentlemen, by voluntary Subscriptions, promise to pay annually for five Years, in proportion to each Subscription ; which Sum in Gross may amount to £. 5,000 *Pennsylvania* Currency. The Subscribers elect out of their Numbers 15 Trustees to manage the Stock, appoint Masters with their Salaries, make Visitations &c. At present they have three Masters and one Usher ; the first Master is called *Reſtor*, with an Usher under him, he teaches Latin in all its Gradations, even from the Rudiments if required, with a Sallary of £. 200 *Pennsylvania* Currency *per Ann.* besides the Perquisites from his Scholars, which is 20*s* Entrance, and £. 4 *per Ann.* for each Boy's Schooling : His Usher has £. 60 *per Ann.* with some Perquisite of Schooling Fees. There is an English School-Master at an Allowance of £. 150 *per Ann.* besides Perquisites from his Scholars at the same Rate with the Latin School. A Mathematical and Writing Master in the same Person allowed £. 100 *per Ann.* with Perquisites from Scholars as the other Masters have. The Boys at this Time (*May 1751*) are 60 to 70, increasing considerably. The English Master teaches in some Manner Grammatically to construe Sentences, to point out the Verb with its proper Antecedents and Relations. They have purchased at a cheap Rate, a fine commodious Building, it is that Meeting House upwards of 100 Feet long and 70 Feet wide, built in the *Enthusiastick* Times of *Whitefield* : The Trustees at the beginning were chiefly Presbyterians of the *New-light* kind, but in a few Years one half of them became *Moravians*, and a Dispute arose amongst them, which Party should establish a Minister, but as

* As this is a kind of Common-Place, the Reader may excuse my deviating from the strict formal stiff Rules of some pedantick Historians,

the Presbyterians had it originally, they kept it to the last: This Division subsisting, and the Work-men not above half pay'd, both Sides agreed to dispose of it for the Use above-mentioned, and the Work-men were pay'd off. The Subscribers and their Trustees hope before the Expiration of the five Years, to fall on Ways and Means to render it perpetual; they have applied to the chief Proprietor *Thomas Penn*, Esq; to render it perpetual, begging his Assistance and Countenance; but it seems Mr. *Thomas Penn* had in view the Establishment of such a Seminary, entirely on his own Foundation, but not in the City; therefore it's doubted whether he may ingraft his Scheme with this, or pursue his first Intentions: There is little or no hopes of receiving any Encouragement from the publick Legislature, the Majority of the Assembly being Quakers, who have a large publick Stock of their own for such a Purpose, and have finished a good commodious House of their own for a School, the Preceptor is a Quaker, with £. 100 Sterl. *per Ann.* besides Fees for teaching, he is to teach twelve of the poorer sort *Gratis*. †

That the Reader may make some estimate of the Proportions of the various Sectaries in *Philadelphia*, I shall here observe that in the last six Months of 1750, there were buried in *Philadelphia*,

<i>Swedes</i>	13	<i>Dutch Lutherans</i>	28
<i>Presbyterians</i>	26	<i>Dutch Calvinists</i>	39
<i>Baptists</i>	9	<i>Roman Catholicks</i>	15
<i>Quakers</i>	104		

Burials for the 12 Months of 1750, Christ Church Parish, Church of *England* 129. Negroes 84.

† As I formerly mentioned, Vol. II. P. 283, in *New-Jersey* there is a College lately erected by Governor *Belcher*, with ample Charter Privileges, but without any support from the Publick, they depend entirely on Donations and Benefactions, excepting that by Means of Lottery they raised £. 1000 to 1200, to make a beginning; a fixed Place has been much controverted: They have a Divinity Professor, a Professor of natural Philosophy, and a Master of a Grammer School, all poorly provided for.

Anno 1751, In *Philadelphia* were estimated about 11,000 Whites, 600 Blacks. In the Province of *Pennsylvania* and its Territories, no regular Estimate can be made of the Inhabitants, because there is no Poll Tax, nor any Militia List allowed for Alarums, or common Trainings, as in the other Colonies, to form Estimates by.

There is only one Custom-House Collection in the proper Province of *Pennsylvania*, called the Port of *Philadelphia*; to form some Notion of the extent of its Trade and Navigation, I have inserted the following Table by way of a Specimen of what may be composed for each Custom-House Port in *British North-America*, from the Custom-House quarterly Accounts sent home.

Delaware River or the Port of *Philadelphia* is generally frozen up, and has no Navigation in the Months of *January* and *February*.

The following is an Account of Entries and Clearances of Vessels at Philadelphia, from March 1, 1748,9, to December 25, 1749.

Entred Inwards, from		Cleared Out, for	
Antigua	12	Antigua	14
Anguilla	5	Augustine	3
Augustine	4	Amboy	2
Amboy	3	Anguilla	3
Barbados	29	Barbados	22
Boston	39	Boston	41
Bristol	1	Bermuda	7
Bermuda	11	Cadiz	2
Cadiz	5	Cape-Breton	1
Cagliari	2	Corocoa	6
Corocoa	2	Chebuſta	3
Cowes	21	Fiall	2
Deal	1	Ireland	19
Glasgow	1	Jamaica	22
Hispaniola	5	Lisbon	2
Havanna	4	London	5
Ireland	17	Lewis-Town	1
	<u>Jamaica</u>		<u>Madeira</u>

Entred Inwards, from		Cleared Out, for	
Jamaica	13	Madeira	15
Lisbon	5	Maryland	8
Liverpool	3	Newfoundland	5
London	9	New-York	6
Lewis-Town	2	North-Carolina	6
Madeira	7	Nantucket	2
Maryland	4	New-London	1
New-York	15	Providence	8
North-Carolina	5	Rotterdam	1
Nantucket	4	Rhode-Island	25
New-London	1	South-Carolina	23
Portsmouth	1	St. Christophers	8
Plymouth	1	Surranam	1
Providence	8	St. Eustatia	6
Rhode-Island	23	Salem	2
South-Carolina	10	Teneriffe	1
St. Christophers	5	Virginia	12
St. Eustatia	3	West-Indies	6
Salem	3		---
Turks-Island	8		In all 291
Tortola	1		<i>In this List, is</i>
Teneriffe	2	Ships	64
Virginia	7	Brigs	68
	---	Snows	26
	In all 303	Scooners	21
	<i>In the above List, is</i>	Sloops	112
Ships	62		---
Brigs	72		Total 291
Snows	25		
Scooners	25		
Sloops	119		

Total	303		

There are now remaining in the Harbour, 19 Ships, 9 Snows, 8 Brigs, 2 Scooners, and 1 Sloop. In all 39.

As in the Province of *Pennsylvania*, there is no Poll Tax, neither any Militia incorporated and regulated; we can give no Estimate of their Numbers of Whites and Slaves, by proportional Calculations. There

There never was any Militia within this Colony on a legal Establishment ; what not long ago appeared and made such a Show by their Numbers, were only Volunteers commissioned by the Governor : The *Quakers* have always been about three Quarters of the Assembly, though in Number perhaps not exceeding one Quarter of the People ; the *Quakers* artfully persuade the *Dutch* and *Germans*, that if they chuse others than *Quakers* for their Representatives, they would immediately have a Militia Law imposed on them, which would subject them to greater Slavery, than what they suffered in their own Country.

This Colony by Importation of Foreigners and other Strangers in very great Numbers, grows prodigiously ; by their laborious and penurious Manner of living, in Consequence they grow rich where others starve, and by their superior Industry and Frugality may in Time, out the *British* People from the Colony. The greatest Year of Importation of *Germans*, *Irish*, a few *Welch* and *Scots*, was from *December* 25, 1728, to *Decemb.* 25, 1729, being about 6,200 Persons : In the Year 1750, *Germans* imported into this Province and Territories, were 4,317 ; *British* and *Irish* Passengers and Servants above 1000.

We omitted to observe, that some *Palatines* who came over to *New-York* by Queen *Anne's* Bounty, 1707, in the Province of *New-York*, they were not allowed a sufficient Encouragement of quantities of Land ; and by Encouragement of Sir *William Keith* Governor of *Pennsylvania*, they removed to *Pennsylvania*.

The Numbers of Foreigners, principally *Germans*, imported into this Province or Colony, in the Course of about 25 Years last past, has been so excessive ; that if it is not limited by a Provincial Act, or by the dernier Resource, an Act of the *British* Parliament, the Province and Territories of *Pennsylvania*, may soon degenerate into a foreign Colony, endangering the Quiet of our adjacent Colonies.

The Legislature.

In the Colony are only two Negatives in the Legislature, the Governour and House of Representatives, called *the Assembly*. The Council so called, is only the Proprietors Council to the Proprietors Governor, but not a King's Council; they have no Concern in the Legislature otherways than by advising the Governor in his Negative. The Acts of Legislature run thus; *Be it enacted by the Honourable——Esq; Lieutenant Governor of the Province of Pennsylvania, and of the Counties of New-Castle, Kent and Suffex on Delaware River; by and with the Consent of the Representatives of the Freemen of said Province, in General Assembly met.*

The Governor of *Pennsylvania* is only the Proprietaries *Penns* Deputy, and is stiled Lieutenant Governor and his Honour; his Sallary in late Years has been *per Annum* £ 1000 Currency out of the Excise Duty for the Province of *Pennsylvania*, and £ 200 *per Ann.* from the Territories called the three Lower Counties. By Act of Parliament, all Lieutenant Governors or Deputies nominated by Lords Proprietors or principal hereditary Governors of *British* Colonies in *North-America*, must have the Royal Approbation.

The proper Province of *Pennsylvania* was at first divided into the three Counties of *Philadelphia*, *Bucks* and *Chester*, each sending eight Representatives to the Assembly; about 20 Years since was added the County of *Lancaster* sending four Representatives; and lately an Addition is made of two new Counties back inland, by the Names of *York* and *Cumberland*, they are allowed only two Members each; with two Representatives from the City of *Philadelphia* make thirty four Representatives, which compose the House of Assembly. The Qualification for an Elector or Elected, is, a Freeman Resident in the Country for two Years, and worth in real or personal Estate, or both jointly, the Value of *Fifty Pounds* their Currency, which if required, is to be declared upon Oath or Affirmation.

The three Lower Counties on *Delaware* River called the Territories, are a distinct Jurisdiction, and their Assembly of Representatives consist of six Members from *New-Castle* County, six from *Kent*, and six from *Sussex* Counties, in all eighteen Members.

Their General Assemblies are annually elective on the first Day of the Month of *October*. The Representatives are not by Towns or Parish Elections (*Philadelphia* excepted) as in *New-England* Colonies, but by County Elections. *Pennsylvania* proper, called the Province, for many Years, consisted of only three Counties called the Upper Counties, viz. *Buckingham* County, chief Town *Bristol*, nearly over-against *Burlington* of the *Jersies*: *Philadelphia* County, chief Town *Philadelphia*, in about 40 d. N. Lat. And *Chester* County, chief Town *Chester*, about 15 Miles (on the River) below *Philadelphia*, and a few Years since was made the Inland County of *Lancaster*, chief Town *Lancaster*, laying both Sides of *Sesquahanna* River; and very lately two more Inland Counties, *York* and *Cumberland*. The Territories are called the three Lower Counties on *Delaware* River, viz. *New-Castle* County, chief Town *New-Castle*, about 35 Miles below *Philadelphia*: *Kent* County, chief Town *Dover*: and *Lewis* County, chief Town *Lewis* or *Horekil*, near *Cape-Henlopy* of *Delaware* Bay.

Courts of Judicature.

Juries are all returned by the Sheriff, excepting in particular Cases, but not often, there may be a struck Jury by Consent of Parties, and that must be in the Presence of one of the Judges, the Sheriff, and the Parties.

The Sheriffs and Coroners are annually elected at the same Time with the Representatives, by a County Election; the People elect two for each Office, out of which the Governor chuses one, who in the same Manner may be re-elected for three Years running, but after three Years, can not be re-elected, but by the intervention of three Years out of Office, and then is capable of a new Election.

Justices

Justices of the Peace, are all of the Governors appointing, and sit in Quarter Sessions, conformable to the Laws and Institutions of *England*.

The Judges of the Common Pleas are the Justices of the Peace in each respective County; when the Quarter Sessions are finished, they continue to sit in Quality of the Judges of Common Pleas by Commission from the Governor. Their present Times of Sitting are,

For the County of *Philadelphia*, at *Philadelphia* the first Monday in *March*, *June*, *September* and *December*.

For the City of *Philadelphia*, the Mayor's Courts are the first Tuesday in *January*, *April*, *July*, and last Tuesday in *October*.

For the County of *Buckingham*, or *Bucks* at *New-Town* (11 Miles West from *Bristol*) on the eleventh Day following the Courts of *Philadelphia* County.

For the County of *Chester*, at *Chester* the last Tuesday in *May*, *August*, *November*, and *February*.

For the County of *Lancaster*, at *Lancaster* first Tuesday in *February*, *May*, *August*, and *November*.

For the County of *Suffex*, at *Lewis*, the first Tuesday in *February*, *May*, *August*, and *November*.

For the County of *Kent*, at *Dover*, the second Tuesday of the last said Months.

For the County of *New-Castle*, at *New-Castle* the third Tuesday of said Months.

The supreme Court consists of a chief Justice and two Assistant Judges commissioned by the Governor: They have all the Authority of the *King's Bench*, *Common-Pleas*, and *Court of Exchequer* in *England*, in the Words of the Provincial Law; they not only receive Appeals, but all Causes once commenced in the Inferior Courts, after the first Writ, may be moved thither by a *Habeas Corpus*, *Certiorari*, Writs of Error, &c.

The Judges of this Supreme Court have also a Standing and distinct Commission, to hold as to them shall seem needful, Courts of Oyer and Terminer, and general

Goal Delivery throughout the Province, and are Justices of the Peace in every County.

The supreme Courts in *Pennsylvania* are held at *Philadelphia*, tenth Day of *April*, and the twenty-fourth Day of *September*.

There is an Officer called the *Register General*, for the Probate of Wills and granting Letters of Administration, whose Authority extends all over the Province, but executed by a Deputy in each respective County, except at *Philadelphia*, where he is obliged to reside himself. He or his Deputies in Case of any Dispute or Caveat entered, may call two of the Justices of the Peace to assist him in giving Decisions. The Authority of this Officer, and of all the others above-mentioned, is founded on Acts of Assembly, empowering the Governor to commission and appoint such as seem to him qualified for that Purpose.

The *Court of Vice-Admiralty*, is, as in the other Colonies, by Commission from the Admiralty in *England*.

The *Justiciary Court of Admiralty*, is, as in the other Colonies, by Commission under the Broad Seal of *England*, some of the neighbouring Provinces being included in one and the same Commission; the Judges are the Governors, Councils, Captains of Men of War, principal Officers of the Customs, and some Justices of the Peace.

The present Taxes, or Provincial Revenue.

This consists of, 1. *Excise*, which is 30s per Pipe of Wine, and 4d. per Gallon of Rum sold in publick Houses; may amount to about £. 3,000 Currency; it would be much more if properly collected. 2. The *Interest Money* of their Paper Currency let out by the Loan Office on Land Security, which may be about £. 5,000 per Ann. These two Articles have hitherto been sufficient to pay the Governor and other Officers of the Government, to defray the Charges of Treaties and Presents

to the *Indians*, and in general for all publick Charges whatsoever.

Moreover, there is in each respective County, a County Tax towards their Courts of Justice, High ways, Bridges, &c. and a Poor Tax. Yearly at the same Time with the Election of Representatives in each County, are elected six Assessors and three others called a Court of Delegates; these Delegates are to Sit and receive Appeals from People who think themselves aggrieved in their Assessments. The Assessors without any further Enquiry, by the Assistance of the former Years Books, make what Judgment they think proper of every Man's Estate and Faculty, and Rate them from 2*d* to 3*d* in the Pound; they can not go higher by Law. Here, as every where, the assessed are under rated; thus a Person in Truth worth £. 10,000, is returned upon their Lists worth £. 200 to £. 300, and to pay 2*d* in the Pound; thus this Tax falls heaviest upon the lower sort of People.

Produce, Manufactures, Trade, and Navigation.

Their Produce is all sorts of British Grain of the Bread kind, Indian Corn, Buck Wheat; Hemp, and Flax; Flax-Seed is a considerable Exportation to *Scotland* and *Ireland*; some Tobacco, and Bees Wax.

This may be called a Grain or Corn Country, and adapted to Flax and Hemp.

They Manufacture Wheat into Flower, and Flower into Bisket; the largest Branch of their Export is Flower, which bears a better Price abroad, than that of *New-York*. Five Bushels Wheat yeilds about one hundred and three Quarters merchantable Flower; the Garnel or second Flower pays for Cask and all other Charges. They Manufacture their Barley into Malt, and Malt into Beer and Ale for Export.

The Irish manufacture considerably of * Linnen Cloth for Sale, besides for home Consumption ; perhaps in this Country, the Farmers, that is, the Husbandmen, make nine Tenths of all their wearing Apparel.

At present the Flax-Seed from *Pennsylvania*, *Jersey*, *New York*, *Connecticut*, and other Parts of *New England*, answers better at Home, in Cultivation, than what has been imported for many Years from *Holland*.

Besides the above-mentioned Commodities of Exportation ; the *Pennsylvania* Indian Traders, purchase Deer-Skins and a few Furs from the *Indians* of *Delaware* and *Sesquahanna* Rivers, and from the *Handelaars*, back of *Maryland* and *Virginia* ; they export considerably of Iron in Pigs, Bars, and Pots : Ship Building, but their Oak is not durable : Cordage, Lintseed Oyl, Starch, Soap, Candles ; some Beef, Pork, Butter, Staves, Heading and Hoops, Walnut Logs and Plank.

The Commodities imported for Consumption and Re-exportation, are dry Goods from *Great-Britain* ; Wines from *Madera*, and the other Wine Islands ; Salt from

* Concerning the British Consumption of Linnen Cloth, we may observe, 1. That the Linnen Cloth stampd in *Scotland* for Sale, is very much upon the Increase, as appears by Estimates made in the following Periods. N. B. The Cloth at a Medium is valued at 8d to 11d Sterl. per Yard.

Years	Yards	Value
1729,	2,183,978	103,312 Sterl.
1739,	4,801,537	196,068
1749.	7,360,286	322,045

2. Irish Linnen imported into *England* for seven Years from Christmas 1741, to Christmas 1748, as per Custom-House Books, at a Medium, is about six Millions of Yards *per Ann.* 3. Besides all these, the British Demand or Imports of Foreign Linnen is about 30 Millions of Yards *per Ann.* Here is a large Field of Encouragement for our *Northern American* Colonies, proper for the Production of Flax and Hemp, to supersede this large Importation of *German* Linnen : This can not be effected, but by a great Encouragement of our Grain and Pasture Colonies to lower the too great Plantation Price of Labour, and the better manuring of their Lands.

Great-

Great-Britain, France, † Spain, Lisbon, Mediterranean and West-India Islands; from the *West-Indies* or Sugar Islands and other Colonies, Sugar, Rum, Moloffes, Cotton, Indigo, Coffee, Dying Woods, Mohogany Plank, &c. from the *Spanish Coast and Carolinas*, Hides, Rice, Pitch, Tar, Turpentine, &c. they import many Black or Horned Cattle far and near, from *South-Carolina* Southward, and from 300 Miles Westward, and from the *Ferries*.

Most of the Dutch Husband-men have Stills, and draw a Spirit from Rye malted, from Apples and Peaches. There may be from 7000 to 8000 Dutch Waggons with four Horses each, that from Time to Time bring their Produce and Traffick to *Philadelphia*, from 10 to 100 Miles Distance.

Their Navigation may be distinguished into small Craft, that keep within the Capes, and only bring Produce to Market: As the Province of *Pennsylvania* reaches only 15 Miles below *Philadelphia*, most of this sort of Trade is carried on from the three Lower Counties on the West Side of the great River of *Delaware*, and all the *West-Ferries* which lies along the East Side of that River: these are not comprehended in the Custom-House Entries and Clearances of the Port of *Philadelphia*.

To illustrate the gradual Increase of the Trade of the Port of *Philadelphia*, we observe, that *Anno* 1736, the Entries were 212, Clearances 215 Vessels; A little before the late *French War*, *Anno* 1742, Entries were 230, Clearances 281. The Number of Vessels cleared from that Port for twelve Months preceeding *March* 12, 1750, 1, is 358; those that were bound to the Northward of *Delaware Capes*, viz. to *New-York, Rhode-*

† By an Act of Parliament for the Encouragement of the Fishery 1727, Salt is allowed to be imported in *Pennsylvania*, from any Part of *Europe*. There is a like Act of Parliament for the Encouragement of the curing of Fish in *New-York*. Though there may be a Mistake in alledging the Fisheries of *New-York* and *Pennsylvania*, because there are no Fish cured there; yet in sundry other Things it may be beneficial.

Island, Boston with its out Ports, *Hallifax*, and *Newfoundland* make about 90 of that Number ; to *Virginia, Maryland, North* and *South-Carolina*, and *Georgia* about 29 ; the Remainder Sail for *Europe* and the *West-India* Sugar Islands and Colonies ; the Craft that go to the Southward, *Virginia, Maryland, &c.* are of no great Value, but those who go to the Northward, especially to *Boston*, and *Rhode-Island* are generally of more Value than the Vessels that go to the *West-Indies*, some of them carry 500 to 600 Barrels of Bread and Flower.

They build about 20, or upwards, Vessels that go to Sea from *Philadelphia*.

The Custom-House Officers in this Colony, have the largest Sallaries of any in *North-America* : The Collector of the Port of *Philadelphia* is a Patent Officer ; in the proper Province this is the only Collection ; in the Territories called the three lower Counties are two Collections, *New-Castle* and *Lewis*.

I can not account for the many Custom-House Collections upon the River of *Delaware*, there are two on the *Jersey* Side, and three on the *Pennsylvania* Side, excepting the Custom-House of *Philadelphia*, the others are nominal and *Sine Cures*, and might have been called Branches and Creeks of *Philadelphia* ; besides usual Officers, there is on the *Pennsylvania* Side, an extraordinary Officer who may be called a Comptroller General, a riding Officer to examine and sign the Accounts of the respective Collectors.

Before any Bills of publick Credit were emitted, the Currency of *Pennsylvania* was Proclamation Money, a heavy Piece of Eight was 6*s* in Denomination ; but by the Emissions of publick Credit Bills, † as in all the Colonies, who went into a Paper Currency ; their Deno-

† The publick Bills of Credit in the Plantations were called a *Paper Currency*, because they were transferable ; and in several of the Colonies enacted to be a Tender in Law.

minations did depreciate, and at present a Dollar or weighty Piece of Eight passes for 7s 6d Denomination, but by the good Management of their Paper Loan Office, the intrinsic Value of their Denominations, has not depreciated further. The Interest of this Loan Money produces about £. 5,000 Currency *per Ann.* which with the £. 3,000 Excise, defrays the Charges of Government. Their first Emission of a Paper Currency was about 27 Years ago.

Religion Sectaries.

The various Plantation Sectaries have been already mentioned, in a general Digression in the Section of *Rhode-Island*; but as the *Moravians* and *Dumplers* are peculiar to this Colony, what is further to be observed concerning them, is here inserted.

In Vol. II. P. 155, we mentioned that the *Moravians* had lately obtained a *British* Act of Parliament indulging them in many Things; particularly, that their *Affirmation*, Quaker-like, shall be equivalent to an *Oath*, but with some Restrictions. There are about 800 to 900 *Moravians* who have already transported themselves to this Colony, and many more may be expected, because since the passing the Act of Parliament in their Favour, the several Tolerations they had in *Germany*, *Holland*, and *Danmark*, are taken from them; the Reasons for so doing, I have not as yet learn't; but by Edicts, their Books, Hymns, and Publick Worship, are ordered to be suppressed.

In Vol. II. P. 150. we mentioned a Branch of the *German* Anabaptists called *Dumplers*; they are generally ignorant People, but some of their Heads are not so; for Instance, *Peter Miller* a *German*, writes elegantly in Latin upon Religion and Mortification: They have a Printing Press, and are continually Printing; they are very curious in writing fine, and delight much in Scrouls of Writing on Religious Subjects, stuck up in their Halls and Cells, the initial Letters are beautifully illuminated

minated with Blue, Red, and Gold, such as may be seen in old Monkish Manuscripts.

I am again fallen into the disagreeable Subject (where Offence to some or many is unavoidable) of Sectaries or Parties in Religious Affairs : what here follows was designed for the Appendix, but as I now find that a long Appendix containing many loose, not connected Matters, may be tedious to the Reader ; I shall in the several Sections following, occasionally intersperse many Things designed for the Appendix.

Some Years since, viz. 1722, there was a considerable Seccession in the S. W. Parts of *Connecticut*, of Congregationalist Ministers and Candidates, to better themselves in Livings by Church of *England* Missions : from this Incident, there has lately been revived a sophistical Dispute, whether the established old Congregationalist Ministers, or the late new Converts, Church of *England* Missionaries, are to be deemed the *Separatists*. The Decision seems to be easy, by relating only Matters of Fact. By a Fundamental, in the Articles of Union, 1707, of *England* and *Scotland*, the Church of *England* in express plain Words, is declared to be established in all the English Plantations ; but this seems to be only as to Church Government, and that only amongst the People of the Church of *England* ; the other Sectaries can have no Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction even amongst themselves, as appears by the annexed Determination of the Lords Justices *Anno* 1725 ; but in their various Modes of Worship (*Roman Catholicks* excepted) all Christian Professions are tolerated in Perpetuity, and in as ample Manner, as if they were Churches established by Law. If any Sectary who prevail in the Legislature of any Colony, impose upon the other Sectaries ; they are checkt by the King in Council, all the Colonies being under the immediate Inspection of the King in Council ; we here adduce the annexed Case of the Act of the Assembly of *Connecticut*, against *Quakers*, &c.

A true Copy of a Letter from their Excellencies the Lords Justices, to the Hon. W—— D——, Esq; Lieutenant Governor of his Majesty's Province of the MASSACHUSETTS-BAY.

WHITEHALL, *October 7th, 1725.*

S I R,

“ T H E Lords Justices being informed from such
 “ good Hands, as make the Truth of this
 “ Advice not to be doubted, that at a ge-
 “ neral Convention of Ministers, from several Parts of
 “ his Majesty's Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay*, at
 “ *Boston* on the 27th of *May* last, a Memorial and Ad-
 “ dress was framed, directed to you as Lieutenant Go-
 “ vernor and Commander in Chief, and to the Council
 “ and House of Representatives then setting, desiring
 “ that the General Assembly would call the several
 “ Churches in this Province to meet by their Pastors
 “ and Messengers, in a Synod, which Memorial and Ad-
 “ dress, being accordingly presented by some of the
 “ said Ministers, in the Name and at the Desire of the
 “ said Convention, was considered in Council, the third
 “ of *June* following; and there approved, but the House
 “ of Representatives put off the Consideration of it to
 “ the next Session, in which the Council afterwards
 “ concurred.

“ Their Excellencies were extremely surprized, that no
 “ Account of so extraordinary and important Trans-
 “ action should have been transmitted by you, pursuant
 “ to an Article in your Instructions, by which you are
 “ directed upon all Occasions, to send unto his Majesty,
 “ and to the Commissioners for Trade and Plantations,
 “ a particular Account of all your Proceedings, and the
 “ Condition of Affairs within your Government. As
 “ this Matter doth highly concern his Majesty's Royal
 “ Prerogative, their Excellencies referred the Confide-
 “ ration of it, to Mr. Attorney and Sollicitor General,
 VOL. II. U u who

“ who after mature Deliberation, and making all proper
 “ Enquiries, reported,” “ That from the Charter and
 “ Laws of your Colony, they cannot collect that there is any
 “ regular Establishment of a National or Provincial Church
 “ there, so as to warrant the holding of Convocations or
 “ Synods of the Clergy, but if such Synods might be holden,
 “ yet they take it to be clear in Point of Law, that his Ma-
 “ jesty’s Supremacy in Ecclesiastical Affairs, being a Branch
 “ of his Prerogative, does take Place in the Plantations,
 “ and that Synods cannot be held, nor is it lawful for the
 “ Clergy to assemble as in Synods, without Authority from
 “ his Majesty”: “ They conceive the above-mentioned Ap-
 “ plication of the said Ministers, not to you alone, as
 “ representing the King’s Person, but to you and the Coun-
 “ cil and the House of Representatives, to be a Contempt
 “ of his Majesty’s Prerogative, as it is a publick Acknow-
 “ ledgment, that the Power of granting what they desire
 “ resides in the Legislative Body of the Province, which by
 “ Law is vested only in his Majesty. And the Lieut. Go-
 “ vernor, Council and Assembly intermeddling therein, was
 “ an Invasion of his Majesty’s Royal Authority, which
 “ it was your Duty as Lieut. Governor, to withstood and
 “ rejected, and that the Consent of the Lieut. Governor,
 “ the Council, and House of Representatives, will not be
 “ sufficient Authority for the holding of such a Synod.”

“ Their Excellencies, upon Consideration of this Opi-
 “ nion of the Attorney and Soliciter General, which they
 “ have been pleased to approve, have commanded me to
 “ acquaint you with, and to exprefs to you their Surprize,
 “ that no Account of so remarkable a Transaction,
 “ which so nearly concerns the King’s Prerogative, and
 “ the Welfare of his Majesty’s Province under your Go-
 “ vernment, has been received from you, and to signify
 “ to you their Directions, that you do put an effectual
 “ Stop to any such Proceedings, but if the Consent desir-
 “ ed by the Ministers above-mentioned, for the holding
 “ of the Synod, should have been obtained, and this pre-
 “ tended Synod should be actually Sitting, when you re-

“ ceive these their Excellencies Directions, they do in
 “ that Case, require and direct you, to cause such their
 “ Meeting to cease, acquainting them that their Assem-
 “ bly is against Law, and a Contempt of his Majesty’s
 “ Prerogative, and that they are forbid to meet any
 “ more ; but if notwithstanding such Signification, they
 “ shall continue to hold such an Assembly, you are then
 “ to take Care that the principal Actors therein be
 “ prosecuted for a Misdemeanour. But you are to avoid
 “ doing any formal Act to dissolve them, lest it be
 “ construed to imply that they had a Right to assem-
 “ ble. This Sir, is what I have in Command from
 “ their Excellencies to signify to you.

“ And I must observe to you, that the Precedent quo-
 “ ted in the above-mentioned Memorial of such a Synod,
 “ being held forty-five Years ago, falls in with the Year
 “ 1680, and that the former Charter, upon which the
 “ Government of your Province depended, was repealed
 “ by *Scire Facias* in the Year 1684, and the new Char-
 “ ter was granted in the Year 1691, from whence it
 “ appears, that if such Synod was holden as is alledged,
 “ it happened a short Time before the repealing of the
 “ old Charter, but none has been since the granting
 “ the new one. I am Sir, your most humble Servant

CHARLES DELAFAYE.

*At the Court at Kensington the eleventh Day of October
 1705, Present the Queen’s most Excellent Majesty, his
 Royal Highness Prince George of Denmark, Lord Arch
 Bishop of Canterbury, Lord Keeper, Lord Treasurer,
 Lord President, Earl of Ranelagh, Mr. Boyle, Mr.
 Secretary Hedges, Mr. Secretary Harley, Lord Chief
 Justice Holt, Lord Chief Justice Trevor, Duke of Som-
 erset, Duke of Ormond, Mr. Vernon, Mr. Earle.*

“ **A** Representation from the Lords Commissioners of
 Trade and Plantations, being this Day read at
 the Board upon an Act, passed in her Majesty’s
 Colony

“ Colony of *Connecticut*, Entitled (*only*) HERETICKS,
 “ whereby it is Enacted, that all who shall entertain any
 “ *Quakers, Ranters, Adamites*, and other *Hereticks*, are
 “ made liable to the Penalty of *five Pounds*, and *five*
 “ *Pounds per Week* for every Town that shall so en-
 “ tertain them, that all *Quakers* shall be committed
 “ to Prison or be sent out of the Colony—That who-
 “ soever shall hold unnecessary Discourse with *Quakers*
 “ shall forfeit *twenty Shillings*, that whosoever shall keep
 “ any *Quakers Books*, the Governor, Magistrates and
 “ Elders excepted, shall forfeit *ten Shillings*, and that all
 “ such Books shall be suppressed; that no Masters of
 “ any Vessel do land any *Quakers* without carrying
 “ them away again, under the Penalty of *twenty*
 “ *Pounds*.

“ And the said Lords Commissioners humbly offer-
 “ ing, that the said Act be Repealed by her Majesty,
 “ it being contrary to the Liberty of Conscience indul-
 “ ged to Dissenters by the Laws of *England*, as also
 “ to the Charter granted to that Colony, Her Majesty
 “ with the Advice of her Privy Council, is pleased to
 “ declare her Disallowance and Disapprobation of the
 “ said Act, and pursuant to her Majesty’s Royal Plea-
 “ sure thereupon, the said Act, passed in her Majesty’s
 “ Colony of *Connecticut* in *New-England*, Entitled *He-*
 “ *reticks*, is hereby Repealed, and declared null and
 “ void, and of none Effect.

Signed JOHN POVEY.

In the Sessions 1751, of the *British* Parliament; was
 passed an Act extending to the *American Colonies*, as
 well as to the Kingdom of *Great-Britain*, and its other
 Dominions; entitled an Act for regulating the Com-
 mencement of the Year, and for correcting the Calender
 now in Use. The Abstract of the Act runs thus,

Whereas the legal Supputation of the Year in that
 Part of *Great-Britain*, called *England*, beginning the 25th
 of *March*, has been attended with many Inconveniencies,

as it differs from the Usage of neighbouring Nations, and the legal Computation of that Part of *Great-Britain*, called *Scotland*, and thereby divers Mistakes happened in the Dates of Deeds and other Writings; and our *Julian* Calender having been discovered to be Erroneous; that the Spring *Equinox*, which at the General Council of *Nice*, Anno Dom. 325, happened about the 21st of *March*, now happens the ninth or tenth of the same Month, which Error is still increasing; and to the End, that the several *Equinoxes* and *Solstices* may for the future fall upon the same nominal Days as at the Time of the said General Council; and is now generally received by almost all other Nations of *Europe*, and to prevent Disputes with foreign Correspondents of almost all other Nations of *Europe* in their Letters and Accounts, *Be it enacted*, that in all his Majesty's Dominions in *Europe*, *Asia*, *Africa*, and *America*, the old Supputation is not to be made Use of, after 31st of *December* 1751, and the Year for the future to commence *January* 1st, and the Days to be numbered in the same Order, and the moveable Feasts to be ascertained as they now are until *September* 2, 1752, inclusive; and the Day following, (that is the 3d of *Sept.* 1752, to be accounted the 14th of *Sept.* 1752, omitting at that Time the eleven intermediate nominal Days. All Writings after 1st of *January* 1752, to be dated according to the *New-Style*, and all Courts after *Sept.* 2, 1752, shall be held in the same nominal Days they now are; (Courts held with Fairs or Marts excepted) that is, eleven Days sooner than the respective Day wherein the same are now kept. Every hundredth Year, excepting every fourth hundred, whereof *Anno* 1800 shall be the first; to be deemed tho' a leap Year or *Bissextile* consisting only of 365 Days, but all other *Bissextile* or Leap Years shall consist of 366 Days, — And whereas the Method of computing the full Moons now used in the Calender of the Common Prayers of the Church of *England*, to find *Easter* is become considerably Erroneous; therefore the said Feast of *Easter* and others de-

pending

pending thereon, shall after the 2d of *Sept.* 1752, conform to the Decree of the said General Council, and the Practice of foreign Countries, shall be observed according to the annexed Table ; and the former Table, in all future Editions of the Book of Common Prayer, shall be suppressed ; but the Courts of Session and Exchequer in *Scotland*, and all *Markets, Fairs and Marts* shall be held upon the same natural Days as if this Act had not been made, that is eleven Days later, than according to this new Computation, notwithstanding that by this new Computation, the nominal Days are anticipated or brought forward by the Space of eleven Days, the natural Days and Times for the opening and inclosing of Commons of Pasture and the like, not to be altered by this Act, that is, eleven Days later than the new Supputation. —The natural Days and Times of Payments of Rents, Annuities, Sums of Money, delivery of Goods, Commencement or Expiration of Leases and the like, shall not be by this Act anticipated or accelerated ; and the Time of attaining the Age of 21 Years shall not be altered by this Act, or the determination of any Apprenticeship or Service. *

Proprietors

* *Julius Cæsar* began his Year about the *Hybernal* or Winter *Solstice*, (the *Equinoxes* and *Solstices* are proper Periods in such Matters) the *Julian* or O. S. began 45 Years before CHRIST : This Stile was reformed by Pope *Gregory* 1582, but was not carried back to the Nativity of our Saviour, which in Church Preciseness ought to have been, but only to the Time of the Council of *Nice*, which was held Anno Dom. 325, by *Constantine* the Great, to examine and condemn the Doctrines of *Arius*. At the Time of the Council of *Nice*, the Vernal *Equinox* was on the 21st of *March*, but in strictness and according to the precision of devotionalist Observers of Days, it should have gone back so far as the Nativity or first Year of Christ, the Vernal *Equinox* was then on the 23d of *March*: But as the *Gregorian* Stile is at present the general Practice of Christian European Nations, the *British* Legislature in their wonted Pendency have acceded thereto, as being a convenient Civil, but not a *Jure Divino* Affair. Instead of being too minutely precise in striking off 13 Days, which is the Truth of the Case in Conformity to other European Countries, they only struck off 11 Days, for the sake of mutual Convenience ;

*Proprietors or principal Governors, and their Resident
Deputies or Lieutenant Governors.*

The first Proprietor and Governor was *William Penn*, Son of Admiral *Penn*, see Vol. II. P. 307; he carried over many Quakers with him to that Country, his Patent included that Part of new *Swedland*, which lies on the West Side of *Delaware River*, some Part of the *Swede* Settlements lay on the East Side of the River, and is Part of *West New-Jersey*. Mr. *Penn* continued two Years in *Pennsylvania*, and upon his Father's Death returned to *England*, and left the Government in the Hands of *Thomas Lloyd*, with a Council. Mr. *Penn* being esteemed a Favourite of K. *James II*, was suspected to be a Roman Catholick and Jesuit in the assumed Mask of a Quaker, and upon the Revolution, K. *William* was advised to suspend his Privilege of appointing a Deputy Governor for *Pennsylvania*. And

The Crown appointed Col. *Fletcher* Governor of *New-York*, to be also Governor of *Pennsylvania*; but upon Mr. *William Penn's* Vindication of himself, he was restored to his Privilege of Government, and appointed

Mr. *Blackwell* his Deputy or Lieut. Governor; he was succeeded as Lieut. Governor by *Thomas Lloyd Esq*; upon his Death

Mr. *Penn* appointed his Nephew Col. *Markham* his

ency; it is more eligible to err with the generality of *Europe*, than affectedly to constitute a peculiar *British* Stile, which would be running from one Inconvenience into another; the main Intention is to produce an uniformity in the Computation of Time throughout the Christian Part of the World; the agreeing with the rest of *Europe*, ought to prevail over any Argument deduced from the nicety of Calculation.

Peter Deval of the middle Temple, Secretary to the Royal Society, drew the Bill and prepared most of the Tables under Direction of the Earl of *Chesterfield*, the first Former of the Design; and the whole was carefully examined and approved of by *Martin Folkes Esq*; President of the Royal Society, and Dr. *Bradley*, his Majesty's Astronomer at *Greenwich*, who computed the Tables at the end of the Bill.

Deputy,

Deputy or Lieut. Governor; he had the Government or Direction, until the second Arrival of Mr. Penn, 1698.

Mr. *William Penn* principal Governor and Proprietor arrived a second Time in *Pennsylvania*, 1698. He returned to *England* 1700, and nominated Col. *Andrew Hamilton* for his Deputy, in his Administration was much Confusion in the Province; upon his Death

1704, Col. *John Evans* was appointed Lieutenant Governor.

1713, died in *London*, *William Penn*, the first Proprietor and principal Governor, much in Debt, occasioned by his whimsical Disposition; he had agreed with the Crown to resign his Property and Government for a certain Consideration (to extricate himself from Debt) but died suddenly before the Instrument was executed, and the Government and Property remains in the Family to this Time;

The first principal Governor and Proprietor was called *William Penn*, the Grand-Father; he was succeeded by his Son *William Penn*, called the Father; and he was succeeded by *Springet Penn*, *William Penn* the Son; and lastly in the three Brothers, *John Penn*, *Thomas Penn*, and *Richard Penn*, Co-Heirs in the Succession: These Brothers by a written Agreement with Lord *Baltimore* Proprietary of *Maryland*, their adjoining Neighbour; 1732 settled Boundaries to be afterwards confirmed in Form of Law; but Lord *Baltimore* receded and occasioned a tedious Controversy in Chancery, as is above related.

John, the eldest of the three Brothers, died *October 28*, 1746, a Batchelor, and by Will *October 24*, 1746, left his Share to his second Brother *Thomas*, with Remainders, as is expressed in the Will.

William Penn (Son to the first Proprietor) in Law called the Father, (the first Proprietor, in Law Instruments was called the Father) died at *Liege*, 1720.

1708,9, in *January* arrived *Capt. Gookin*, Lieut. Governor.

1717, *May 30*, arrives Sir *William Keith*, Lieut. Governor.

1726, Major *Gordon* superseded Sir *William Keith*.

Major *Gordon* died in *October 1736*, and Mr. *Logan* was in Course President for a short Time; but was soon superseded by Col. *Thomas* a Planter of *Antegoe*; Mr. *Logan* died much lamented *Nov. 1751*. After nine Years Government, Col. *Thomas* resigned 1747, and was succeeded by *James Hamilton* Esq; the present Lieut. Governor, Son of *Andrew Hamilton*, a noted Lawyer in these Parts.

A Medical DIGRESSION.

Concerning the personal Constitutions of People born in British North-America, of the Endemial Distempers prevalent there, and of their present Medical Practice.

As this Digression will not be much read by ordinary Capacities, where Things cannot so well be expressed in Vernacular Words, I take the Liberty of using *Technical* or professional Expressions, and some classical Phrases, and generally in a concise or *Aphoristical* loose, but practical Manner.

Their Children or Youth are more forward * or *Precoce* than

* It is observed that in the *West-Indies* there are no Boys, all being either Children or Men.

Perhaps the most noted Instance of Forwardness in a Boy, is what *Montagne of Gascony* in his *Essays 1550* writes of himself; His Father educated him in his Childhood in the learned Languages of *Greek* and *Latin*, in the same routine that from Nurses we learn our Vernacular or Mother Tongue; we had a remarkable Instance of such routines in *Boston*, a worthy *English* Gentleman, *Richard Dalton*, Esq; a great Admirer of the *Greek Classics*, because of the tenderness of his Eyes, taught his Negro Boy *Cæsar* to read to him distinctly any *Greek* Writer, without understanding the Meaning or Interpretation. *Montagne* with much Vanity and peculiar Pedantry, says, that *Buchanan* was afraid to accost him when only 6 *Æt.* in *Latin*, and that *Buchanan* copied his Instruction or Education of a Child from his Education; *Buchanan* was a first Rate Master of the *Latin Classics*, and Preceptor

than in *Great-Britain*. 2. The Virility of the Men, and Fecundity of their Women, or Child-bearing Sex, are much the same as in *Great-Britain*, their Mother Country. 3. Their *Longevity* falls much shorter.

The

to K. *James VI* of *Scotland*; in his Travels in *France*, hearing of the Forwardness of this Boy, he went to see him. As *Montagne* is a noted Writer, I shall for Amusement mention another Instance of his *Gascon* Pedantry; that in his younger Years he resolved not to enter into any Matrimonial Partnership or Contract not even with the Goddess of Wisdom, but Married *Æt.* 33.

As the Education of Children, is not sufficiently attended to in many of our Colonies, I shall here insert the beginning of an Experiment of this Nature. I delight in promoting of Children in Town and Country, accordingly I have in *Boston* taken a promising Boy entirely at my own Charge of Subsistence and Education, under my Sole Direction, to form a practical not notional Scheme of Management and Education *ob Ovo* or rather *ab Utero*, because of some Difficulties I was present at the Birth; I did not allow him to be rockt in a Cradle, suspecting that Concussions might weaken his Brain, and consequently impair his Judgment; He never had *Diaſcordium*, *Mithredate* or other *Opiat*, or strong drink to compose him to Sleep, a pernicious indolent Practice of Nurses and old Women, because thereby Convulsions may be induced, or the Child rendred stupid for Life.

To accommodate his Organs of Speech while Flexible, and in the Parot or Prattle Period of Life, not only to the Pronunciation of our *English* or *Vernacular* Words, but also to the Pronunciation of other Languages; before he was full five Years of Age, he did distinctly repeat and pronounce the Lord's Prayer in the five Languages familiar to me, *Greek*, *Latin*, *English*, *French* and *Dutch*: he did well express and define many harsh and long foreign Words, such as the *Indian* Names of some Ponds, Rivers, and Tribes in our Neighbourhood. *Chabonamungagog*, a large Pond joining to *Douglas*, *Winipisackit*, a great Pond or Lake in the Province of *New-Hampshire*, *Papacontaquash* or *Millers River*, which falls into *Connecticut* River on the East Side a little below *North-Field*, *Arowsaguntacook*, a Tribe of *French Abnaki* Indians called the Mission of *St. Francis*, on the South Side of *Canada* River, *Misslimakanack*, a Tribe of *French* Indians, between the great Lakes *Hurons* and *Illinois*, *Tatamaganabaw*, a small Tribe of *Mikemake* Indians of *Nova-Scotia*, in the Bay verte of the Gulph of *St. Laurence*; some *Dutch* Words *Achtentachtentigh*, eighty eight, &c. some *Latin* Words, *Honorificabilitudinitatibus*, Honourablenesses, &c.

Instead of the abstrusely profound Catechisms, which preposterously are taught Children, he is initiated in Things and Words which are easily comprehended, and Subjects of common Conversation, such as,

Q. What

The remote Causes or Predispositions to most chro-
 nical Distempers are, 1. *Mala Stamina Vitæ.* 2. *Malus*
locus,

Q. *What is your Name?*

A. I am known by the Name of *William Douglass.*

Q. *Where was you born?*

A. In the Town of *Boston*, in the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*,
 in the British Dominions of *New-England* in *North-America.*

Q. *When was you born?*

A. I was born *July 25, 1745*, but how I was made, and how I
 came into the World, I have forgotten, and cannot tell.

Q. *What is your Religion?*

A. A Catholick Christian Protestant; to fear God and keep his
 Commandments, to honour and obey the Civil Government.

Q. *What is God?*

A. The supreme Being, who created and manages the Universe,
 in some Manner inconceivable to us created Beings.

Q. *What is Civil Government?*

A. The Laws and Customs of the Country I live in, as executed
 by certain appointed Magistrates.

Q. *Why do you every seventh Day, go to a Place of Publick Worship?*

A. Because (as my Grandmother tells me,) one Day in seven, is
 by most Civil Governments found requisite to abstain from Labour,
 for the refreshment of the labouring Part of Mankind and Cattle.

Q. *Why do you in ordinary attend the Assembly of Mr. Welsted and Gray?*

A. Because it is the nearest, and Neighbours naturally join in their
 publick Devotions; these two Ministers or Pastors are exemplary in
 their Lives, and agreeable in their publick Discourses.

Q. *What Sectary of Publick Worship do you follow?*

A. That of my Father natural or adopting. My Grand-Mother
 tells me that by Law and Custom, I must follow the Example and
 Precepts of my Father till 21 *Æt.* or till assigned.

We may observe that of all Animals, Mankind attain to the
 greatest Perfection of Knowledge, but after the longest Time ar-
 rive to the full Growth of Body and Mind; therefore as this Boy
 is too exuberant in the Growth of Mind, I check or retard him by
 allowing him more Play than Schooling, that the Impressions may
 not be too slight or transitory; and allow him to associate with active
 wild Boys not wicked or vicious, that by his puerile flow of Spirit,
 he may practice activity of Body and Mind: The *Dalrymples*, a Fa-
 mily in *Scotland*, noted for Acuteness, Wisdom, and Knowledge;
 allowed their Boys at a certain Age to associate with wild, but not
 wicked Boys, and after some Time took them up to a regular sober
 Education.

At Times I send him to any tolerated Place of Publick Worship,
 to prevent Party, Bigotry, and a narrow Way of thinking. I ask
 him

locus, that is a bad Air and Soil. 3. Indolence or Inactivity. 4. Intemperance: Concerning all these we shall intersperse some Aphorisms.

During the Time or Period of my Practice in *New-England*, we have had no considerable Epidemicks excepting Small Pox, Measels, and some Species's of Putrid Fevers and *Dysenteries*; The Varieties in our Endemials were from the Vicissitudes of Seasons and Weather. To write a History of Epidemick yearly Constitutions, in *Sydenban's* Manner, for a continued Succession of Years, would be writing of a Novel: Our Chronical Ails, by the Practice of our common Physicians, particularly by the *routine* indolent palliative Repetitions of V. S. and Opiates, which fix all Distempers, and renders their Patients valetudinary and short-lived. Opiats and inebriating Liquors, have the same Effects, they carry the peccant Humours to the Nerves, from whence they are scarce to be removed; they are slow Poysons, they enfeeble both Body and Mind, and produce *mala stamina Vitæ* in the Progeny.

As *New-England* lies in the Leeward of the Westerly extended Continent of *North-America*, the Winds (being generally Westerly) gliding continuedly along this vast

him his natural Remarks upon the different Modes of Worship, to make him observant; I shall give one Instance which I hope the candid Reader will not judge "*ludere cum sacris*" I have a great Veneration for the Church of *England*. In a common Prayer Day he went to a Church of *England*, when he came Home he said, that he observed the Minister come into the Church in a black Gown, and retired into a Closet (the Vestry) and come out again with a clean Shirt over his Gown. His Grandmother as usual, askt him where the Text was; he said that he could not tell, because every Body Preached promiscuously; Men, Women, and Children, spake in Publick, (meaning the Responces) his Grandmother told him that the Quaker Sectary allow their Women, (but no Children) to speak in Publick, though contrary to *St. Paul's* Admonition.

He is taught the Hours of the Day, the Days of the Week, the Months in the Year, the Mariners Compass or Corners of the Wind; the Varieties of Shipping, Scooners, Sloops, Brigantines, Snows and Ships; he reads the Sign Posts, and News-Papers.

Traſt of Land much heated in Summer, and much cooled or frozen in Winter ; occaſion the Country to be much hotter in Summer, and much colder in Winter, than in *Great-Britain* ; *Reciprocations*, but not to Extremes, are ſalutary to the Conſtitutions, where the Tranſitions are gradual ; thus we may obſerve in Nature ; that for the benefit of the Earth's Produce, there is a Reciprocation of Summer and Winter, Day and Night, &c. In Countries where the Seasons are upon the Extremes in Summer and Winter as in *New-England*, Conſtitutions do not wear well, analagous to the Timber and Plank of a Ship between Wind and Water. *Longevity* appears moſtly in Iſland Countries, where with a ſmall Latitude or Variation the Temperature of the Air continues nearly the ſame.

I ſhall here inſert a few Lines concerning the Conſtitution and medical Practice of our Northern Indians. See Vol. I. P. 174.

The *Indians* North of *Canada* River, the *Eſquimaux* and *Outawaways*, are generally affected with *Pſoras*, *Scurvy*, or *Itch* ; from the cold Intemperance of the Climate. As the Indian Manner of Life is much more ſimple than that of *Europeans*, they are not ſubject to ſo many various Diſeaſes : Their modern Intemperance in drinking Rum and other Spirits, kills more than all their other Diſtemperatures.

The Indian Food is from their Hunting, Fowling and Fiſhing ; their Bread-kind is from Mais or Indian Corn, Phaſeoli or Kidney Beans of ſeveral ſorts, Tuberoſe Roots of ſeveral Kinds, Maſt or Nuts of various ſorts, great Variety of Forreſt Berries.

The Varieties of national Conſtitutions and Habits, are not eaſily to be accounted for ; the *American* Indians, by keeping principally their Feet warm ; the *Africa* Negroes by keeping their Heads warm, without any Regard to the reſt of their Body, preserve their Health and Strength.

The *American* aboriginal Indians naturally are of weak Constitutions, they are *impubes* & *imberbes* ; but by Habit from their Infancy, can suffer Hunger and Wood damps, better than *Europeans* of stronger Constitutions : Their natural Temper is cruel and vindictive.

Their Physicians in ordinary are the Powowers Clergy or Conjurers, and some old Women. In their *Medical* Practice they take no Notice of Pulse and Urine, they do not use Blood-letting ; they chiefly use traditional Herbs ; blistering with Punk or Touchwood, and the Blisters are converted into Issues ; sweating in hot Houses (an extemporary kind of Bagnio) and immediately there-upon Immersion in cold Water, this Practice has kill'd many of them in Eruptive Fevers. The *American* Indians are noted for their traditional Knowledge of poysonous Herbs and Antedotes ; but I do not find that our Indian *Venifici* are so expert in the *Venificium* Art, as the Negroes of *Africa*, who give Poysons, which in various, but certain Periods, produce their mortal Effects, some suddenly, some after a Number of Months or Years.

They cure several Poysons, for Instance, the Bite of that *American* Viper called Rattle-Snake or *Vipera caudifona*, by proper Antidotes, before they produce their usual dismal Effects. †

I hope these medical Observations may be of some use to our Colonies ; as they are in my professional Business, by some they may be thought *Pedantick*, by others

† May we not hope, that in future Times, some Epidemical contagious Distempers, such as the Plague, Small-Pox, and the like, may be prevented or extinguished in *Seminio* by proper Antidotes : Time produces surprizing Discoveries in Nature, such as the various *Phænomena* of *Magnetism* and *Electricity* ; in the *Small-Pox* the late Improvement of conveying it by Inoculation, is found more favourable than the receiving of it the Chance or natural Way, as Fruit from Trees inoculated, surpasses natural Fruit ; this Practice of Inoculating for the *Small-Pox*, was introduced in a very rash indiscreet Manner, and by weak Men ; we may observe that many of the *Juvenilia* and *Lædèntia* in Medicine were discovered or rather introduced by rash Fools and Madmen, Instance, *Paracelsus's Mercurial Remedies* :
they

they may be called a *Quackish* Ostentation ; once for all, I declare, that I have no lucrative Views, because *mibi tantum suppetit Viaticæ quantum Viæ.*

I here insert some Remarks upon the medical Practice in our Colonies ; as no Man's Name is expressed, and some Gentlemen Practitioners of Candour, Probity, Ingenuity, and good practical Knowledge are excepted, these Reflections may be taken in good Part without further Apology.

In our Plantations, a Practitioner, bold, rash, impudent, a liar, basely born and educated ; has much the Advantage of an honest, cautious, modest Gentleman. In general, the physical Practice in our Colonies, is so perniciously bad, that excepting in Surgery, and some very acute Cases, it is better to let Nature under a proper Regimen take her Course, (*naturæ Morbörum curatrices*) than to trust to the Honesty and Sagacity of the Practitioner ; our *American* Practitioners are so Rash and Officious, the saying in the *Apocrypha Ecclesiasticus* 38. 15, may with much Propriety be applied to them. *He that Sinneth before his Maker, let him fall into the Hands of the Physician.* Frequently there is more Danger from the Physician, than from the Distemper ; a Country where the medical Practice is very irregular, is a good School to learn the *lædientia*, a good Article in Practice ; but sometimes notwithstanding of Male *Practice*, Nature gets the better of the Doctor, and the Patient recovers.

Our Practitioners deal much in Quackery, * and Quackish

* I shall mention one remarkable Instance of Colony *Quackery*, advertised in the *New York Gazette*, December 16, 1751, " In July 1751, was committed to the Care of Doctor *Peter Billing*, an experienced Physician, and Man Mid-wife, and formerly in the King's Service, the most extraordinary and remarkable Case that ever was performed in the World, upon one Mrs. *Mary Smith*, single Woman, Sister to Capt. *Arthur Smith*, on *James River*, in the County of *Surry* in *Virginia*, Æt. 46, she had been upwards of 18 Years out of her Senses, (most of the Time raving Mad) eat her own Excrements, and was completely cured by him in two Months, contrary to the

Quackish Medicines, as requiring no Labour of Thought or Composition, and highly recommended in the *London* Quack Bills (in which all the reading of many of our Practitioners consists) inadvertently encouraged by Patents for the Benefit of certain Fees to some Offices, but to the very great Damage of the Subject; how dismal is it to observe some Apothecaries Shops Wainscotted or Papered with Advertisements, recommending Quack Medicines for the profit of the Shop, but destruction of their Neighbours? this is vending of Poysons for Gain.

In the most trifling Cases they use a *routine* of Practice: When I first arrived in *New-England*, I asked *G. P.* a noted facetious Practitioner, what was their general Method of Practice; he told me their Practice was very uniform, bleeding, vomiting, blistering, purging, Anodyne, &c. if the Illness continued, there was *repetendi* and finally *murderandi*, Nature was never to be consulted or allowed to have any concern in the Affair. What *Sydenham* well observes, is the Case with our Practitioners; *Æger nimia Medici diligentia ad plures migrat.*

Blood letting and Anodynes are the principal Tools of our Practitioners, these palliate any Distemper for a short Time; while at the same Time they confound the Intentions of Nature, and fix the Malady; they follow *Sydenham* too much in giving *Paregoricks*, after *Catharticks*, which is playing fast and loose.

the Opinion of all that knew her, no Doctor in the Province daring to undertake her. N. B. The contagious Distemper so frequently happening to the bold Adventurers in the Wars of *Venus*, when recent, will be cured by him for three Pistoles in hand, though the common Price is Five Pound all over *North-America*. And all other Cases curable in Physick and Surgery, proportionable according to the Circumstances of People. He has also other Matters to publish, particularly an elegant Medicine to prevent the yellow Fever, and dry Gripes in the *West-Indies*; this is incomparable, if we except a Quack Advertisement published in *Jamaica* (immediately after the last great Earthquake) of Pills to prevent Persons or their Effects suffering by Earthquakes.



SECTION XV.

Concerning the Province of
Maryland.

Although Recapitulations or Repetitions are reckoned tedious and not elegant ; I find that our Sections or Colonies may be more agreeably introduced by some general Accounts or Transactions with a little Variation, than by an abrupt Entrance into the Colony Affairs.

The *Cabots* of *Venetian* Extract obtained 1595, a Patent from K. *Henry VII* of *England*, of all Lands to be by them discovered West of *Europe*, as to Property ; with a Reservation of a certain Royal Perquisite ; this King understood Perquisites ; the Father *John*, and afterwards the Son *Sebastian*, fitted out from *Bristol* ; in their first Voyage upon the Discovery of a N. W. Passage to *China*, and the *East Indies*, being obstructed by the Ice, the Sailors mutined and returned to *England*, without effecting any thing of Consequence.

Anno 1498, *Sebastian* ranged the Continent of *North-America* from 40 d. to 67 d. N. Lat. and at several Places took a nominal Occupancy from Discovery, without making any Settlement ; thus notwithstanding of the Discoveries, we had no Possession for near a Century of Years.

Sir *Walter Raleigh*, a noted Discovery Projector, see Vol. I. P. 111, Anno 1584, *March* 25, obtained of Queen *Elizabeth* a Patent for Discoveries and Settlements in *America* ; upon the return of the Vessels of the first Adventure, in Honour to the Virgin Queen *Elizabeth*, the Name of *Virginia* in general was given to the North Part of the Continent so far as the Gulph of St. *Laurence* North, to *Florida* South. In process of Time the *French* made some small Settlements in the North Parts of *North-*

America, and called them *Nova Francia*, or *Nouvelle France*; at this Time known by the Names of *L'Acadia*, (*Nova-Scotia*) and *Canada*. The *Swedes*, *Fins*, and *Dutch* introduced by *Hudson*, made Settlements upon *Hudsons* or *Rord Rivier* and *Delaware* or *Zyud Rivier*, and called it *Nova-Belgia* or *New-Netherlands*. Thus in the beginning of the last Century the Eastern Coast of *North-America* was divided into, 1. *Nova-Francia*, 2. *North Virginia* comprehending the Colonies of *Nova-Scotia* and *New-England*. 3. *Nova-Belgia* or *New-Netherlands*, at present known by the Names of *New-York*, *New-Jerfies*, and *Pennsylvania*. 4. *South Virginia* which does comprehend *Maryland*, *Virginia*, *North-Carolina*, *South Carolina*, and *Georgia*.

Upon the new Discoveries, many separate Grants of Districts were made to private Proprietors, but afterwards for the regularity and ease of Jurisdiction, the Crown assumed the Juridictions, and reduced them to more convenient Models of Government.

Maryland is properly a Sprout from *Virginia*, therefore the Connection of this Settlement with the first Discoveries must be referred to the Section of *Virginia*; here we shall only observe how and when it did Sprout. See Vol. I. P. 288, the *Newfoundland* Section.

Towards the end of K. *James I.* Reign, Sir *George Calvert* principal Secretary of State, afterwards Lord *Baltimore*, obtained a Patent for some fishing Harbours in *Newfoundland*; by reason of the Civil Troubles in *England*, these Settlements were discontinued; being a zealous Roman Catholick, with other dissenting Zealots of various Sectaries, he left *England* and retired to *Virginia*; As the *Virginians* were generally Bigots to the Church of *England* Sectary, they did not use him so well as he expected; and as the *Virginians* had not settled further North than *Potomack* River, Lord *Baltimore* went home and obtained from K. *Charles I.* a Grant of all the Lands from the Mouth of *Potomack* River in about 38 d. 10 m. N. to the *Swede* and *Finland* Settlements which were reckoned

reckoned to the bottom of *Chesapeak Bay*, in about the Latitude of 39 d. 45 m. or 15 English Miles South of *Philadelphia* parallel; the Account of the Controversies concerning the Boundaries between the Properties and Jurisdictions of *Maryland* and *Pennsylvania*, we refer back to the Section of *Pennsylvania*,

The Banditti *Dutch*, *Swedes*, and *Fins* were prior to the *English* in their Settlements upon *Delaware River* and Westward inland. Upon a new Royal Regulation in *Virginia*, several Families went over from *England* to settle there, amongst those were Lord *Baltimore* a rigid Roman Catholick, for the Advantage of the more free Exercise of his Religion, he retired thither; but being ill used by the Church of *England* Sectary, and finding that the Humour of petitioning for large Tracts of Lands was encouraged by the Court at Home, and that the *Virginia* Settlers had not extended further North than *Potomack River*; Lord *Baltimore* petitioned for a Grant of vacant Lands from North of *Potomack River*, to the *Swedish* and *Finlanders* Settlements between the bottom of *Chesapeak Bay* and *Delaware River*, and obtained the Promise of a Grant for the same; but dying soon, his Son and Heir obtained the Patent dated *June 20, 1632*; that Part of the Patent which regards the Boundaries in the English Translation from the Original Latin Instrument, runs thus. Know ye therefore that we, favouring the pious and noble Purposes of the said Baron of *Baltimore*, of our special Grace, certain Knowledge, and mere Motion, have given, granted, and confirmed, and by this our present Charter for us our Heirs and Successors do give, grant and confirm unto *Cecilius* now Baron of *Baltimore*, his Heirs and Assigns, all that Part of a Peninsula lying in the Parts of *America*, between the Ocean on the East, and the Bay or Gulph of *Chesapeak*, on the West, and divided from the other Part thereof by a right Line drawn from the Promontory or Cape of Land called *Watkins Point* (situate in the aforesaid Bay or Gulph near the River of *Wighco*) on the West, unto the main Ocean

Ocean on the East, and between that bounds on the South, as far as to the Æstuary of Delaware on the North, where it is scituate to the fortieth degree of Northern Latitude from the Equinoxial where New-England ends, and all that Tract of Land within the Bounds underwritten, viz. passing from the aforesaid Æstuary called Delaware Bay in a right Line, by the Degree aforesaid, unto the true Meridian of the first Fountain of the River Potomack, and from thence tending or passing toward the South to the further Bank of the said River, and following the West and South Side thereof, unto a certain Place called Cinquack, scituate near the Mouth of said River, where it falls into the aforesaid Bay or Gulph of Chesapeak, and from thence by the shortest Line that can be drawn unto the aforesaid Promontory or Place called Watkins Point. So that all the Tract of Land divided by the Line aforesaid drawn between the main Ocean and Watkins Point, unto the Promontory called Cape Charles, and all its Appurtenancies, do remain entirely excepted to us our Heirs and Successors for ever. We do also grant and confirm unto the said now Lord Baltimore, his Heirs and Assigns, all Lands and Islets within the Limits aforesaid, and all and singular the Islands and Islets which are or shall be in the Ocean within ten Leagues from the Eastern Shore of the said Country towards the East, &c. Lord Baltimore called it Maryland from the Name of the Queen Consort.

For the North Bounds of this Province, see the *Pennsylvania* Section, Vol. II. P. 308, being a parallel 15 English Miles South of the Southermost Part of the City of *Philadelphia* in about Lat. 39 d. 45 m. Its East Line is the West Line of the three lower Counties of *Pennsylvania*, already delineated, to *Cape Henlopen*, and from *Cape Henlopen* by the Ocean to a parallel or East and West Line drawn from *Watkins Point* near *Wigbeo* River on *Chesapeak Bay* in about the Lat. of 38 d. 10. m: Its Southern Bound is this parallel on the East Side of *Chesapeak Bay*, and further on the West Side of said Bay up *Potomack River* as the River runs, here are some
 Disputes

Disputes with Lord *Fairfax* Proprietor of the North Neck of *Virginia* : Its West Line is a small Opening between the Properties of the *Penns* and of Lord *Fairfax* as settled by Treaty with the six Nations of Indians known by the Name of *Mobawks*, June 29, 1744, at *Lancaster* in *Pennsylvania*, viz. that the Boundaries shall be at two Miles above the uppermost Falls of *Potomack* River, and run from thence in a North Line to the South Bounds of *Pennsylvania*, and the Indians gave a Quit-Claim to all the Lands in *Maryland* East of that Line for the Consideration of £. 300 Currency paid to them by *Maryland*.

Virginia and *Maryland* are an open Country with many navigable Rivers and Creeks, without any Battery Defence, and the Inhabitants much dispersed ; therefore much exposed to the Incurfions and Depredations of Enemy armed Vessels ; scarce any Towns, general Harbours and Barcadiers ; because most Planters or Traders have navigable Barcadiers of their own ; after some Time there must be general Barcadiers at the Falls of the several Rivers for the benefit of the inland Country.

Upon the Grant and Patent 1632, Lord *Baltimore* had a design to go to *Maryland* in Person, but altered his Mind and appointed his Brother *Leonard Calvert* Esq; to go Governor in his Stead, and joined *Jeremy Hawley* Esq; and *Thomas Cornwallis*, Esq; in the Commission. The first Colony consisted of about 200 Persons, sent by his Lordship in the *Autumn* 1633 ; they were chiefly Gentlemen of good Families and Roman Catholicks ; the principal were,

Leonard Calvert Governor.

Jeremy Hawley, Esq; } Assistants.
Thomas Cornwallis, Esq; }

<i>George Calvert</i> Brother to		Mr. <i>Edward Cranfield</i>
the Governor.		Mr. <i>Henry Green</i>
<i>Richard Gerrard</i> Esq;		Mr. <i>Nicholas Fairfax</i>
<i>Edward Winter</i> Esq;		Mr. <i>Thomas Dorrel</i>
<i>Frederick Winter</i> Esq;		Mr. <i>John Medcalse</i>
<i>Henry Wiseman</i> Esq;		Mr. <i>William Saire</i>
Mr. <i>John Sanders</i>		Capt. <i>John Hill</i>
Mr. <i>John Baxter</i>		

They

They failed from *Cowes* in the Isle of White, *November* 22, 1632, after touching at *Barbadoes*, and *St. Christophers*, arrived in *Virginia* *February* 24th following, and 3d of *March* arrived in *Potomack* River; after ranging the Country about *Potomack* River, they at last settled with the Consent of the *Indians*, at the Indian Town called *Yamaco* at the Mouth of the River, to which they gave the Name of *St. Maries*. It is said that in the first two Years this Settlement of a Colony, cost Lord *Baltimore* about £. 40,000 Sterl. by bringing over People, Provisions, and other Stores.

During the Civil Wars in *England*, Lord *Baltimore* was deprived of the Government or Jurisdiction of *Maryland*, about the Restoration 1661, *Charles* Lord *Baltimore*, Son of *Cecilius* obtained a Confirmation of the Grant 1632, and made several Voyages thither, but the Proprietor being a Roman Catholick, the Crown retained the Jurisdiction, and appointed the Governor and all other Civil Officers: The present Proprietor is Protestant, and enjoys both Government or Jurisdiction and Property.

In the trading Road by *Harris's* Ferry on *Sesquabanab* River the breadth of *Maryland* from *Pennsylvania* Boundary Line, to *Potomack* River does not exceed 8 Miles, but higher it is said to widen again. *N. B. Paxton* on *Sesquabanab* River, is the trading Place in this Road.

The Lords *Baltimore* Reserve in each County, some Mannors not granted, as the *Penns* do in *Pennsylvania*, and as Proprietors of large Tracts of Land in *New-England*, reserve some part to themselves, when they sell off Parcels; these Parcels when improved, rise the value of the reserved Lands.

Maryland was so called from *K. Charles* I. Queen *Henrietta Maria*, a Daughter of *Frances*, it was held of the Crown in common Soccage as of his Majesty's Honour of *Windsor*, paying yearly two Indian Arrows to the Castle of *Windsor* when demanded. By an Act of Assembly for Liberty of Conscience to all Persons who profess Christianity; Protestant Dissenters, as well as Roman

Roman Catholicks were induced to settle there. The prior Settlement of *Virginia* was of great Advantage to the settling of the Colony of *Maryland*, in supplying them with sundry Necessaries.

In *Maryland* and *Virginia*, the publick Rates or Taxes for Province, County, and Parish are called Levies : it is a Capitation or Poll Tax, upon all Tythables, that is upon all Males of Whites, and upon all Negroes, Males and Females of 16 *Æt.* and upwards to 60 *Æt.*

In *Maryland* the Tax is generally from 90 lb. to 120 Wt. of Tobacco, according to Exigencies *per Ann.* for each Poll, whereof 40 Wt. to the Rector of the Parish ; the rest is for the Poors Rate, Assemblymen's Wages, &c. The Clergymen of *Maryland* are upon the most profitable Lay of all our Plantation Clergy ; they are not confined to a fixed Salary (in *Virginia* the Parish Ministers are fixed to 16,000 l. Wt. of Tobacco *per Ann.* Salary) but in this growing Country as they are paid in Proportion to the Number of Taxables, the more that the Colony increases in People, the larger is their Income, until the Parishes become so large as to require to be subdivided : there is at present near 40,000 Taxables in *Maryland*.

In *Maryland* the Assembly at Times fixes Produce at a certain Price as a legal Tender for the Year ; for Instance, *Anno* 1732, Tobacco was fixed at 1*d* per lb. Wt. Indian Corn at 20*d.* per Bushel, Wheat at 3*s* 4*d.* per Bushel, Pork 2*d.* per lb. Wt. Quit Rents and King's Duties were excepted, and were payable in Proclamation Money, 6*s.* per heavy piece of Eight, now called a *Spanish* Dollar.

The People of *Maryland* have been happy, in not being exposed to the Incurfions and Rapines of the outland Indians ; they are covered by the neighbouring Provinces ; their opening between the Provinces of *Virginia* and *Pennsylvania* is very small. *Anno* 1677, the Indians at War with *Virginia*, by Mistake committed
some

some Outrages in *Maryland*. A few Years since, the Indians upon reserved Lands, principally in the County of *Dorchester*, East of *Chesapeak-Bay*, upon some Disgust seemed to be mutinous, but being sensible of their own Inability, that humour soon subsided. Therefore we can have no Article of their Wars with the *French*, *Spaniards*, and *Indians*.

The History of the Vicissitudes in Grants and consequential Governments or Jurisdictions is of permanent Use; but the Provincial or Municipal Acts as to Divisions of Districts and Counties, are variable and fluctuating according to the Humours of the Assembly Men. During the Civil Wars, the *Baltimore* Family were deprived of their Jurisdiction in *Maryland*; after the *Restoration* 1661, they obtained a Confirmation of their Royal Patent, but the Proprietor being a *Roman Catholick*, the Court of *England* appointed the Governor and other Civil Officers. Upon the Revolution, the Crown or Court of *England* retained the Jurisdiction of the Province of *Maryland*: The present Lord *Baltimore* is of the Protestant Denomination, and is vested in the Jurisdiction as well as Property of *Maryland*.

Into *Maryland* and *Virginia* are imported about 4,000 Negro Slaves *per Ann.* some Planters have 500 Slaves, Col. *Carter* of *Virginia* is said to have had 900, and Mr. *Bennet* of *Maryland* 1300 at one Time. A Peck of Indian Corn and some Salt is their weekly Allowance of Provision for each Negro; they are reckoned to raise 1000 lb. Wt. of Tobacco besides some Barrels of Corn per Head, 6000 Tobacco Plants are reckoned to yeild 1000 lb. Wt. of Tobacco, the Planters by Act of Assembly in *Virginia* and *Maryland*, are inhibited from planting more than 6000 Plants of Tobacco per Negro.

It is reckoned, there may be 300 to 400 Felons or Miscreants imported yearly to *Maryland* from *England*; this Importation of a vile Levies is sufficient to corrupt any

any Plantation Settlement or Improvement ; it is expected that the Government at Home are contriving a more salutary Method of punishing some Criminals than by sowing of them in the Colonies.

As the Colonies or Provinces of *Virginia* and *Maryland*, lye in the same long Bay of *Chesapeak*, we cannot avoid giving a joint Account of them upon some Occasions, principally with Regard to their Trade and Navigation.

Rivers and Mountains.

The gradual Soundings in the Ocean before Vessels enter *Chesapeak-Bay*, renders the Navigation of *Virginia* and *Maryland* very safe ; by the many navigable Rivers, Bays and Creeks which communicate with the great Bay, the Water Carriage is very commodious : This fine Bay reaches from Cape *Henry* at its Entrance in about 37 d. Lat. to the bottom of the Bay where it receives the River *Sesquabanab* in about 39 d. 45 m. Lat. *Virginia* lies upon this Bay from Cape *Henry* in Lat. 37, to the Mouth of *Potomock* River, which divides *Virginia* from *Maryland* in Lat. 38 : *Maryland* lies upon the other Part of this long Bay.

Upon the East Side of this great Bay are many small Bays, Creeks, and Rivers, but of short Course, because the Neck of Land between this Bay and the Ocean is narrow ; in the *Virginia* Part there are no Rivers ; in the *Maryland* Part there are several short navigable Rivers, which generally and naturally serve as Boundaries of Counties, viz. *Pokomoke*, *Witomoco*, *Nanticoke*, *Chaptank*, *Wye*, *Chester*, *Sasapbras*, *Elke*, and North East Rivers.

Upon the West Side of this long Bay are many long navigable beautiful Rivers ; in the *Virginia* Part are *James* River, *York* River, *Rapabanok* River, and the South Side of *Potomock* River, by these the Western Shore of *Virginia* is divided into four Necks of Land,

the Property of three of these Necks is in the Crown, the Property of the Northern Neck is in Lord *Fairfax*, who married the Heiress of Lord *Colepeper*, as shall be related more at large in the Section of *Virginia*; in the *Maryland* Part are the North Side of *Potomock* River, *Patuxen* River, *South* River, *Severn* River, *Patapsco* River, *Gunpowder* River.

The two Capes of *Virginia* which make the Entrance of the Bay, are about 20 Miles distant, and were called by Capt. *Smith*, *Henry* and *James*, the Names of K. *James* I. two Sons; the direct Course of the Bay is N. by W. and S. by E. From *Babama* Landings at the bottom of the Bay to *New-Castle* on *Delaware* River, are 30 Miles good Travelling.

Sesquahanab River, as we mentioned in the Section of *Pennsylvania*, comes from small Ponds a little South of *Mohawks* River in the Province of *New York*, crosses the Province of *Pennsylvania* and falls into the bottom of *Chesapeak* Bay in the Northern Parts of *Maryland*.

The other great Rivers of *Virginia* and *Maryland*, all lye W. Side of the Bay; only *James* River, and *Potomock* River reach the great *Apolacian* Mountains, called the *Blue-Hills*. In *Virginia* and *Maryland* the Tides are very small.

Maryland and *Virginia* are flat Countries, excepting the *Apolacian* great Mountains to the Westward, which begin in the Province of *Pennsylvania*, and run 900 Miles S. W. at about 150 or 200 Miles Distance from the Eastern Shore of the *Atlantick* Ocean, and terminate in the Bay of *Apolaxy* near *Pensacola*, in the Gulph of *Mexico*. Col. *Spotswood* Lieut. Governor of *Virginia*, was the first who passed the *Apolacian* Mountains, or great *Blue-Hills*, and the Gentlemen his Attendants were called *Knights of the Horse-shoe*, having discovered a Horse-Pass. At present there are two Passes cross these Mountains, the North Pass is in *Spotsylvania*, the South Pass is near *Brunswick*. Some Rivers have been discovered on the West Side of the *Apolacian* Mountains,

tains, which fall into the River *Ohio*, which falls into the River *Mississippi* below the River *Illinois*.

For some further Account of the *Apolacian Mountains*, see the Section of *Pennsylvania*, Vol. II. P. 313. The *Irish* who had made Settlements in the Western Parts of *Pennsylvania*, are exceeded by the *Germans* of late Years imported into *Pennsylvania*, these *Germans* by a Superior Industry and Frugality (notwithstanding of the North of *Ireland*, Protestants being noted for Industry and Frugality) have purchased most of the Irish Settlements there, and the Irish move further into *Maryland*, *Virginia*, and *North-Carolina*, along the Foot of the *Apolacian Mountains*, where the Land is good and very promising, being the Wash of these Hills and Mountains: The Indian Traders travel this Road, to head many of the Rivers, here are several Congregations of Irish *Presbyterians*, to be described in the Section of *Virginia*.

The Alarm List, and the Training Militia are nearly in the same Manner, and under the same Regulations as in the Colonies already mentioned.

As to the Numbers of White and Black People in the Province, we may make some Estimate from the Polls of Taxables as found 1734 upon an exact Scrutiny, when every Taxable was allowed 30*s* out of a large Emission of Paper Currency, they were at that Time about 36,000 Persons of white Men 16 *Æt.* and upwards, and of Blacks Men and Women from 16 *Æt.* to 60 *Æt.* perhaps at present the Taxables may be about 40,000.

The Proprietor's Quit-Rents are 2*s* Sterl. per *Ann.* for every 100 Acres, he in Time patented vacant Lands at 4*s* per 100 Acres, lately he has endeavoured to let vacant Lands at 10*s* Quit-Rent per 100 Acres, but it did not take; he manages the patenting of Lands and collecting of the Quit-Rents by Agents. Not many Years since, the Assembly with Consent of the Lord Proprietor, by way of Experiment, during the Term of the three Years, granted their Proprietor in Lieu of Quit-Rents,

a Revenue of 3*s* 6*d* Sterl. Duty per Hogshead of Tobacco, to be paid by the Merchant or Shipper, thus the Planters or Assembly to ease themselves, laid the Burthen upon Trade, this amounted to about £. 5,000 Sterl. *per Ann.* but upon the Expiration of the three Years, this Projection was dropt, and the Proprietor found it more for his Interest to revert to the Revenue arising from his Quit-Rents.

The Governors Allowance of Salary is as per Agreement with the Proprietor ; The Council are paid by the Country 180 lb. Tobacco *per Diem*, which is much grumbled at, because they are of his Appointment, and his Creatures : The Representatives are paid by the Country or publick Revenue 160 lb. Tobacco *per Diem*.

The Proprietor has several reserved good Mannors in many Parts of the Province, which he lets to Farm. By his Patent the Proprietor is not obliged to transmit the Provincial Laws Home for Approbation.

Anno 1704, The Assembly laid a Duty of 2*s* per Hogshead Tobacco, one half to the Proprietor, the other half towards the Charges of the Government.

There is an Impost upon Negro Slaves of 20*s* Sterl. and 20*s* Currency.

As in the other *British* Colonies, they have distinct Province, County, and Parish Rates or Taxes. The Provincial Taxes are Polls of Taxables at 90 lb. of Tobacco per Head or upwards, according to Exigencies ; upon the *Cuba* or *Spanish West-India* Expedition, it was 120 lb : Impost upon Servants, Slaves, and Liquors, Excise, &c.

Currencies. The principal Currency of *Maryland* and *Virginia* is Tobacco per lb. or Ct. Wt. as it is stated from Time to Time by Acts of Assembly or tacit general Consent of the People. In *Maryland*, before 1734, the Currency was reckoned at Proclamation Value, 6*s* per heavy piece of Eight ; but that Year the Assembly went into the iniquitous Scheme of a Paper Currency, which fraudulently had been practised in many of our Colonies ;

Colonies; they emitted £. 90,000 in Bills of publick Credit, whereof 30*s* to every Taxable, being 36,000 Taxables, is £. 54,000, the remaining 36,000, was to build a Governor's House, and to be let upon Loan: The Fund for calling in these Bills of publick Credit was a Duty upon Liquors, &c. to be paid in Sterling, and lodged in the Bank of *England*, all these Bills to be cancelled in the Space of 30 Years. These Bills were not (by the Act of Assembly) receivable in the Proprietors Quit-Rents, and sundry publick Fees, because an ensuing Depreciation was obvious to People of Foresight; and accordingly from 33 and 3 Quarters Difference of Exchange with *London*, it gradually did rise to 150 Difference. *Anno* 1740, the *Pennsylvania* 8*s* was equal to 12*s* *Maryland*; but as the Fund for cancelling these Bills of Credit was regularly transmitted to the Bank of *England*, they gradually recovered their Value, and *Anno* 1748, 200 *Maryland* was equal to 100 Sterl.

The first Period for calling in and cancelling one third of these Bills was in *September* 1748, and by Act of Assembly there was allowed from *September* 29, 1748, to *March* 29, 1749, to bring in all the Bills to be burnt; accordingly of the £. 90,000, £. 83,962 16*s*. were brought in (the remaining £. 6,000 was supposed to be annihilated by being torn, lost, &c.) and burnt, the Possessors were paid one third in Bills of Exchange upon the Bank of *England*, and two thirds in new Bills; after 16 Years more, the Possessors of the two Thirds will receive 15*s* Sterl. for every 20*s* Currency.

Courts, Legislative and Executive.

The first Settlement was at *St. Mary's*, near the Mouth of *Potomock* River; the *Legislative* Court or General Assembly, and the Provincial Supreme Court of Judicature were kept there many Years, but *Anno* 1699, for the better Conveniency of the whole Province, they were removed to *Annapolis* at the Mouth of the *River Severn*, as being nearly the Centre of the Province.

At first the Province was divided into 10 Counties, being five each Side of the great Bay.

<i>St. Mary's</i>	West Side.	<i>Somerset</i>	East Side.
<i>Charles</i>		<i>Dorchester</i>	
<i>Calvert</i>		<i>Talbot</i>	
<i>Ann Arundel</i>		<i>Kent</i>	
<i>Baltimore</i>		<i>Cecil</i>	

Anno 1695, Prince George, an additional County, was constituted on the West Side of the Bay, and all the Counties were divided into 30 Parishes.

At present 1752, the Province of *Maryland* is divided into 14 Counties, that is 7 Counties each Side of the great Bay.

<i>St. Mary's</i>	West Side.	<i>Worcester</i>	East Side.
<i>Calvert</i>		<i>Somerset</i>	
<i>Prince George</i>		<i>Dorchester</i>	
<i>Charles</i>		<i>Talbot</i>	
<i>Ann Arundel</i>		<i>Q. Annes</i>	
<i>Baltimore</i>		<i>Kent</i>	
<i>Frederick</i>		<i>Cecil</i>	

Formerly in *Maryland*, the Assembly or Legislative lower House (the Council is called the Upper House of Assembly) was triennial; at present they are called, adjourned, prorogued, and dissolved at the Governor's Pleasure; the Representatives are called the lower House of Assembly.

In the Government of *Maryland*, there are four Negatives in the Legislature, viz. the lower House or House of Representatives where all Bills for Acts do originate, the Governor's Council, the Governor, and Lord Proprietor.

Of the four Negatives in the Legislature, the Proprietor may be said to have three, viz. the Proprietor's own Negative, that of his Governor or Deputy, and that of the Council nominated by himself.

The Complement of the Council is twelve, appointed by the Governor General, Principal, or Proprietor; but paid by the Province, 180 lb. Tobacco *per Diem*.

The

The lower House of Assembly or House of Representatives, consists of four from each of the present 14 Counties, and two from the Metropolis or Provincial Town of *Annapolis*, paid 160 lb. Tobacco *per Diem*.

With regard to the *Executive Courts*, we may begin with the Parish Vesteries, who not only manage the Affairs of the Parish Church, but also manage the Prudential Matters of the District, as the Select Men, so called in *New-England*, manage their Township Affairs, they are also Assessors of Rates or Taxes. In each Parish they are 12 in Number for Life, and upon a Demise, the Survivors supply the Vacancies after the Manner of the *Urædschap*, of the Towns in *Holland*.

The County Courts in *Maryland*, are held in the Months of *March, June, August, and November*, at present they are as follows,

1st Tuesday of said Mon. in	} Talbot C. } Baltimre } St. Mary's } Worcester	2d Tuesday of said M.in.	} Dorchester C. } Cecil } Ann Arundel } Charles

In the Months of *April* and *September*, there is a Circuit Court of Assizes for trying Titles of Land, and of Criminal Cases: One distinct Court each side of the Bay consisting of a Chief Judge, an Assistant Judge, and proper Juries, who sit in the respective County Court Houses.

From the County Courts, there is Appeal to the Provincial Court of *Annapolis*, which is held 3d Tuesday of *May*, and 3d Tuesday of *October* in personal Debts of £. 50 or upwards.

In the City of *Annapolis* are held quarterly Mayors Courts, *viz.* last Tuesday in *January, April, July, and October*.

From the *Provincial Courts*, held at *Annapolis*, there is allowed an Appeal, in Cases of £. 300 Sterl. Value

or upwards, to the King in Council, the Appeal is first brought under the Deliberation (this is a Regulation for all the Colonies) of a Committee of Council called the Lords of Appeals, and from thence reported to the King in Council for a final Determination.

The *Commissary*, a place of about £. 1000 per Ann. is not a Superintendant of the *Clergy*, he is a Judge concerning the Probate of Wills, granting of Administrations, and the like.

The Lieut. Governor is *Chancellor*, he grants Licences for Marrying, which are given out or sold at 25*s* by a Minister or Parson in each County, whereof 20*s* to the Governor, and 5*s* to this Parson; he has Fees for the great Seal of the Province, and sundry other Perquisites; the Sallary allowed him by the Proprietor is per Agreement and seldom known; the Country generally gives three half Pence per Hoghead Tobacco exported.

The Court of *Vice Admiralty*, is of the same Nature as in the Colonies already described; as is also

The *Justiciary* Court of Admiralty for trying Cases of Piracy, Robbery, and other Felonies committed on the High Seas, appointed by a Commission from *Queen Anne*, pursuant to an Act of Parliament, 11, 12, *Gul.* called an Act for the more effectual Suppression of Piracy.

The Proprietors and Deputy Governors.

We have already hinted, Vol. II. P. 358, that Sir *George Calvert*, afterwards Lord *Baltimore*, obtained from *K. Charles I.* a Promise of a Grant of these Lands now called *Maryland*, and afterwards his Son *Cecilius* Lord *Baltimore*, had a Royal Patent for the same, 1632.

During the Civil Wars in *England*, and the Usurpation of *Oliver Cromwell*, the Concerns of the *Baltimore* Family in *Maryland* lay Dormant, the Family being bigotted *Roman Catholicks*. Soon after *K. Charles II.* Restoration, 1661 *Charles* Lord *Baltimore*, Son of *Cecilius* obtained a Royal Confirmation of the 1632 Grant; he went to *Maryland*, and continued there some time.

Not-

Notwithstanding of the *Baltimore* Family being rigid *Roman Catholick Zealots*, K. *James II.* superfeded their Jurisdiction there; the Scheme of the *English Court* at that Time was, to reduce all Proprietary and Charter Governments, to the Jurisdiction of the Crown.

After the Revolution of K. *William III.* the *Baltimore* Family had better Usage, and at present they are become good Protestant Subjects; for the Succession of the Lords *Baltimore*, see Vol. II. P. 309. *Charles* Lord *Baltimore*, Member of the *British Parliament* for the County of *Surrey* died in *April 1751*, and was succeeded by his Son *Frederick* Lord *Baltimore*.

Upon the Revolution, Sir *Edmond Andross* was appointed Governor of *Maryland*, and was superfeded by Col. *Nicholson*: *Andross* died in *Lond. 1714*, in a great Age.

Col. *Nat. Blackiston*, succeeded Col. *Nicholson*. *

Col. *Blackiston* was succeeded by Col. *William Seymour* 1704: *Seymour* put into *Barbadoes* by Strefs of Weather, and had an eight Months Voyage.

Col. *Corbet* succeeded as Lieut. Governor in Place of Col. *Seymour*.

Col. *Hunt* arrives Lieut. Governor 1714, and upon K. *George's* Accession he was continued Governor.

* Col. *Nicholson* was a Knight Errant Governor; by his Curfing, Swearing, and Hypocritical devotional Exercises; he was at Times made Use of by the Court in dirty Affairs; particularly when any new Encroachments upon the Privileges of a People were designed with harsh Usage; for Instance 1686, he was appointed Lieut. Governor of the Dominions of *New-England* under Sir *Edmond Andross*: 1710, upon the much faulted Revolution in the Ministry of Queen *Anne*, he was sent to the Northern Colonies of *British North-America*, with an unprecedented Commission as *Inspector General* of all Affairs, Ecclesiastick, Civil, and Military; and in that Capacity did much intimidate some Governors and their Councils: Governor *Hunter* of *New-York*, a Gentleman of Spirit told me, that if Col. *Nicholson* had proceeded to *New-York*, and acted in the same Manner as he did in the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay*; he would at all Risks, have sent him Home, to be tried by the Judicatories there, as a Disturber of the Peace of the Colony under Patext of an Anticonstitutional unprecedented Commission.

I shall only mention the Succession of Governors of Note.

Benedict Leonard Calvert, Esq; homeward bound, died at Sea 1732, and was succeeded by *Samuel Ogle*, Esq; 1746, 7 in March arrives *Samuel Ogle*, Esq; appointed Lieut. Governor of *Maryland* in Place of *Thomas Bladen*, Esq; Mr. *Ogle* continues Lieutenant Governor at this Writing, 1752.

Produce and Manufactures.

These are nearly the same in the Provinces of *Maryland* and *Virginia*, this Article may serve for both.

Tobacco * is an *aboriginal American* Plant or Herb, and is said to have been first found among the *Florida* Indians,

* As the Use of this Plant or Herb by an unaccountable Whim is become the general Amusement of *Europe* and of the *European* Settlements on the Eastern Side of *North-America*, by Smoaking, Snuffing, and Chewing ; and as no Authors hitherto have given us an exact Description or *Icon* of this Plant, I do here describe it from the Life, by my own Observations as it grows.

There are many curious *Virginia* Gentlemen Planters, who as *Botanists* cultivate Varieties of *Tobacco* ; but as this is not a *Botanical* Essay, I must drop them, and shall only describe that *Species* which is cultivated and manufactured for Exportation in Trade.

Nicotiana major latifolia. C. B. P. M. H. 2, 492. *Nicotiana major*, sive *Tabaccum majus*. J. B. 3. 629. *Hyoscyamus Peruvianus*. Dod. P. 450. *Tobacco* : The *Icons* of *John Baubine* and of *Morison* are not exact. It is an annual Plant, when it is at its full Growth, it is about the height of an ordinary Man, the Stalk is straight, hairy, and clammy, like that of the *Hyoscyamus niger* vel *vulgaris*. C. B. P. Common *black Henbane* ; the whole Habit is of an obsolete yellowish Green ; Leaves alternate, some of the lower Leaves are a Cubit long and nine Inches wide entire, but waved ; the lateral *Costæ* of the Leaf arch into one another near the Margin, the Leaves have no Pedicles (the *major angustifolia* has long Pedicles) and by an auriculated Base embrace the Stalk ; towards the top, the Stalk branches from the Sinus's of the Leaves, and higher from the Sinus of a slender *folliculum* proceed fascicles of Flowers : The Flower is slender and tubulous one and half Inch long, yellowish with an obsolete diluted Purple Brim,

Indians, who Smoaks to satisfy their Hunger ; some write, that it came from the Island *Tobago* one of the *West-India* Islands of nearly the same Name ; but most probably it came from *Peru*, because in *North-America* it is not spontaneous, the aboriginal Indians of *North-America* do not cultivate it, they purchase it of the English Planters and smoak it with Pleasure. Its *Classical* or *Tribe* Names it is *Nicotiana* so called from *John Nicot*, a Frenchman Ambassador at the Court of *Portugal*, he sent some of its Seed, which he had from a Dutch Man, to the Court of *France*.

It has been said by some Writers, that Sir *Francis Drake* first brought it to *England* from the Island *Tobago* of the *West-Indies*. The Name is Indian ; we have no certain Account of *Tobacco*, till Sir *Walter Rawleigh's* † Arrival in *England* from *Virginia*, 1585, it was called *Indian Henbane* : It was used by the Aboriginal *American* Indians, both in *North* and *South-America* before the *Europeans* arrived there.

not divided but expanded into 4 or 5 Angles ; the Calix is tubulous of 4 or 5 narrow Segments ; the Pistillum becomes the seed Vessel Conoidal, 5 or 6 Lines Diameter at bottom, and near an Inch long, *Bicopsular* with a middle spongy double *Placenta*, and contains many small round brownish Seeds ; the Seed is ripe end of *September* : In *New-England* it is planted in Cow Pens, it is hotter and does not smoak so agreeably as that of *Virginia*.

In Trade there are only two Species of *Tobacco*, viz. *Aranohoe* from *Maryland*, and the Northern Parts of *Virginia*, and sweet scented from the South Parts of *Virginia*, whereof the best kind is from *James* and *York* Rivers ; the first is the strongest, and is in demand in the Northern Markets of *Europe*, the other is milder and more pleasant ; the Difference seems to be only from the Soil ; sweet-scented which grows in sandy Lands is best for Smoaking when new, or only two to three Years old ; that from stiff Land if kept five or six Years, much exceeds the former.

† Sir *Walter Rawleigh* upon his return from *Virginia* to *London* 1585, having practised *Tobacco Smoaking*, in a gay Humour in his Clolet, ordered his Servant to bring him some small Beer ; in the mean Time having lighted his *Tobacco Pipe*, and collected a Mouthful of Smoak, let it fly in the Servant's Face to surprize him ; the Servant imagining that his Master's Face was a Fire, threw the small Beer in his Face, and innocently returned the Jest.

Imported

Imported *com. annis* to *Great-Britain* from *Virginia* about 35,000 Hogsheads of 800 lb. to 950 lb. Wt. per Hoghead; from *Maryland* about 30,000 Hogsheads of 700 lb. and upwards. It is an enumerated Commodity and cannot be exported from *British America* to any Ports than *Great-Britain*, and its Plantations. The neat Duty upon Tobacco imported into *Great-Britain* is about £. 200,000 Sterl. per Ann. and £. 14000 Seizures. Anno 1733, when Sir *Robert Walpole* first Commissioner of the Treasury was projecting a Reduction of sundry Customs or Imposts upon Goods, to an Excise, he proposed in Parliament, that the Duty upon Tobacco which at that Time was 6d 1 third per lb. should be only 4d 3 Farthings per lb. whereof 4d Excise and three Farthings Duty, this Scheme did not succeed. *

By a Convention or Agreement between the Courts of *Great-Britain* and *France*, during the late War with *France*, the Farmers of Tobacco in *France* did Contract with Merchants in *Great-Britain*, (Mr. *Fitz Gerald* was the general French Agent in *Britain*,) for some British Tobacco Ships with Passports, and to return to *Great-Britain* in Ballast; the shipping Ports in *Great-Britain* were *London*, *Bristol*, *Liverpole*, *White-haven*, and *Glasgow*: The Delivery Ports in *France* were *Diope*, *Havre de Grace*, *Morlaine*, *Bordeaux*, *Bayonne*, and *Marsilles*.

Virginia and *Maryland* sometimes produces more Tobacco than they can vent to Advantage, by glutting the Markets † too much, and occasions a mutinous Disposition among the Planters, as happened in *Bacon's Rebellion* in *Virginia*, and at Times to keep up the Price

* Sir *Robert Walpole* was very Intense upon bringing most Duties partly into Excise, and partly into Customs, the better to multiply Revenue Officers, Creatures of the Ministry, towards carrying Parliament Elections, &c.

† This is sometimes the Case with the *Dutch East India Spices*, and the *West-India Sugars*.

of Tobacco they burn a certain Quantity for each Taxable, as was done in *Maryland* upon their first Emission of Paper Money.

The Tobacco is generally cultivated by Negroes in Sets, seven or eight Negroes with an Overseer is a set; each working Negro is reckoned one Share, the Overseer has one and a half or two Shares. The Charge of a Negro is a Coarse woolen Jacket and Breeches, with one pair of Shoes in Winter; victualling is one peck of Indian Corn and some Salt per Week. To prevent Tobacco from becoming a Drug, no Taxable is to cultivate above six Thousand Plants of Tobacco, besides Grain.

The Plantation Duty is 1*d* Sterl. per lb. upon Tobacco exported to the other Colonies, and is about £. 200 towards the Revenue of the College of *Williamsburg* in *Virginia*.

Tobacco is not only their chief Produce for Trade, but may also be called their Medium or Currency, it is received in Taxes and Debts, the Inspector's Notes for Tobacco received by him, may be transferred, and upon Sight of these Notes the Inspector immediately delivers to the Bearer so much Tobacco.

Formerly the Tobacco Affair was managed by Receivers at culling Houses near the Shipping Places, where the Planter delivered his Tobacco to the Merchant; at present in every River there is a certain Number of Country Stores where the Planters Tobacco is lodged, every Hogshead is branded with the Marks of the Planter, Store, and River.

The common Culture of Tobacco is in this Manner. The Seed is sowed in Beds of fine Mould, and transplanted beginning of *May*, the Plants are set at 3 or 4 Feet Intervals or Distances, they are hilled and kept continually weeded; when as many Leaves are shot out as the Soil can nourish to Advantage, the Plant is topt and it grows no higher, it is worm'd from Time to Time, the Suckers which put forth between the Leaves are taken

taken off from Time to Time till the Plant arrives to Perfection, which is in *August*; when the Leaves begin to turn brownish and spot, in a dry Time the Plant is cut down and hanged up to dry, after being sweated in Heaps for one Night; when it may be handled without crumbling (Tobacco is not handled but in moist Weather,) the Leaves are stript off from the Stalk, tied up in little Bundles and packt up in Hogsheads for Transportation. No Suckers nor ground Leaves are allowed to be merchantable.

An industrious Man may manage 6000 Plants of Tobacco, and 4 Acres of Indian Corn.

The small Quantity of Tobacco which some People raise in *Pennsylvania* and *North-Carolina* is generally shipt off from *Maryland* and *Virginia*.

Tobacco is injurious to the Nerves, it is somewhat * *Anodyne* and intoxicates Persons not used to it.

PORK, vast Numbers of Swine or Hogs run wild or ramble in the Woods of *Maryland*, *Virginia*, and *North-Carolina*, they are generally small; salted and barrellled they make a considerable Branch of the Export of these Colonies; they feed mostly upon Nuts of all Kinds, called Mast, they eat oily and rank.

Mast † or Forrest Nuts of many Kinds are very plenty every second or third Year, and the following Year not so plenty; thus it is with Apples and Cyder in *New-England*; the Plenty and consequently the Price of Pork from *Maryland*, *Virginia*, and *North-Carolina* depends upon the goodness of their Mastting Years;

* The *Europeans* use Wine, and other fermented Liquors, as also Spirits distilled from them; The *Turks*, *Persians*, and other Oriental Nations use *Opium*, *Bang*, *Betel*, &c. all which occasions a sort of Indolence or Relaxation of Mind: Thus Mankind by a natural tacit Consent allow, that the intense Application of Mind, the Cares and inquietudes of Life, require some such expedients of Alleviation.

† This Word or Term seems to proceed from the Latin Word *Masticare*.

Anno 1733, a good Mast Year, one Man a Planter and Merchant in *Virginia*, salted up three Thousand Barrels of Pork. Next to the Pork fed with Indian Corn as in *New-England*, Acrons make the firmest Pork; Beach Nuts make sweet Pork but flabby, soft and oily. In *Westphalia*, the Hogs in the Woods feed mostly upon Chestnuts.

GRAIN. *Wheat* in *Maryland* and *Virginia* is subject to the Weevil, a small Insect of the scarabeous Kind, which sometimes takes to it in the Ear when a growing. The *Maryland* and *Virginia* *Wheat* Weighs from 56 lb. to 60 lb. Wt. per Bushel, and casts white; that from *Pennsylvania* does not weigh so much; the *Wheat* formerly imported from *Nova-Scotia* was light and cast dark like Rye, at present the *Prairies*, as they are called, or the dik'd in *Wheat* Lands are wore out. May the present political diverting publick Amusement of improving *Nova-Scotia*, become intentionally real, towards a Fishery, a Place of Arms for our Navies, a Nursery of Husband-men, and a Northern Frontier for the Protection of our British Colonies!

Good Land in *Maryland* and *Virginia* may yeild per Acre 15 Bushels *Wheat*, or 30 Bushels Indian Corn, which casts whiter than that of *New-England*.

Calavances are exported to several of the other Colonies. *Phaseolus erectus minor semine sphaerico albido et rubro, hilo nigro.* C. B. P. white and red *Calavances* or *Virginia* Pease; they yeild better than the common Pease of *Europe*, and are good profitable Food for the poorer sort of white People, and for Negro Slaves.

Mays or Indian Corn has been already described.

They raise in the Uplands, quantities of Hemp and Flax. Anno 1751, in *October*, from the back Settlements of *Maryland*, there came into *Baltimore* Town near the bottom of *Chesapeak-Bay*, sixty Waggons loaden with Flax Seed. In some Counties of *Maryland* are erected Charity working Schools. Towards

Towards the Mountains there are some Furnaces for running of Iron Oar into Pigs and hollow cast Ware, and Forges to refine Pig Iron into Bars.

Timber and other wooden Lumber. Their Oak is of a frait Grain and easily rives into Staves, in building of Vessels it is not durable, they build only small Craft ; some Years since they built a very large Ship called the *British Merchant*, burthen one thousand Hogsheads, with many Repairs she kept in the *Virginia Trade* 36 Years.

Their black Walnut is in demand for Cabinets, Tables, and other Joiners work.

Maryland and Virginia produce large beautiful Apples, but very mealy, their Peaches are plenty and good ; from these they distil a Spirit, which they call Cyder Brandy and Peach Brandy.

The *Maryland* Affairs, concerning their Custom Houses, and Naval Officers, the Number of Entries and Clearances of Vessels, the Quality and Quantity of their Exports and Imports, and the Tribe of Officers thereto belonging, are not hitherto fully come to my Knowledge : I do not chuse to insert any thing that is not in some Regard perfect, therefore at present, I shall only copy a few Lines from the latest present State of *Great-Britain*. I observe their Salaries are small.

<i>North Potomock</i>	A Collector and to keep a Boat
<i>Patuxent</i>	A Collector and to keep a Boat
<i>Annapolis</i>	A Surveyor
<i>Potomock</i>	A Collector and to keep a Boat
<i>Both Sides of the Bay</i>	A Riding Surveyor
<i>Williamstade</i>	A Surveyor
<i>Bobama and Sassefras</i>	A Riding Surveyor
<i>Wicomoc and Munia</i>	A Surveyor
<i>Delaware Bay</i>	A Surveyor

MISCELLANIES.

As many Things designed for a general Appendix, must be loose, incoherent, and not fluent ; for the Ease of common Readers, we shall annex some Parts of it to each of the subsequent Sections by the Name of Miscellanies, being of Things omitted, or that were not come to my Knowledge at the Times of Writing, or not reducible to particular Sections. As I have all along given it the Character of Common-Place, the Summary in Propriety may admit of this Latitude.

In the *Rhode-Island* Section was omitted an authentick Court Paper dated *Windsor, Sept. 13. 1686*, concerning the Surrender of *Rhode-Island* Charter, “ His Majesty “ has graciously received the Address of the Colony of “ *Rhode-Island* and *Providence Plantations* in *New-England* ; humbly representing that upon the Signification “ of a Writ of *Quo Warranto* against their Charter, they “ had resolved in a general Assembly not to stand Suit “ with his Majesty, but wholly to submit to his Royal “ Pleasure themselves and their Charter : Wherefore his “ Majesty has thought fit to accept the Surrender.” N. B. As the *Rhode-Island* Charter was not vacated by any Process in the Courts of Law, and the voluntary Surrender not properly recorded ; upon the Revolution of K. WILLIAM they reassumed their Charter, and their Actings in pursuance of that Charter are deemed good by the Court of *Great-Britain*.

In the Miscellany Article of the Section of *Pennsylvania*, Vol. II. P. 337, was inserted a Letter from the Lord Justices of *Great-Britain* to Mr. D. — Commander in Chief of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* concerning an illegally projected Synod or Consistory of the Congregational † Ministers in that Colony ; in this Letter

† Besides other Inconveniencies, there seems to be an Impropriety or Inconsistency in Congregationalist or Independent Religion Societies

Letter Mr. D. — seems to be faulted as conniving at such Anti-constitutional Proceedings; as this Gentleman was noted for his Fidelity to the Crown, and Probity towards the People under his Direction, when in the Administration of that Colony; I cannot avoid publishing his Vindication of himself in a Letter to the Board of Trade and Plantations.

My Lords,

“ By a Ship lately arrived, I received from their Excellencies, the Lords Justices, an Instruction for my future Proceedings with respect to a Synod proposed to be held by the Ministers of this his Majesty’s Province, which shall be punctually obeyed as there shall be Occasion; their Lordships were also pleased to Censure the Proceedings already had in that Affair. Wherefore I think myself obliged to acquaint your Lordships, that I did not pass a Consent for a Synod, but only to a Vote of the Council and Assembly, reserving the Consideration thereof to the next Sessions, as you will see by the Copies of the Votes of that Sessions transmitted to you soon after the rising of the Court, and I was then of Opinion it would not come on the Carpet again, as it never did; notwithstanding the present Sessions had been sitting for some Weeks before their Lordships Orders, concerning the same was received; Nevertheless I should have taken myself obliged to have asked your Lordships Directions therein, if I had apprehended it to be of a new and extraordinary Nature, but I must observe, that a Vote in the same Words was passed on the like Occasion by his Majesty’s Council here in the Year 1715, and never as I have heard of, censured by your Lordships, and here I humbly take leave to say in behalf of

ties petitioning for a Synod, or superior collective Authority: It seems to intimate that the subordinate Classical Way of Subordination in Church Government with the Presbyterians, is natural in its Tendency.

“ the

“ the Ministers of this Province, that I know them to
 “ be a Body of Men most loyal and inviolably attached
 “ to his Majesty, and to his illustrious House, and there-
 “ fore I did not apprehend any Inconvenience could
 “ arise from their Assembling, especially since they
 “ make no Pretences that I know of to do any Acts of
 “ Authority, in such Meetings; though they call them
 “ by the Name of Synod.

From the Accounts we have from Time to Time received from *Pennsylvania*, of the *Moravian* Sectary there, and of a late Act of the *British* Parliament in their Favour; it was imagined that they were inoffensive in their devotional Way; but their late Character from *Germany*, seems to caution against their Proceedings.

A Continuation from the *Moravian* Affairs. Vol. II. P. 154. 335. The *Moravians* indiscreet Zealots* have been continually endeavouring to part Members from all the three established Professions, (*Papists*, *Lutherans*, and *Calvinists*) in the holy Roman Empire, especially of tender Minds. The *Bobemia* and *Moravian* Brethren, by scandalous Songs, Sermons, and Writings obruded as Gospel Truths, under the Count of *Zinzendorf*, a new sort of Religion; not to be tolerated in the Laws of the Holy Roman Empire; they used *Herenbutish* Songs, Method, and Books of Institution, Count of *Iffenburgh* and *Badingen*.

In *Maryland* and *Virginia* there is a general Toleration to legally qualified Ministers, to officiate in Places legally licensed.

Hanover is 60 Miles from *Williamsburg*. A Minister qualified, and a Meeting licensed, may claim the

* The *Vermine* in all Religions, have been *Enthusiasts*, indiscreet Zealots or Bigots, and political Managers to serve the Court Ministry in their Projections.

Liberties of Toleration, taking the usual Government Oaths, getting the Meeting Houses recorded, and subscribing the Articles of the Church of *England*, except the 34, 35, 36, and this Clause in the 20th Article, "The Church hath Power to decree Rites and Ceremonies, and Authority in Controversies of Faith." These Presbyterians voluntarily put themselves under the immediate Care of the Presbytery of *New-Castle*, and Synod of *New-York*; which they may cast off at Pleasure.

Mr. *Davies* a Presbyterian Minister came into this Colony 1748, and obtained Licences for seven Meeting Houses, an extravagant Plurality; among these he divided his Time, *viz.* three in *Hanover* County, one in *Henrico* County Southward, one in *Carolina* County Northward, one in *Louisa* County Westward, and one in *Goock* Land to the S. W. of *Hannover*; these Assemblies are generally called *New-Lights*, and may consist of about 300 Communicants. Mr. *Davies* wrote *Anno* 1751, there were not ten Dissenters within a hundred Miles of *Hannover* when he arrived there.

There is an immense Quantity of Land unsettled Westward between *Hannover* County, and the Rivers which fall into the *Mississippi* River. The three Frontier Counties in *Virginia*, of *Frederick*, *Augusta*, and *Lunenburg*, are prodigiously large, and generally settled by *Irish* Presbyterians, as is also *Amelia* and *Albemarle* Counties. In *Virginia* to the Westward, they are continually making new Counties, as they do new Townships in *New-England*.

The County Courts grant Meeting-House Licences, but may be negatived by the superior or supreme Court. Sometimes the County Courts deny the granting of Licences, and sometimes County Licences when granted, are negatived by the Council, alledging that it does not belong to a County Court to proceed in such Affairs, and that a dissenting Minister can have no legal tolerated Right to more Meeting Houses than one.

The * Frontier Counties of *Maryland* and *Virginia* are generally inhabited (as I hinted before) by North of *Ireland Scots* Presbyterians, who landed in *Pennsylvania*, but sold their Improvements there, to the more industrious *German* Settlers : Their Pulpit Discourses are (generally *New-lights* so called) against the Modish System of *Arminianism*, moral Duties, and speculative Truths : some of them are under the Care of the imaginary Synod of *Philadelphia*, some belong to the Synod of *New-York* ; but under the immediate Care of the Presbytery of *New-Castle* ; in this Presbytery there are 12 Members and two or three Candidates upon Probation.

Roman † *Catholicks* abound in *Maryland*.

* Mr. D——ies, a dissenting Presbyterian Minister of *Hanover* County in *Virginia*, in a Piece which he printed 1751, concerning the State of Religion among the Protestant Dissenters in *Virginia*, gives some Informations concerning these Affairs, but with a *New-Light* or *Enthusiastick* Turn. He writes, that there has been a considerable Revival or rather Settlement of Religion in *Baltimore* County of *Maryland*, which lies along *Sesquabanab* River and borders on *Pennsylvania* ; as also in *Kent* County, and *Queen Anne's* County between *Chesapeak-Bay* and *Delaware* River. He says there have been in *Maryland* and *Virginia* a great Number of *Scots* Merchants, (he means Merchants Clerks, Super-Cargoes, and Subluper-Cargoes) who were educated in the Presbyterian Way ; but generally prove a Scandal to their Religion and Country, by their loose Principles, and immoral Behaviour, and become indifferent in religious Professions, and affect Politeness in turning Deists, or fashionable Conformists. N. B. Young Persons of any Nation, after being fettered with peculiar Religion Modes, when turned loose, they become wanton, and indulge themselves in Irregularities.

† It is not easily to be accounted for, that the *British* Government are not more sedulous, in purging off by Lenitives, not by *Drafficks*, the pernicious Leaven of Popery (their Doctrine of *no Faith to be kept with Hereticks* or Dissenters from them, destroys all Society) which prevails in *Montserat*, *Maryland*, and *Ireland*. The List of Protestants and Papists in *Ireland*, as computed (in all Cases, I use the last Computations that are in my Knowledge) Anno 1732 and 1733.

	Protestant Families.	Popish Families.
In <i>Ulster</i>	62, 620 — — — —	38, 459
<i>Leinster</i>	25, 238 — — — —	92, 424
<i>Munster</i>	13, 337 — — — —	106, 407
<i>Conought</i>	4, 299 — — — —	44, 133

105, 494

281, 423

As

† An Indolent Way of reading their publick Prayers and Sermons prevails in our Colonies.

The Medical Digression continued.

The Science or Art of Medicine will ever remain Weak in Theory, and must be supplied by Experience, and some Specificks (I do not mean *Quack Nostrums*) whose salutary Operations or Effects in some Diseases have been discovered not by Investigation but by Chance, such as the *Peruvian Bark, Mercury, Opium*.

Experience and sedulous Observation are too much neglected by the indolent Practitioners of our Colonies; they chuse to practice from Authorities, whereas Authorities must always give way to Experience; the Nature of Medical Affairs allow of no other Demonstration than that of good Observation; *Sydenham* on the Small Pox is reckoned his Master-piece. *

In

† The Churches where the Minister reads the Prayers and Sermons may be called *Reading Houses*, and the Minister may be called the Reader, but at present only the Assistant Minister is called the Reader and Lecturer: In *Scotland* and in the foreign Churches of all Denominations, reading of Sermons or Discourses is not practised.

* From my Practice relating to the Small Pox, which prevailed in *Boston* 1721, and 1730, for the benefit of the Publick, especially of my Neighbours or Towns-Men; I beg the Readers Indulgence in allowing me to observe, that in the Management of the spreading *Small Pox*, it may be advisable for Persons much advanced in Years, and consequently their Juices rancid, and Persons infirm and of a bad Habit of Body, to avoid the Infection by retiring into the Country for a few Months, considering that the *Small Pox* does not prevail in *Boston*, but after long Periods; since the first Settlement of *Boston* the Small Pox was Epidemical or Popular only 1649, 1666, 1677 and 1678, 1689 and 1690, 1702, 1721, 1730, the present Small-Pox 1752, perhaps may spread or not spread. All other Persons especially Children, may continue in Town and run the Risk in the natural Way or by Inoculation, after a previous proper Regimen: This Regimen according to the best of my Judgment is a *Mercurial Purge* or two, a *soft Diet*; avoid catching of Cold, use no violent Exercise of Body or Perturbation of Mind; upon Seizure, if the Patient is *plethorick*, and the Fever runs high, Blood-letting is advisable (but not upon or after Eruption) and gives Room for Nature

ture

In our Colonies, if we deduct Persons who die of old Age, of *mala stamina vite* or original bad Constitutions, of Intemperance, and Accidents, there are more die of the Practitioner than of the natural Course of the Distemper under proper *Regimen*. The Practitioners generally without any considerate Thought fall into some *routine* of Method, and Medicines, such as repeated *Blood-lettings, Opiats, Emetics, Catharticks, Mercurials, Peruvian Bark.*

In our various Colonies to prevent a notorious Depopulation from Male Practice in Medicine or Cure of Diseases; there may be Acts of Assembly for the Regulation thereof, which at present is left quite loose. A young Man without any liberal Education, by living a Year or two in any Quality with a Practitioner of any sort, Apothecary, Cancer Doctor, Cutter for the Stone, Bone-setters, Tooth-drawer, &c. with the Essential Fundamental of Ignorance and Impudence, is esteemed to qualify himself for all the Branches of the Medical Art, as much or more than Gentlemen in *Europe* well born, liberally educated (and therefore modest likewise) have travelled much, attended Medical Professors of many Denominations, frequented City Hospitals, and Camp Infirmaries, &c. for many Years.

In the Expressions of *Hippocrates*, this is literally an *Ars longa*, it requires long Experience and Observation with a peculiar Sagacity; In Practice a dull Application (we cannot much boast of Application) does not answer, there must be a suitable Genius and sometimes a particular *Paroxysm* of Imagination, as is remarkable in Poets and Painters, and as I have observed in my self,

ture to act her Part at more Liberty; in the beginning a gentle Emetick or Vomit is of good Use, it renders the Habit of the Body more meable in Circulation, by its Shocks; during the Course of this Distemper, dilute plentifully, use a cool but not cold *Regimen*; in the Declension use gentle *Catharticks*: By this Management many of my *Small-Pox* Patients have sustained the Distemper with Ease, and without Decumbiture or Confinement.

in the *Diagnostick* Part of our Profession. Knowledge, that is Observation, and Sagacity are the two great Requisites in a Physician.

In our Colonies, how can a young Man of no previous liberal Education, or Disposition to a peculiar Knowledge in the Affair, in a few Years Attendance in an Apothecary's Shop, and a few Months Travel, without practical Knowledge, attain to any Degree of Perfection in this Profession? These Things are not Mysteries or Inspirations of particular Persons in the Case, but an impudent Delusion and Fraud. I shall not call upon any Man's Name in the Question, lest it should appear a malicious or invidious Resentment for secret Injuries done, not in the way of medical Practice, but in ——— such Things we may in a Christian Spirit forgive, but naturally we cannot forget.

The Practice of Physick requires much Circumspection and Discretion, only to be attained by a long and attentive Practice. The Constitutions and other Circumstances occasion the same Species of a Distemper to appear variously; for Instance,

Inebriation, an Illness very obvious and too common in our Colonies; some it renders more vigorous, in others the Tongue and Limbs falter: some are serious, that is, praying or crying drunk; some are mad or furious, some dull and sleepy; some gay and witty, some dull and silly. Thus it is in all Distempers, the Symptoms vary according to the Constitution, and in the general Indications of Cure, ought to be allowed for.

In Astronomy the Inequality of the Motions of the several Planets are many and various, but by indefatigable Observations they are reduced to Equations or Rules; but it is to be feared that in our *Microcosm* or *Animal Economy*, there are so many Inequalities as not to admit of any fixed Rules, but must be left to the Sagacity of some Practitioners, and to the Rashness of others.



SECTION XVI.

*Concerning the Colony and Dominions
of Virginia.*

Columbus's Discoveries of *America*, set all trading or navigating Nations into the humour of Discoveries Westward of *Europe*. The *Cabots* of *Bristol*, *Italian* Mariners, obtained a Patent from *K. Henry VII*, (see Vol. I. P. 110.) Anno 1495, for all Lands they should discover West of *Europe*, with certain Royal Reservations: They ranged the *Eastern* Shore of *North America*, and took a formal, but imaginary Possession without Occupancy of sundry Parts thereof. From that Time, for near a *Century*, that Coast was not so much as navigated by the *English*; until *Sir Walter Raleigh* obtained a Patent from *Queen Elizabeth*, March 25, 1584 for Discoveries and Settlements in *America*. See Vol. I. P. 111. *Raleigh* and his Associates fitted out two Vessels, in a round-about Course by way of the *Canaries* and *Carabee West-India* Islands to the Coast of *Virginia*, they fell in with the Island *Roanoke* upon the *North Carolina* Shore, at the *Roanoke* Inlet (about 36 d. N. Lat.) of *Albemarle* Sound or River.

Sir Richard Greenville, the chief of *Sir Walter Raleigh's* Associates, 1585, at his return to *England*, left 108 Men upon *Roanoke* Island, under *Mr. Ralph Lane*; from imprudent Management they were in danger of being starved, but *Sir Francis Drake* in his Expedition to the *West Indies*, had Instructions upon his return to *England*, to touch in there, and carried these miserable People home to *England*. At the same Time *Sir Walter Raleigh*

in a Ship, and about a Fortnight after, Sir *Richard Greenville* with three Ships sailed thither. Sir *Walter* fell in with *Cape Hatteras* a little Southward of *Roanoke*, having no intelligence of the People left at *Roanoke*, he returned to *England*: Sir *Richard* found the Island, but no People, he left 50 Men upon the Island with two Years Provisions, and returned to *England*; these 50 Men were all kill'd by the *Indians*.

Next Summer 1587, three Ships with Men and Women Settlers and Provisions arrived at *Roanoke*, and formed themselves into a Government consisting of a Governor, Mr. *John White*, and 12 Councillors, incorporated by the Name of the Governor and Assistants of the City of *Raleigh* in *Virginia*: This Settlement when Mr. *White* returned to *England*, consisted of 115 Persons.

It was two Years before Mr. *White* could obtain the necessary Recruits of Supplies, after a tedious Passage with three Ships, he arrived at *Cape Hatteras*, August 1590, but in a violent Storm, they parted from their Cables, drove to Sea, and returned to *England*, without visiting the poor Settlers, to whom no Visit was attempted for the 16 following Years, and perhaps cut off by the *Indians*, being never heard of afterwards.

In pursuance of the New Charter of 1706, Capt. *Newport*, Vice Admiral with Settlers, (some Poles, and Dutch to make Tar, Pitch, Pot Ashes and Glass,) arrived at *Cape Henry* beginning of *May* 1607, he sailed up *Powhatan* or *James River* many Miles, founded *James Town*, and at his return for *England*, left about 200 Persons there; these may properly be called the first Settlers of the Colony, many of them died, and were much molested by the *Indians*. 1619 There arrived a large Supply of 1216 People, they made many Settlements, and 1620 an Assembly of Representatives called *Burgesses* was instituted, and in the Year following Courts of Judicature were appointed.

We may observe, that Capt. *John Smith*, called the Traveller, designed for *Roanoke* where *Mr. John White* had

had left 115 Persons, fell in between the Capes of *Virginia*, the Southernmost he called *Cape Henry*, the Northernmost *Cape Charles*, in honour of the King's Sons; the *Indian* Name of the Bay was *Chesapeak*, the first great River they met with, was on the South Side of this Bay by the *Indians* called *Powhatan*, and by the *English* named *James River* the King of *England*'s Name: About 50 Miles up this River, they made a Settlement upon a *Peninsula*, being convenient for Navigation, Trade, and easily fortified, and called it *James Town*. From that Time we have had an uninterrupted Possession of that Country.

Capt. *Smith*, in his History relates many Misadventures of the first *Virginia* Settlers, viz. A third supply was sent from *England* 1609, being 9 Ships and 500 People, under Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Somers*, and Capt. *Newport*; the Fleet was scattered in a Storm, and only 7 Vessels arrived; the Commission or Patent was in one of the missing Ships; this *Virginia* Settlement from 500, were soon reduced to 60 Persons, almost famished by Mismanagement, but Sir *Thomas Gates*, and Sir *George Somers*, who saved themselves with 150 more People in *Bermudas*, built two small Cedar Barks, set out *May* 10, 1610, and arrived in *Virginia* the 20th, to the Comfort of the remaining *Virginia* Settlers; soon finding much Misery they all embark to abandon the Country, but in falling down the *River*, they were met by Lord *Delaware* with three Ships and all Necessaries; Sir *George Somers* returned to *Bermudas* in his former Cedar Bark of 30 Tuns, to fetch Provisions, and soon died there, *Æt.* 60. Lord *Delaware* returned to *England*, and left Capt. *George Percy* Commander. 1611, *May* 10, arrived Sir *Thomas Dale* with 3 Ships, Men, Cattle, and Provisions: *August* 4, arrives Sir *Thomas Gates* Governor, with 6 tall Ships, 300 Men, 100 Kine, and other Cattle, Provisions and Ammunition.

1612, arrives Capt. *Argol*, with Men and Provisions. †
 1614, Sir *Thomas Gates* and Capt. *Argol* return to *England*, and Capt. *Yearly* is left Commander.

1617, Capt. *Yearly* returns for *England*, Capt. *Argol* being sent over Governor by the Council and Company; * of the Companies People, there remained 54 Men, Women and Children, about this Time the Tenants brought into the Store about 400 Bushels of Corn per Ann. Rent; Tobacco sold from 18*d* to 3*s* per lb.

1618, The Council and Company sent over Lord *Delaware* with 200 People, in a Ship of 250 Tun, he died in the Passage. 1619, arrives Sir *George Yearly* as Governor.

In a Book printed 1620, by the Treasurer and Council we find, that there were many Noblemen and Knights concerned, *Earl of Southampton* was Treasurer.

1621. Sir *Francis Wyat* is appointed Governor, and arrives with 9 Ships. Every Person was to plant 1000 Plants of Tobacco with eight Leaves each Plant, which is about 100 lb. of Tobacco; Corn sold at 2*s* 6*d* per Bushel.

To resume the thread of Occurrences. Sir *Walter Ral.* by his Attainder, having forfeited his Patent, *An.* 1606, || several

† 1613, Mr. *John Rolfe* married *Pocahontes* Daughter of *Powhatan*, the King of the *Indians*, and Peace with the *Indians* continued many Years; 1616, Mr. *Rolfe* with his *Indian* Wife went for *England*, where being upon return she soon died at *Graves-End*; *Powhatan* her Father died in *April* 1618.

* Sometimes they are called the Treasurer, Council and Company.

Capt. *Smith* called the Traveller some Time President of *Virginia*, continued the History of *Virginia* down to 1624, he was so volatile, that after 19 Years expence of Time in *America*, he had not one Foot of Land there.

Capt. *Argol* 1613, carried off two *French* Vessels from *Port Royal* in *La Nouvelle France*, or *North-Virginia*, now *Annapolis-Royal* of *Nova-Scotia*.

|| Upon the Reports of some private Traders to *North-America*, there was a Royal Grant or Patent obtained *April* 10, 1606, by two Companies in one Charter, see Vol. I. P. 365. The Northern Company insensibly vanished, and a new Company by the Name of the

Council.

several Adventurers petitioned the King for Grants with Jurisdictions, and the first collective Settlements were made (the *French* at the same Time were making Settlements in *Canada*) and 50 Miles up *Powhatan* or *James River*, Capt. *Newport* laid out *James Town*, the Government was in a President and Council sent from *England*, they had sundry Supplies from *England* about that Time, but the Settlement did not thrive: At first they were called the Honourable or Right Worshipful Company of *Virginia*. Sir *Walter Raleigh* upon his Attainder neglected *Virginia*, and by a sort of Connivance of the Court went to *Guiana* a Mine Hunting for Gold and precious Stones.

The Company of 1606, did not thrive; and *Anno*

Council of *Plymouth* had a Patent or Grant, *Nov.* 18, 1720. See Vol. I. P. 366, with a Power to convey their granted Lands to any of his Majesty's Subjects, without any formal Power of Government or Jurisdiction.

Capt. *Gosnoll*, a former Adventurer in a small Vessel with 32 Men from *Dartmouth*, essaying a more distinct Course to *Virginia*, than had been formerly practised, fell into the Bite of *Cape Cod*, (he got much Cod fish there) in *New-England* some *Biscayers* had been a fishing there, he traded with the *Indians* to Advantage, and gave Names to sundry Places, *Martha's Vineyard* because overgrown with wild Vines, *Elizabeth Islands*, &c. which they retain to this Day, he returned the same Year to *Dartmouth*. This profitable Voyage encouraged some Merchants of *Bristol* to send two Vessels 1603, in the same Tract they made a good Voyage. 1605, a single Ship from *London* fell in with the *Eastern Parts* of *Long Island* in *New-York* Government, and traded up *Connecticut River*. From these Successes, some Traders petitioned the Court for the Charter which they obtained 1606 as above.

Capt. *Smith* 1608, with sundry Vessels being the sixth Voyage to these Parts, coasted along the *Eastern Shore* of *North-America*, he writes, that *Virginia* lies from *Cape-Fear* 34 d. N. Lat. to 45 d. or *New France*, he sailed up *Chesapeak Bay*, so far as *Sasquabana River* in quest of Mines but in vain. 1609, many People were sent over with Cattle, Artillery, and Stores, were much harrassed by the *Indians* and Sicknōs. 1619, in the Compass of one Year, eleven Ships with 1216 Men, Women, and Children, arrived from *England*, and made many Settlements upon *James* and *York Rivers*.

1609, the Settlers were not exceeding 277; they surrendered their Charter, being tired out with Charges, and no prospect of Profit, and a new Patent was issued in the Name of the Treasurer and Council. This new Company appointed Lord *Delaware* General or Governor by Approbation of the Crown; by mistake of the Mariners he fell in with *Pennsylvania* Bay, instead of *Chesapeak* or *Virginia* Bay, and gave Name to it, this was before the *Dutch* settled, which it retains to this Day, he soon returned to *England*. Lord *Delaware* in his second Voyage to *Virginia* 1618, died in the Passage; in his first Voyage he arrived in *Virginia*, June 9, 1610, and continued Governor until *March* following.

1626. Because of the bad Conduct of the Managers, and Hardships sustained by the Settlers, by a *Quo Warranto* the Patent was sued out, both Property and Jurisdiction became vested in the Crown, where it remains to this Day; the Settlers paying 2*s* Sterl. per *Annum* Quit-Rent per 100 Acres, under the Direction of a King's Governor and Council with an Assembly or House of Representatives chosen by the People; these three Negatives compose the Legislature or General Court.

When Capt. *Smith*, some time President of *Virginia*, wrote his History 1624, within 60 Miles of *James Town*, the principal Settlement, there were not above 1500 fencible Men, and for want of raising Provision sufficient, they could not upon any Exigency bring above 700 Men together.

Because of notorious bad Management, the Company was dissolved by K. *Charles* I. and the Colony was brought under the immediate Direction of the Crown as above, and Settlers flocked over; particularly some of good Condition to enjoy the Liberty of Worshipping God in their own Manner; Lord *Baltimore* a *Roman Catholick*, retired thither, but the People of *Virginia*, rigid *Protestants* did not use him well, and was discouraged from continuing in *Virginia*, as we have more at large related in the Section of *Maryland*.

The first Settlers Intent upon taking up large Tracts of Land occasioned the several Settlements to be dispersed at considerable Distances from one another, and not in Towns or Villages.

At present the Jurisdiction or Government is bounded South by a Line W. by Compass (the Variation there being small, is neglected) dividing *Virginia* from *North-Carolina*, beginning at a certain great Tree in the N. Lat. of about 36 d. 40 m. (in its Progress it intersects the River *Roanoke* many Times in its *Meanders*,) and continues West indefinitely; the Western Boundary is the South Sea, or Lands in a prior Occupancy of any Christian Prince; it is bounded Northerly, on the East Side of *Chesapeak*-Bay by a Line running due East from *Watkins Point*, near *Wigbo* River on *Chesapeak* in about the Lat. of 38 d. 10 m. to the Ocean; on the West Side of *Chesapeak*-Bay it is bounded by *Powtomake* River to a certain Head thereof, and thence by a West Line indefinitely in Lat. — this *Maryland* Line of Jurisdiction with the Province of *Virginia*, and of Property with Lord *Fairfax* is not hitherto finally settled; *East* and *South*, *Virginia* is bounded by the great Ocean.

K. *Charles* II. having gratified some Noblemen with too large Grants called the Northern and Southern Grants or Necks; when these Noblemen claimed them, it gave great Uneasiness to the Settlers, and the Colony Agents in *England* agreed with these Grantees of two Necks, for a small Consideration.

Virginia is divided by the great Rivers of *Powtomake*, *Rapahanock*, *York* and *James*, into 4 Necks, the two Counties East of *Chesapeak* Bay makes the fifth great Division; the Division between *Powtomake* and *Rapahanock* Rivers, is called the Northern Neck, and is at present the Property of Lord *Fairfax* of *Cameron*, an *Englishman*, with a *Scots* Title.

Lord *Colpeper* who came over Governor of *Virginia* 1679, was one of K. *Charles* II. Patentees of the Northern Neck; having got Assignments from the other Patentees

tentes 1688. 4th *Jacob II.* he obtained a Patent for all the Northern Neck ; and by inveigling the Tenants to pay the Quit Rents to his Agents, he became possessed of all the Quit-Rents and his Heirs at present enjoy them by a kind of Prescription, but without any Share in the Jurisdiction, because chargeable, he relinquished the Government thereof to the Crown. Lord *Colpeper* of *Tborsway* in *England* died 1719, having no Male Heir, the Heirours are extinct, his Daughter and Heirefs married Lord *Fairfax* : thus *Virginia* consists of two Properties in one Government.

Here we must observe that the Continuation of this Historical Essay was interrupted for some Months, by the unlucky Incident of an Epidemical Distemper, the Small-Pox, after about 22 Years Absence, being imported, and prevailing in Boston of New-England : The Printer and his People in fear of the Small Pox, left their printing Office in Boston, and retired into the Country.

We may also observe, that the VVriter from an intire and unavoidable Avocation of Mind from all other Matters but those of his Profession, finds the thread of his Narration affected, which with the growing Remoteness of the Provinces to be treated of, will render the following Accounts less Minute, but always avoiding any Deviation from Truth.

A DIGRESSION

Concerning the Small-Pox.

The *Appendix* † according to our first Scheme would have been out of Proportion too large ; therefore we

† This History or rather these Minutes (as we have frequently hinted) were originally designed as a common Place loosely put together, but in an Historical Manner ; if they prove informing and useful, some subsequent Writers may digest them ; it is as much as my leisure Time does allow, to draw the Plan, and lay in the Materials, a good Artificer may with Ease erect the Edifice.

shall occasionally interſperſe ſome Things deſigned for the Appendix, more eſpecially relating to Diſtempers at Times Epidemical or Endemial in the *Britiſh North-America* Colonies : As the *Small Pox* has lately been Epidemical or very general in *Boston* of *New-England* from the beginning of *April*, to near the end of *July* 1752, I ſhall here inſert ſome particular Observations concerning the ſame, while recent in my Mind.

I. There are many Things inſcrutable in the Nature of this Diſtemper. 1. Why it did not emerge, or at leaſt why it is not mentioned in Hiſtory ſooner than the beginning of the *Saracen* Conqueſts ? 2. Seeing it is univerſally agreed that a Perſon who has had the *Small-Pox* once, is not liable to it again, the *Seminium* thereof being ſuppoſed exhausted : How is it that Parents who have procreated after having had the *Small-Pox*, their Progeny is notwithstanding liable to receive the *Small-Pox* Infection ? 3. How is it that a Woman having the *Small-Pox* when pregnant, the *Fætus* does not receive the *Small-Pox* from the Mother, but may receive it many Years after being born, this was the Caſe of *Capt. B——døge* of *Salem* and others in my Knowledge ? 4. How is it that the Diſpoſition of the Air (*Sydenham* calls them, various *Small-Pox* Conſtitutions) in fundry Years is more or leſs conducive to propagate the *Small-Pox* Infection, and to render that Diſtemper more or leſs deleterious ; thus we find by the Bills of Mortality of *London*, *Edinburgh*, and other great Towns where the *Small-Pox* is never abſent, that the number of *Small-Pox* Burials in various Years differs much, † without regard to the varieties of Seaſons and Weather, and without regard to the more or leſs pernicious Modes and Faſhions of managing the *Small-Pox* ; Modes or Au-

† Within the *London* Bills of Mortality there died *Anno* 1746, of the *Small-Pox* 3236, *Anno* 1751, there died of the *Small-Pox* 998 : In *Edinburgh* and *West Kirk* Pariſh, there died *Anno* 1743, of the *Small-Pox* 249, *Anno* 1747 there died 71.

thorities of leading *Physicians* have from Time to Time perniciously been introduced into Medicine, witness in the *Small-Pox*, *Morton's Alexipharmicks*, *Sydenham's Opiats*, and the repeated Blood lettings of some present noted Practitioners in *Great-Britain*. May Physicians in writing avoid all fashionable Whims and cant of the Times: Such as were formally Occult and Specifick *Qualities*, *Chymical Reasonings*, *Mechanical Powers*, and the like: they are of no use, and soon become obsolete.

II. I have been a sedulous Attendant and Observer of the *Small-Pox*, which in *Boston* happened to be Epidemical Anno 1721, 1730, and 1752. In the Year 1721, being a sort of Novice in the *Small-Pox* Practice, I confided too much in the Methods of the celebrated Dr. *Sydenham*, particularly his cold Regimen, and frequent Use of *Vetriolicks* and *Opiats*, but from their bad Success I gradually corrected my self: 1730 I abandoned the cold Regimen and substituted a moderately cool Regimen: I laid aside the frequent Use of *Sp. Vetrioli*, as occasioning *nauseas* in the Stomach, and of *Opiats* as a *ramora* or clog of the Course of any Distemper, and as it solicits the morbid Affection to the Brain; with Success I followed the purging Method in the Declension of the *Small-Pox*, I had the hint from the accidental natural Purgings in that Period which saved the Lives of many, and was confirmed therein by the Observations of *Friend* and *Mead*. 1752, I depended almost intirely upon the Fund or Stock of my own Observations, and my principal Indications were from the *Juvantia* and *Ledentia*. †

III.

† Where these are not followed, Medicine becomes a meer Whim, and a *ludibrium* of the People; as in the *Small-Pox*, some follow a hot Regimen, some a cold Regimen, some use repeated *Blood-lettings*, some a frequent Use of *Opiats*; others declare them pernicious; some keep the Body costive, some use the purging Method, &c. it

III. I am perswaded that during the last 22 Years Absence of the *Small-Pox* in *Boston*, from 1730 to 1752, if it had been allowed its free Course, considering that Persons when Children would have been the Subjects of it, fewer would have died of it, than have died of it in a few Months 1752. If it is not allowed its free Course when it does invade *Boston* Epidemically; particular Persons not qualified to receive it, may avoid it, by retiring into the Country for a few Months: The not qualified are Infants, their *stamina Vitæ* are too tender; pregnant Women, *Pubescentes* and for a few Years after *Puberty*, while their Juices are in a *Juvenile* Fret; Persons upwards of 45 *Æt.* (I write from Observation, not from abstracted Imagination) because their Juices become rancid; and all Persons under any constitutional or habitual Distemper of Body, particularly the *scrophulous* or *strumous*, who generally suffer much in this Distemper, we may remark that the *Small-Pox* sometimes leaves *scrophulous* Dispositions in Persons formerly not *scrophulous*. All others to render the subsequent Part of their Life more easy, may run the risk in the natural, that is, accidental Way (by the Pores of the Skin, by Inspiration, Deglutition, &c.) or by the more favourable Way of Inoculation.

IV. Before I proceed further, I shall give a general Numerical History of the *Boston* *New-England* Periods, &c. of Epidemical *Small-Pox*. From the first settling of the Province of *Massachusetts-Bay* the *Small-Pox* has been Epidemical in *Boston* only eight Times, 1649, 1666, 1678, 1689, 1702, 1721, 1730, and 1752: I shall enumerate the Periods which happened in this current Century.

is only the *Juvantia* and *Lædientia* can determine the Question, as they have in the Instances of *Sydenham's* Grand Mistakes of keeping the Body bound, and frequent Use of *Opiats*: The Mistakes of the most celebrated Practitioners, ought to be the more canvassed, as their Authorities are dangerous Precedents.

1702, beginning of *July*, the *Small-Pox* appeared after 13 Years Absence, the *Alexipharmick* Method and hot Regimen were used, about 300 white People died of this *Small Pox*, † the most Burials were in the Month of *December*, 74. *

1721, It was imported (from *Barbados*) by the *Salatorugas* Fleet middle of *April*, it continued sculking about until the middle of *June*, when the Eruptions appearing in many Families, the Watches appointed to prevent its spreading, were discontinued, and it was allowed to take its Course: In the next parcel of Decumbents, the Eruptions appeared about the 7th and 8th of *July*: In the end of *July* it spread much; in *October* was the highest Number of Deaths, and about the middle of *October*, *Small-Pox* Burials begin to decrease. *Aeneas Salter* employed by the Select Men of *Boston* (the prudential Managers of Town Affairs) to make a scrutiny after the *Small-Pox* ceased, by a Book in several Columns of Lists, he found that the Number of Persons who continued in *Boston* (many fled into the Country) were 10,567, whereof about 700 escaped; the *Small-Pox* Decumbents had been 5,989 whereof 844 died, which is nearly one in seven. — This *Small-Pox* continued in *Boston* 8 Months, about 80 died with *Purples* and *Hæmorrhages*, which is about one in ten of the Deaths. — In and about *Boston* 286 were Inoculated, whereof the Inoculators acknowledge six to have died, which is about one in 48.

The *Small-Pox* of 1730, was imported from *Ireland*

† Hitherto *Petechiæ* Purple Spots, and *Hæmorrhages* of which many died, were called a Mortal Scarlet Fever invading the Town at the same Time with the *Small-Pox*, but an entirely distinct Distemper: 1721 I was the first who in *New-England* introduced them as deleterious Symptoms in the *Small-Pox*.

* In the beginning of this Century, the Inhabitants of *Boston*, Blacks included were about 6750, and the Burials *Communibus Annis* about 230. Anno 1720, the Inhabitants were circitor 11,000, and Burials *Communibus Annis* about 350. Anno 1735, (1729 and 1730 were Measles and *Small-Pox* Years) the Inhabitants were about 15,000, and Burials *Communibus Annis*, 500.

in the *Autumn* 1729, and was shut up in a few Families during Winter, beginning of *March* following it spread much, the Watches were removed, and 4th of *March* 1729,30, it had a free Course, and Inoculation was allowed. The highest Number of Burials after nine Years Absence was in *June*, it ended with the Month of *October*: The Decumbents were estimated at about 4000 (no exact Scrutiny was made) whereof about 500 died, which is nearly one in eight, and of these about 75 with *Purples* and *Hemorrhages*. Of not quite 400 Inoculated in *Boston* 12 died, is about 1 in 33; the Inoculated *Small-Pox* was not so favourable as 1721, they were more loaded, and a more protracted Confinement; many of their Incisions festered much, and required the special Care of a Surgeon for a considerable Time, of the 12 Deaths three proceeded from the Incisions ulcerating and putrifying, S——ry W——ds Child, Col. Ch——leys Child, Mr. G——es Foreman.

The *Small Pox* of 1752. A Ship from *London*, Capt. Cousins, with the *Small-Pox* aboard was bilged *December* 24, 1751, in *Nabant Bay* near *Boston*, the People of *Chelsey*, the adjacent Town compassionately assisting to save the Ships Crew, received the *Small Pox*, about one in four or five died; *V. S.* or Blood-letting was blamed and happily lost its Reputation in the subsequent *Boston Small-Pox*. It arrived in *Boston* in *January* following, by a Sailor belonging to the Ship, and got into five or six Families, but did not much spread until 20th of *March* 1752, and Monday 23d, Inoculation was let loose; some greedy Practitioners indiscriminately inoculated any Persons who could be persuaded to receive it, even pregnant Women, Puerperas, old Negroes, and the like; upon a Scrutiny made *July* 24, by the Select Men and Overseers of the Poor in the several Wards, the Select Men request the Practitioners to inoculate no more after 27th of *July*. To take at one view the State of the *Small-Pox* in *Boston* from *Jan, 1752, to July 24*, the following Table may serve,

Small-

	Whites	Blacks
<i>Small-Pox</i> in the natural Way	5059	485
Whereof died	452	62
By Inoculation	1970	139
Whereof died	24	7
Sick in 17 Families	23	
Persons who have not received it	174	

There died of Inoculation, 31 Persons, not including the dubious Deaths of Mr. *Coleman's* Son, who died by subsequent nervous Disorders and sore Eyes, and the two Daughters of Mr. *Goldthwait* who died under Inoculation, but as it is said by the sore Throat Illness. The Scrutiny reported, that the total of Residenters, so called, at that Time were 15,734, including 1544 Negroes, and about 1800 *Absentees* who had fled from the *Small-Pox*: died of an Inoculated *Small-Pox* about one in Eighty-two Whites, and one in Twenty Blacks.

V. The *Small-Pox* in cold Countries is more fatal to Blacks than to Whites: In the *Boston Small-Pox* of 1752, there died Whites in the natural Way about one in Eleven, by Inoculation one in Eighty; Blacks in the natural Way one in Eight, by Inoculation one in Twenty. In hot Countries it is more fatal to Whites than to Blacks: In *Charles-Town* of *South-Carolina*, when the *Small-Pox* prevailed 1738, upon a Scrutiny, it was found that in the natural Way, of 647 Whites, died 157, is one in Four: by Inoculation of 156 Whites, died nine, is one in Twenty: Of 1024 Blacks in the natural Way there died 138, is one in Seven and half, of 251 Blacks by Inoculation there died seven, is one in Thirty-six.

VI. In *Autumn* the *Small-Pox* is the most *deleterious*, in all Autumnal Fevers there is a putrid Complication from the declining and less vegate Season; in Winter the Season does not allow it to spread; the Spring if not

too wet, and the Summer if not too hot are the most favourable Seasons for the *Small Pox*.

VII. We improve in the management of the *Small-Pox*; In the natural Way 1721, died about one in Seven; 1730 about one in Eight; 1752 nearly one in Eleven, which may be attributed to the gradually relinquishing *Alexipharmicks*, and a hot Regimen formerly recommended by many, being one extreme; and of a cold Management the other Extreme; by this *Sydenham* has done much Damage; as Natures Helmsmen, we have varied from a more cool to a more cordial Regimen, according to the Constitutions of different Patients, and the various *stadia*, and other Circumstances of the same Patient: V. S. or Blood-letting was seldom used; scarce any use of Opiats: the Patient was kept in a natural Temperature with a plentiful use of Diluters; the Body kept soluble in all the *Stadia*, and when the Maturation was completed, cordial Purges for two or three Days.

VIII. The greater or smaller Mortality in the *Small-Pox* is not principally owing to the Seasons, Regimen and the like; but somewhat inscrutable in the various Constitutions of Families and individuals; 1721, Mr. *Bond* a Carpenter, and five of his Children died with *Purples* and *Hæmorrhages* in *Boston*; 1752 Four Children of Mr. *Wier* of *Charles-Town* died, whereof one was Inoculated. The commonly received Notion of the *Small Pox* being fatal to the *New-England* born, is not true and just, and is of bad Effect in depressing the Spirits of *New-England* Men when seized abroad; 1752 of the *Small Pox* Decumbents in *Boston* died about one in Eleven; it is seldom so favourable in any Part of *Great-Britain*.

The *Small-Pox* is a malignant contagious eruptive pustular Fever, observing certain *Stadia*; communicable only by personal Infection: It is not known to be *Endemial*

demial in any Country as the *Plague* is in *Turky*, it was not known in *America* until the Colonies from *Europe* introduced it. In the natural Way from Infection, received to the first Eruptions, allowing a Latitude for varieties of Ages and Constitutions, are 14 to 21 Days ; In the Inoculated Way, are 7 to 14 Days ; but I suspect these of 14 Days, to have received the Infection in the natural Way from the Inoculator, or from the *Effluvia* of his variolated doffils. The *Small-Pox* generally is not infecting, until a concocted *Pus* is formed. In the *Small-Pox* Time 1752, the *Chicken* or *Spurious Pox* was frequent, and sometimes passed for the *Small-Pox*, and some Persons have ineffectually been Inoculated from thence : but if there has been an *Apparatus* of two or three Days, though the Pustules are watery or Ichorous with a thin *Cystis*, if the *Bases* be red with a *circular* florid *cuticular* Expansion, we may pronounce it a genuine *Small-Pox*. There are vast Varieties of the genuine *Small-Pox* ; in general the sooner the several *Stadia* are accomplished, the more benign is the *Small-Pox*, and frequently the Danger is in Proportion to the number of Pustules, especially in the Face. In the *Small-Pox* natural and ingrafted, some Patients a few Days before Decumbiture, have transient intermitting Complaints ; some after the genuine *Small-Pox* pustulary Eruption is completed, have Eruptions of spurious Pustules.

To form a general Idea of the *Small-Pox*, we may take the distinct plump Kind as a STANDARD. It begins with the common Symptoms of a Fever (in the *Apparatus* of many, there are no Chills, Rigors, and Horripulations perceivable ; a Cough is no Symptom) particularly with a Pain in the Head, Back and Limbs ; Oppression *e regionæ Ventriculi*, *Nausea* or Vomitings, sore Throat is general, but no dangerous Symptom, it gradually vanishes after Maturation ; nervous Affections,
Deliria,

Deliria, Phrenses, and sometimes Convulsions in Children; † The end of the third or beginning of the fourth Day, the *Small-Pox* Pustules begin to appear; in some few, the Eruptions make their Appearance without any *Apparatus Symptoms*; generally, the younger the Subject, the sooner all the *Stadia* of any Distemper, particularly of the *Small-Pox* are performed; the fifth Day they are round and inlarge their Bases of a lively red; the sixth Day they come to a point; the seventh Day the Points or *Apices* turn white; the eighth they turn yellow, the ninth there is a laudable digested *Pus*; the tenth they begin to crust or Scab; the twelfth they are dry Scabs.

X. There are so many varieties of the *Small-Pox* Appearances, they cannot be reduced to *Classes*; we may observe that the very young and very old are scarce susceptible of the *Small-Pox*, perhaps their *vis vitæ* is too feeble for bringing the *variolous* Leaven received, to leaven the whole Lump. I shall enumerate some of the most noted Varieties. 1. A distinct dry sort, few, not large, *Basis* scarce inflamed, very small Digestion, being Warty or Horny; the fifth or sixth Day from Eruption, they begin to dry and soon vanish, leaving no Pittings, only Freckles. 2. The distinct plump kind as above described for a Standard. 3. The Coherent, not well described by the Writers concerning the *Small-Pox*, I suppose they mean a frequent or clustered *Small-Pox* depressed, generally pitted or umbilicated in the *Centre*, and upon the Maturation frequently attended with a second or secondary Fever. 4. The Confluent which are very irregular in their first Appearances and subsequent *Stadia*, frequently they appear *Erysipolas* like, and after

† *Sydenham* and some others reckon them a good Prognostick, whereas many such die in the *Apparatus* and beginning of Eruption; all Practitioners observe that Purgings and Convulsions are generally the most fatal Distempers of Children, therefore they must be had Symptoms in the *Apparatus* of their *Small-Pox*; I know of no Distemper where Convulsions are a favourable Prognostick.

the Period of Maturation, they become an ash coloured Crust or white Skin ; their second Fever frequently becomes a *Hætick*, not mortal until after some Weeks, Months or Years. 5. The *Small-Pox* interspersed with *Petechiæ*, *vesiculæ miliares*, or small Blisters of a limpid or bluish *Serum* ; with purple Spots more or less diluted ; and *Hæmorrhages*, which are more mortal than the Plague it self. N. B. In some there is at first, a flush or rash-like formidable Appearance, but soon disappearing, the *Small-Pox* looks favourable. N. B. A round turgid *Small-Pox* with florid Interstices is the best.

XI. Among the bad Symptoms in the *Small-Pox*, we may enumerate the following, † mild Symptoms in a *Small-Pox* of a bad Appearance ; universal Feebleness or Prostration of Strength ; pain from the nape of the Neck all along the *Spine*, *Nausea*, and aversion to any Drink, fetid anhelous Breathings ; Groans, *Vigiliæ*, inquietudes or languid Tossings, *Comas*, a sparkling piercing bright Eye threatning a Phrensy ; Colliquations of any kind. in the Eruption, such as profuse Sweatings, many Stools, *Menstruatio tempore non debito*, *Purples* and *Hæmorrhages*. A Miliary Eruption, or like rank Measles, or *Erysipelas* like ; a spanish Brown unequal Eruption, a Chrystaline *Small-Pox* ; a *siliquos Small-Pox*, where the Pustules of a cream Colour run together, waved of various Figures, spongy not Mellow ; a sessile *Small-Pox* ; where the confluent sort dry in the beginning of Maturation ; after the Eruption is completed, miliary *Blisters* or *Pustules* appearing in the Interstices containing a dark red Serum ; a sudden subsidence of the Pustules

† Excepting in bad Cases of the *Small-Pox*, in *Europe*, Physicians are seldom called upon ; it is left in the Management of the Matrons and to Nature : It is reckoned a Distemper of Children, such as are red Gum, Toething, Worms, and the like ; the *Dutch* with good Propriety call it *Kinderen Packies*, but few of the Adults are to receive it, because when Children they are allowed to have it in common Course.

and swelling of the Face ; the Eyes shut up, opening suddenly ; Pustules sessile dry subsiding in the Center ; Interstices livid or Pale ; In the Desquamation or Declension, where a *sanious* gleeing Scab returns with a tedious Expectoration of viscid Phlegm, and *Hætick* ; a cold Respiration ; *Carion* like fetid Stools ; a strong Vibration of the Carotide Arteries ; the first Eruptions more general in the Extremities than in the Face and Neck : Scarce any die but in the drying Desquamation or Declension Period, this drying sometimes happens in the first of Maturation, or any Time of the Maturation protracted but not perfected ; Indigo coloured stains in the Pustules ; Scabs or Crusts of a Bees-wax Colour are the most laudable, the Ash coloured are bad, the black are very bad ; where the Pustules after Maturation seem to be at a Stand, and do not Scab or Corrugate, the Patient is weak and the Case dubious.

The Management of the Small-Pox in general.

To receive the *Small-Pox*, when expected, in the natural or Inoculated Way ; keep an easy undisturbed Mind, avoid catching of cold, refrain from violent Exercise, use a soft Diet, take a Mercurial Purge or two. 1. In the beginning * of the *Apparatus* Fever, give a gentle Vomit (a rude Vomit hurts as much as does violent Exercise) it not only cleans the Stomach, but by its shocks removes Obstructions, renders the Oeconomy meable for a regular Circulation : 2. Where the Design of Nature is obvious, and her Intentions laudable, give no Disturbance by Medicines, dilute plentifully because of the Caustick Acrimony, let Nature keep its Course ; if any extraor-

* When the Symptoms of the *Small-Pox* appear ; the Temper ought not to be too much lowered by a cold Regimen, by *V. S.* or any unnecessary Evacuation ; occasioning a late, imperfect, unequal, second Crop Eruption, of bad Consequence ; neither should the Temper be raised by Cordials and a hot Regimen to force the circulating Juices to a Separation of a greater Load of *Small-Pox* than Nature intended.

ordinary Symptom happen, as is the Custom in *Great-Britain*, call in the advice of a neighbouring honest practising Apothecary or Surgeon; or rather of some experienced discreet Physician. 3. During the Eruption and Maturation Periods, keep the Belly rather soluble than bound, (*Sydenham* by a grand Mistake recommends Costiveness even to the thirteenth Day) and upon Maturation, a purging natural or procured, are salutary and have saved the Lives of many, particularly in Rigors and Anhelous Breathing. 4. In the whole Course of the Distemper, the Patient is to be kept in a moderate or natural Temper, an increased heat inflames the habit, cold depresses the Spirits too much. 5. Give vegetable Acids (Mineral Acids I have found too rude, and do hurt by occasioning a *Nausea* or Vomition) because there is a notorious Animal or urinous Acrimony in the Case. 6. When the Maturation is compleated, to prevent or alleviate a second Fever, from some Part of the variolous *Pus* being absorbed by the circulating Fluids, give some Cordial Purges † for two or three Days; upon any unlucky Translation, it is easier to sollicit the *Intestines* to a Discharge, (as being more under Command, than any other Secretion or Evacuation) than the salivary Ducts or urinary Passages: This Purging moderates the Suppuration, and consequently prevents much Pittings and Scars, moreover it procures Sleep like an *Anodyne*, and more benignly, because *Opiats* protract all the *Stadia*; a protracted Desquamation, with a sharp *Sanies* or corrosive

† In the *Small-Pox* of 1730, I observed some Patients with violent second Fever Symptoms, upon Maturation compleated, seized with a natural Purging which gave great Relief; but as a blind Follower of *Sydenham*, I checkt it by *Opiats*, which occasioned a return of the violent threatening Symptoms; until the Effect of the *Opiat* being over, the Purging return'd with great Relief, and so *toties quoties*: This gave me a strong hint, that purging upon Maturation compleated was salutary: I used it with Success, and introduced the good Opinion of it with many Practitioners, to the saving of many Lives; soon after I found this Purging Method recommended by *Mead*, *Friend*, and other Physicians in *England*.

Ichor,

Ichor, gleeing from under the Scabs, occasion Pittings and Scars; so does picking and scratching of the *Small-Pox* Scabs, before a new Scerf Skin is formed underneath to prevent the injuries from the external Air.

7. Towards the end of the Desquamation give a Mercurial Purge or two to defecate the Blood and other Juices. †

We may further observe, 1. that there are such Anomalies in Constitutions, that a few extraordinary Instances proof against all pernicious Management, are by no Means to be adduced as Precedents for forming of a Regimen: Dr. *Fuller* in his *Exanthematologia*, writes, that a Son *Æt.* 15 of Dr. *Hoopers*, Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*, in a very bad *Small-Pox*, for twelve Days when awake, every half Hour drank a Bumper of strong Beer, Mountain Wine, or Brandy, he recovered: some drank only cold Water and did well; *Sydenham's* History of a young Man, who in the Absence of his Nurse was thought by the Standers by to have died and was laid out on a cold Board, the Nurse upon her return, perceiving some Signs of Life, put him to Bed and he did well. 2. Let not Numbers of Decumbents be put up in one close Room, the Congeries of putrid *Effluvia*, renders the ambient Air a puddle of Corruption, and without a proper Spring to continue the Circulation of our Juices, which is the Life of Animals. 3. Let not Nature or the Spirits (this ought to be regarded in all acute Distempers) be disturbed by Noise or Confabulation. 4. Where Medicines are required, administer no Medicine that continues to be disagreeable to the Stomach. 5. Any violent Symptom appearing, must be immediately obviated; delays here are dangerous. 6. Let the Belly be kept soluble, formerly from an implicit Faith in *Sydenham*, I lapsed into that Error, that the Belly ought not to be kept soluble, lest Nature should be confounded in her proper Course; whereas in Truth, Nature is thereby alleviated. 7. Avoid

† Sometimes a *Heſtick* Fever remains to the 20th, 30th 40th Day or longer, and the Patient dies *Heſtick* or *Consumptive*; sometimes a *ſcrophulous* Disposition remains for Life.

Grief, intense thinking, or the like, particularly avoid Fear; they hinder Perspiration, and all other Tendencies to the Surface or *ad Extra* of the Body. 8. Upon the Maturation, where the Circulation is much crowded, the swelling of the Face and Arms, a *Ptyalism*, a *Diabetical Profluvium* are of great Relief, Cordial Purges answer the same Intention and are more at our Command; Spitting frequently begins with the Eruption and ought not to decline until about eleventh Day of Illness, it gradually becomes thick and roapy and requires plentiful diluting. 9. *Purples* and *Hæmorrhages* are more mortal than the Plague itself.

Concerning Inoculation of the Small-Pox.

The Novel Practice of procuring the *Small-Pox* by Inoculation, is a very considerable and most beneficial Improvement in that Article of Medical Practice. It is true the first Promoters of it, were too extravagant, and therefore suspected in their Recommendations of it, and some Medical Writers, Instance sundry Disorders arising in the Animal Economy from some foreign Liquids being directly admitted into the current of Blood: These Considerations made me 1721, not enter into the Practice, until further Tryals did evince the Success of it; but now after upwards of thirty Years Practice of it in *Great-Britain*, and the Dominions thereto belonging, we found that the *Small-Pox* received by cuticular Incisions has a better Chance for Life and an easy Decumbiture; that is, the *Small-Pox* so received is less mortal and generally more favourable, than when received in the accidental or natural Way, by *Inspiration*, *Deglutition*, *Pores* of the Skin, and the like; we must still acknowledge, that it falls short of the Recommendations given by its first Promoters, being no absolute Security against Death and other Calamities of the *Small-Pox*; it produces all the Varieties as in the natural Way, from the most favourable dry horny distinct
Kind,

Kind, to the most deleterious attended with *Purples* and *Hæmorrhages*; the consequential Boils and Impostumations are more than in the natural Way, besides their Incisions ulcerating and putrefying; we hinted before, that in *Boston* 1730 of the twelve Inoculated Deaths three were occasioned by their Incisions; two in three a few Days after Inoculation complain in their Axillary, Inguinal, or Parotid Glands, * before the *Apparatus* Fever makes its Appearance. We are informed that of the first Inoculations in *England*, nine in ten were afflicted with Sores, so as to require the immediate Care of a Surgeon or Dresser for some Time †.

To alleviate the Crisis and deleterious Symptoms of the *Small-Pox*, 1. we find good Success in the *Circassian* Way of procuring it by variolous *Pus* applied in any Manner to fresh cutaneous Incisions. The Manner which I happen to use, is a small cuticular Scarification by the Point of a crooked *Bistoury* or *Scalpel*, in the inside of one upper Arm, and in this Incision I lodge a very small variolated Doffil in the form and bigness of a Barley Corn || contained or secured by some sticking

* Where the Circulation labours, the glandular Parts are the most liable to complain.

† If the *Small-Pox* procured by Inoculation was so favourable as at first pretended, it would require only a Barber Surgeon or Cupper, the Incision or Scarification is done with less Risk than common Blood-letting, and requires only a soft Diet and short Confinement under the small Care of a Nurse or Attendant, and a Practitioners large Bill would appear ridiculous and imposing.

|| At present in *London*, they generally use a small Scratch, or Scarification in one Arm, and lodge therein a small bit of variolated Thread. There is no Proportion or Dose of variolous Matter requisite for Inoculation; *Pylarini* writes, that by pricking the Skin with Needles dipt in variolous Matter or *Pus*, People have been Inoculated: The *variolous Miasm* is inconceivably subtle; 1730 I accidentally inoculated Mr. *W. Phips*, by using in *V. S.* inadvertently a Lancet (wiped dry and clean as usual) by which I had the preceding Day taken some variolous *Pus* for Inoculation; its true I inoculated him afterwards in the common Manner, but all the *Stadia* of the *Small-Pox* took their Date from the *V. S.* and the Orifice festered accordingly.

Plaster

Plaster for 48 Hours, and afterwards dressed daily with some gentle Digestive. 2. More Incisions than one, is an unnecessary running the Risk of more ulcerating Incisions. 3. Hitherto we have not perceived any Difference in the *Small-Pox* received from a laudable distinct Kind, and that from a dismal Confluent Kind, which some of our audacious Inoculators have used in want of a better, that they might not loose the Benefit of an inoculated Patient. Dr. *Wagstaffe* writes, that the Criminals in *Newgate* 1721, were Inoculated by Pus from a Fluxed sort of a Person who died before the Inoculations were performed. 4. The Caution that Persons who are to be Inoculated take, not to receive at the same Time the Infection in the natural Way, is a vulgar Error; the receiving of Infection upon Infection does not add to its Intenseness, as we may observe in Persons who receive it in the natural Way and are continuedly exposed to repeated Infections, because whatever Infection first takes place, renders the subsequent Infections Effect or Abortive, and as the Inoculated *Small-Pox* is more expeditious in its Course, any other Infection would prove Abortive.

The History of Inoculation relating to *New-England*, is briefly as follows. The *Circassians* living between the *Euxine* and *Caspian* Seas, Time out of Mind, have carried on a considerable Branch of Trade with *Turkey* and *Persia*, in selling their own Children and young Slaves taken by Incurfions from their Neighbours; but more especially their young Women, they are beautiful, and in great Request in the *Saraglios* and *Harams* of the *Turks* and *Persians*, while young they give them the *Small-Pox* by Inoculation or otherways, and they who retain their Beauties are carried to Market. This *Circassian* Traffick conveyed the Practice into *Turkey*; the *Turks* at first from their principle of *Predestination* would not come into it, the old Women of the *Greek Church* practised it for some Time among the meaner sort of People; *Pylarini* writes, that 1701, it first began to be used among the better sort in *Constantinople*.

1713, *Timonius* from *Constantinople*, sent to the Royal Society in *London*, incredible Recommendations of this Practice “ that for the preceeding eight Years some Thousands had been Inoculated and none died, while at the same Time, half of the affected in the common Way died in *Constantinople*; and what is valued by the Fair, Inoculation never leaves Pits or Scars; Children have no Convulsions.” *Pylarini* the Venetian Consul at *Constantinople*, 1714, sent to the Royal Society, a more modest Account of the same. “ I was not an Eye-witness to all that I now relate; Inoculation sometimes does not take place; with some, in the glandulous Parts and Emmunctories, *Abcesses* do arise after some Time. Dr. *Le Duc* a Native of *Constantinople*, and who was himself Inoculated, assured Dr. *Furin*, that out of many Thousands, in the space of about forty Years past, had been Inoculated in and about *Constantinople*, by one Greek Woman, not so much as one Person had miscarried.

1721, I lent these Communications to Dr. *Cotton Mather*, a Clergyman of *Boston*, being very credulous, that is of great Faith, when the *Small-Pox* appeared in *Boston*, that he might have the imaginary Honour of a new fangled Notion surreptitiously without my Knowledge, set a rash undaunted Operator † to Work, and by three Practitioners in Town and Country, about 286 were inoculated, whereof about one in forty eight died in *Boston*.

These Communications, were regarded in *England*, only as *Virtuoso* Amusements, until 1721, Mr. *Maitland* a Surgeon in the Retinue of Sir *Robert Sutton* the British Ambassador at *Constantinople*, upon his Arrival in *London*, from some scanty Observations, but mostly from

† This undaunted Operator, imagined that by going to *London* with a *Quack-Bill* of his Inoculation Performances in *New-England*, he might acquire a Fortune in *London*; but so it happened, that void of common Discretion to couch his Ignorance and silly mean Assurance, he returned to *Boston* without being called upon to perform any Inoculation.

Hear-say, with the *Merveilleux* of a Traveller, broached this Novel Practice, and a few were inoculated with Success; which induced the *Royal Family* to think well of it, and by way of Experiment some condemned Criminals were Inoculated in *Newgate* with their own Consent: In the Spring following by Direction of the Princess of *Wales*, six Hospital Children, and soon after five more Hospital Children from *Æt.* 14 Weeks to 20 Years of Age were Inoculated; some did not receive the Infection as having had it formerly, or from some other impediment, but none died or suffered much: Upon this Encouragement, Mr. *Amyand*, Serj. Surgeon was ordered to ingraft the *Small-Pox* on Princess *Amelia*, *Æt.* 11, and Princess *Carolina*, *Æt.* 9, they had them favourably; this encouraged the Practice; and from the Accounts of Dr. *Jurim*, R. S. Secr. (a great Promoter of Inoculation) in the first three Years 1721, 1722, and 1723 of the Practice, in all *Great-Britain* were Inoculated 477 Persons, whereof nine are suspected to have died, and as of these Twenty-nine did not receive the Infection (this is one in Sixteen) the Deaths were nine in 448, or two *per Ct*; in this Period of three Years, the principal Inoculators in *England*, were Dr. *Nettleton* in *Yorkshire* Eighty Patients, Mr. *Amyand*, Serj. Surgeon Sixty-two, Mr. *Maitland* Eighty-five, &c.

The first Promoters were so incredibly marvellous in their Accounts, as would have discouraged any sober Man to have attempted it, if the subsequent more moderate Accounts of its Success had not given a reasonable Encouragement. *Timonius* wrote, that of many Thousands Inoculated in the space of eight Years none died. *Le Duc* writes, that in the space of about forty Years, out of many Thousands Inoculated by one *Greek* Woman in and about *Constantinople*, not so much as one Person had miscarried, as is before hinted. Mr. *Maitland* in his printed Account says, "Dying is a Case which never happened in Ingrafting; that the giving of the *Small-Pox* by Inoculation never yet failed nor
ever

ever can ; no Head-akes, Thirst, Inquietudes, and other fever Symptoms, not one in a Thousand, the *Pustules* never leave any Pits behind them." Dr. *Brady* of *Portsmouth* writes, " not one ever died of Inoculation rightly performed, it always is favourable." Dr. *Harris* says, that Inoculation is a certain Remedy against the confluent kind. Mr. *Colman* a Clergy-man and principal Promoter of the Practice in *Boston* of *New-England*, published, that " none die, no Blains or Boils follow the Practice." Mr. *B——ton* the first *Operator*, published, " There is no Truth in the Reports of People dying under Inoculation," his Accounts are so absurd they invalidate themselves, and require no other Animadversion. — Other Inoculators have published, the Inoculated *Small-Pox* is always favourable, — never infecting ; — so safe as to require no Physician ; — the *Pustules* never exceed ten to a hundred, and do not Pit. †

Dr. *C. Mather*, who first set up Inoculation in *Boston*, in his published Accounts of it, shows what small Dependance there is upon weak Authorities, " some Cats 1721 in *Boston* had a regular *Small-Pox* and died of it." *
 — During the *Small-Pox*, the Pigeons and Dunghill Fowls did not lay nor hatch. — He never knew Blistering miss of saving Life in the *Small-Pox*. — The Patient is more healthy after Inoculation, it is useful to Women in Child-bed, — it dries up tedious running Ulcers, — makes the Crazy Consumptive People hearty, — and rids People of their former Maladies. ||

In

† It would be idle in me, formally to confute these unguarded Assertions, daily Experience evinces the contrary.

* He had not Discretion sufficient to observe, that the *Small-Pox* is a contagious Distemper, peculiar to Mankind, as is also the Measles, and Plague ; that other Animals have their peculiar Epidemical or malignant Distempers, *Murrain* among Neat Cattle, *Rot* among Sheep, and the like : we may also observe, that some Species of Trees only, are susceptible of peculiar *Blasts* ; that male Animals only impregnate Females of their own Species.

|| Dr. *Berkley's Tar-Water* is lately recommended in the same Manner

ner

In making of medium Estimates, we ought to take large Numbers in a long Series of Time, but not the Cases of singular Families, where some may say that notorious Circumstances were not avoided or attended to, such as pregnant Women, Child-bed Women, old Negroes, and the like; we had a remarkable Instance in the Inoculations of *Boston*, 1752, of five Persons in one Family, Mr. *Sherburn's* inoculated by Mr. G——r * three died; — of 72 or 73 Persons inoculated 1721 in *Roxbury* and the adjacent Country Towns by Mr. B——n, five died; which is about one in fourteen.

In short, the Risk seems to be only two to three *per Ct.* and by the purging Method, and some prudential Cautions might be further reduced.

I am at a loss for the Reasons, why Inoculation hitherto is not much used in our Mother Country, *Great-Britain*; considering that it has with good Success been practised in our Colonies or Plantations, particularly in *Boston*, *New-York*, *Philadelphia*, and *Charles-Town* of *South-Carolina*.

The Advantages of Inoculation, are 1. The Choice of suitable *Seasons*. 2. A previous proper *Regimen*. 3. A laudable (this is the most eligible) variolous *Pus* or *Leaven*. 4. We have no Instance of any who received the *Small-Pox* by Inoculation, receiving the *Small-Pox* again. 5. By many Trials for upwards of 30 Years in the Dominions of *Great-Britain*, it must be acknowledged a more favourable Manner of receiving the *Small-Pox*. 6. In a place of Trade, it gives the *Small-Pox* a quick Course, and the Interruption of Commerce short; in the very general *Small-Pox* of *Boston* 1752, the Ti-

ner as a *Panacea*: The principal Advantage I found in it, is, when a Physician is tired out with some tedious Chronical Case to turn the Patient over to the use of the Bishops *Tar-Water*; *valeret quantum valere potest*.

* This is not designed as a personal Reflection upon my Friend Mr. G——r, but to illustrate that Inoculation, is very far from being a preservative against Death, as was alledged by some of its Promoters.

morous fled from the *Small-Pox* beginning of *April*, and with the Trade generally returned beginning of *September*.

The Disadvantages of Inoculation, whereof some are obviated. 1. Inoculated Deaths being *Criminal*: The *Royal Family* by their Example, have removed this Suspicion. 2. Procuring of *Abortion* to Women with Child, is a Sin in *Foro Divino*, though connived at by us. 3. A sordid mercenary Manner of persuading Child-bed Women to receive the *Small-Pox* by Inoculation, upon Pretext of cleansing: whereas, the *Puerpera* Fret in the circulating Juices, is by this Leaven increased, colliquative Purgings ensue, and finally Death: I can adduce some notorious Instances in *Boston*. 4. The communicating † of personal or family chronical and constitutional Distempers to the Inoculated, a Man has or ought to have a proper Regard for his Progeny and succeeding Generations, has been a considerable stumbling Block with me: On the other Hand, from many Tryals in the space of upwards of thirty Years Practice of inoculating the *Small-Pox* in the *British* Dominions, no such Communications have been observed; the *Itch* it self, a notorious cutaneous Distemper, is not said to have been

† Chronical Distempers have been received by cutaneous or external Applications: We have a notorious Instance of this, some Years since in *Cork* of *Ireland*; a Nurse, reputed for drawing of Child-bed Women's Breasts; from a veneral Ulcer under her Tongue, infected the Nipples of her Women, these Women in Coition infected their Husbands, and the City became generally *Poxed*. All Constitution Distempers have some Idea or *Seminium* in every drop of our Juices; the acute Distemper according to its Nature soon shows it self, the Chronical Ails act imperceptibly and slowly in the Body; the Distempers *ex traduce*, sometimes intermit a Generation or two, and again appear in succeeding Generations, such as the *Pfora* of *North-America*, called a *Salt Rheum*, that is a *Scurvy*, *Negro Yaws*, *scrophulous* Disorders or *Kings-evil*, *Venereal* Difeates, *Manias* and other hereditary nervous Disorders, *Arthritick* or *Gouty* Ails, *Naphritick* Cases and the like, which may occasion inquietude in the Minds of the Inoculated, and render them incapable of the greatest Happiness in Life, *Mens sana in corpore Sano*.

thus:

thus communicated : and if after a Series of Years or Generations any such Fears should become real, such distant Views can not affect much where the present Relief or better Chance are in the Case. 5. It spreads Infection very quick and endangers the Neighbourhood not prepared to receive it : this is one of the Reasons, that it is *Felony* or *Criminal* for a Man to set his own House on Fire, because it endangers the Vicinity : it is a Hardship upon the Publick, to oblige People abruptly to leave their Habitations and Business ; some civil Regulations seem requisite to obviate some Difficulties which occur in this Practice. 6. It promotes the Practice of *P—fraudes*, as Bishop *Tillotson* in another Case writes, that some Men had got a scurvy Trick of Lying, in favour of what they imposed upon People as Truth, as lately happened in the *Boston* Inoculations ; upon an actual Survey it was found that in about 2000 Inoculations, 31 had died (others including some disputed Cases, say 34) the Promoters gave out 3500 Inoculated, but gradually reduced the Number to 3000, and afterwards to 2500, (see the *Boston Gazettes* published in *June* 1752) and at last acquiesced in the actual Scrutiny of about 2109 : In Policy of Insurance Offices, this false Representation would be reckoned an Imposition, because People who would run a Risk at 1 per Ct. may not run the same Risk at 2 or 3 per Ct.

Virginia Settlements.

At first there were only a few general Patentees, but at present every Freeholder may be reckoned a Patentee.

The Government of *Virginia* pretend to extend their Settlements so far back Westward as the great Lake *Erie*, and some Branches of the *Mississippi* River, comprehending an immense Quantity of Land unsettled ; and as their Settlements extend gradually towards the Mountains, they create new Counties from Time to Time, for the Conveniency of attending Inferior Courts of Judicature.

The Frontier or furthest back Counties being of great extent, no Navigation, and not much foreign Trade, hold quarterly County Courts only; all the others have monthly Courts; there are Variations from Time to Time; at this Time *Anno* 1752, they are as follows.

Quarterly County Courts.

Brunswick	}	Last Tuesdays in March, June,
Fairfax		September, December.
Lunenburg	}	First Tuesdays in Jan. April, July, October.
Frederick		Second Tuesdays in February, May,
Albemarle	}	August, November.
Augusta		Fourth Tuesdays in said Months.

Monthly County Courts.

Henrico	}	First Mondays in every Month.
Richmond		
Williamsburg		
James City	}	Second Mondays.
Northumberland.		
Nansemond		
York	}	Third Mondays.
Prince William		
Cumberland		
Middlesex	}	Fourth Mondays.
Elizabeth City		
Spotsylvania		
Prince George	}	First Tuesdays.
King & Queen		
Northampton		
Stafford	}	Second Tuesdays.
Essex		
Gooch Land		
Princess Anne	}	Third Tuesdays.
Surrey		
Louisa		
		Fourth Tuesdays.

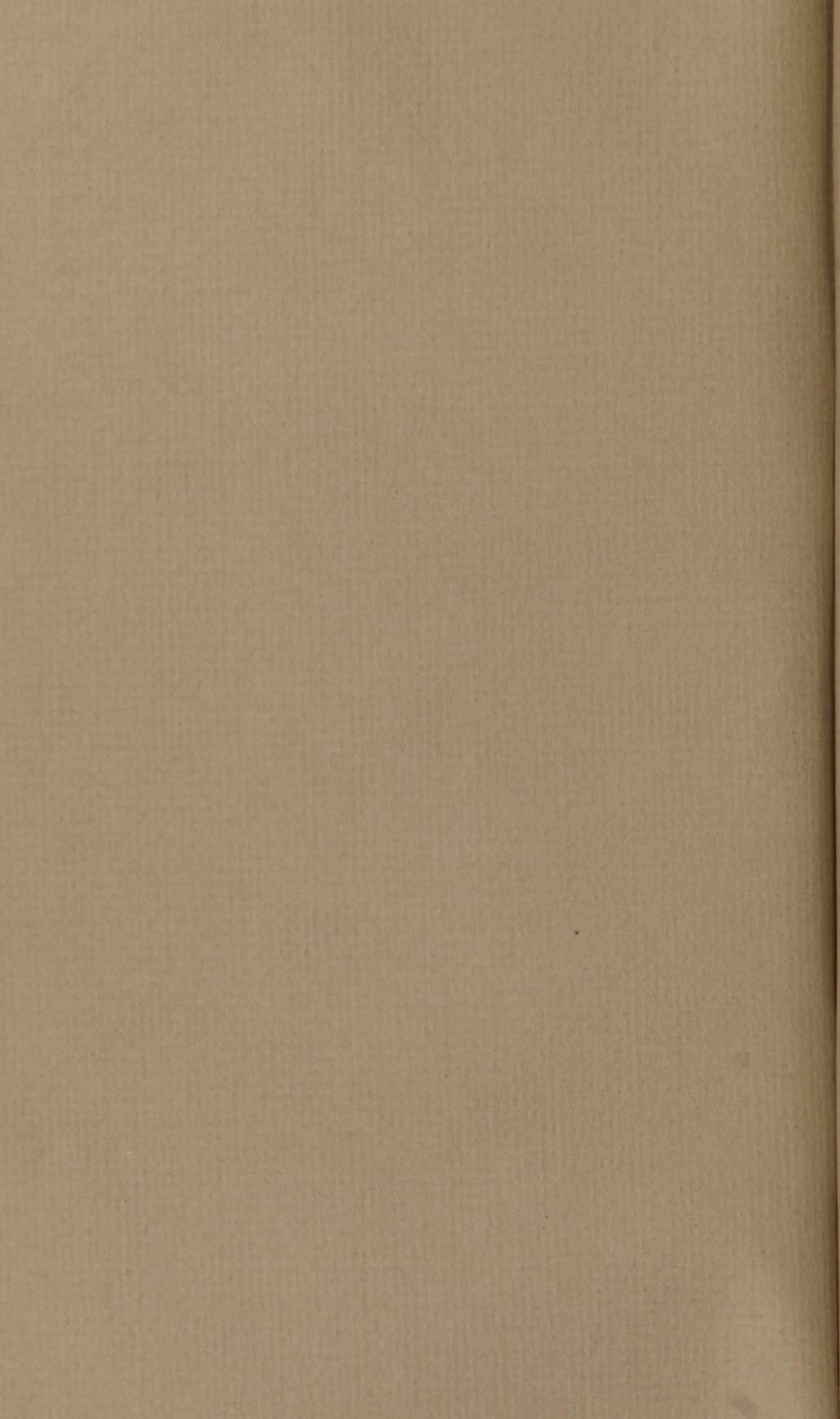
<i>Westmorland</i>	}	Last Tuesdays.
<i>Accomack</i>		
<i>Charles City</i>	}	First Wednesdays.
<i>Warwick</i>		
<i>Isle of Wight</i>	}	First Thursdays.
<i>Hanover</i>		
<i>New Kent</i>	}	Second Thursdays.
<i>Southampton</i>		
<i>Norfolk</i>	}	Third Thursdays.
<i>Culpepper</i>		
<i>Gloucester</i>	}	Fourth Thursdays.
<i>Orange</i>		
<i>Chesterfield</i>	}	First Fridays.
<i>King George</i>		
<i>Lancaster</i>	}	Second Fridays.
<i>Carolina</i>		
<i>King William</i>	}	Third Fridays each Month.
<i>Amelia</i>		

Thus the Government is divided into Forty-five Counties, whereof six hold Quarterly Courts, and thirty-nine hold Monthly Courts; see the proper Article of Legislative and Executive Courts.

The Country between *James River* and *York River* is the best inhabited, cultivated, and produces the best Tobacco.

Lunenburg their remotest Settlement is about 100 Miles S. W. from *Hanover*; *Hanover* is 60 Miles from *Williamsburg*, the Metropolis.

The Lands West of the *Virginia* Settlements are claimed by the six Nations called by the *French*, *Iroquois*, and by the *British*, *Mohawks*; they are also claimed by the Southern *Indians*, See Vol. I. P. 187; and by the *French* of *Canada*. The best Lands are above the Falls of the Rivers, the first Falls of each River must be the *Barcadiers* for the Back or Inland Countries, and Time become great Towns or Corporations.





Med. Hist.

WZ

270

D737s

1749

v. 2

c. 1

★ ★ ARMY ★ ★
MEDICAL LIBRARY

